A PHILOSOPHICAL AND POLITICAL HISTORY OF THE SETTLEMENTS AND TRADE OF THE EUROPEANS IN THE EAST AND WEST INDIES.

REVISED, AUGMENTED, AND PUBLISHED, IN TEN VOLUMES, BY THE ABBÉ RAYNAL.

NEWLY TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH, BY J. O. JUSTAMOND, F.R.S. WITH A New Set of Maps adapted to the Work, and a copious Index.

IN SIX VOLUMES.

VOL. VI.
SECOND EDITION.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR A. STRAHAN; AND T. CADELL, JUN. AND W. DAVIES, (SUCCESSORS TO MR. CADELL), IN THE STRAND; AND FOR J. MUNDELL & CO. EDINBURGH.

1798.
# CONTENTS

**BOOK XVIII.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Topic</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>English Colonies founded in Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia, Carolina, Georgia, and Florida. General Reflections on all these Settlements</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parallel between a bad and a good government</td>
<td>ib.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Quakers found Pennsylvania. Manners of that sect</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Origin and character of the Quakers</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Foundation of Pennsylvania by Penn. Principles of his legislation</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prosperity of Pennsylvania</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Present state of Philadelphia</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Origin of Maryland. Nature of its government</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Events which have happened at Maryland</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Present state of Maryland. Its cultures</td>
<td>ib.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>What Maryland may become</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In what manner Virginia was established, and by whom</td>
<td>38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Obstacles to the prosperity of Virginia</td>
<td>38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Population, trade, and manners of Virginia</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Origin of the two Carolinas. Their first and their last government, both civil and religious</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conformities between the two Carolinas</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>What distinguishes North Carolina</td>
<td>ib.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>What distinguishes South Carolina</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>By whom, upon what occasion, and in what manner, Georgia was founded</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Impediments that have prevented the progress of Georgia</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Situation and expectations of Georgia</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Florida becomes a Spanish possession</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Florida is ceded to Great Britain by the court of Madrid</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>What hath been done by England, and what she may expect to do, in Florida</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Extent of the British dominions in North America</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trees peculiar to North America</td>
<td>83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Birds peculiar to North America</td>
<td>85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Europe supplies North America with domestic animals</td>
<td>87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>European grain hath been cultivated in North America</td>
<td>ib.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a i j</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
CONTENTS.

North America hath supplied Europe with naval stores, 89
The iron of North America hath been conveyed into our climates, ib.
Can it be expected that wine and silk will prosper in North America, 93
With what kind of men the provinces of North America were peopled, 95
To what degree the population of North America hath arisen, 106
Manners prevailing at present in North America, 107
Nature of the governments established in North America, 109
The coin that has been current in the English colonies in North America, 117
Regulations to which the internal industry and the external trade of North America had been subject, 118
Distressed state of England in 1763, 122
England calls its colonies to its assistance, 123
England exacts from her colonies what she ought only to have asked of them, 129
England, after having given way, wishes to be obeyed by its colonies, 131
Measures which they take to reassert its authority, 132
The colonies had a right to separate themselves from their mother-country, even if they had no cause of discontent, 138
What measures would it have suited England to adopt, when the saw the ferment raised in her colonies, 152
England resolves to reduce her colonies by force, 161
The colonies break the ties which united them to England, and declare themselves independent of that country, 167
War begins between the United States and England, 173
What is the reason that the English have not succeeded in subduing the confederate provinces, 178
Why have not the confederate provinces succeeded in driving the English from the continent of America, 184
France acknowledges the independence of the United States.
This step occasions a war between that crown and the crown of England, 190
Spain not having succeeded in conciliating England with France, declares for the latter of these powers, 201
What ought to be the policy of the house of Bourbon, should it be victorious, 206
What ideas must be formed of the thirteen confederate provinces, 209

BOOK XIX.

Recapitulation, 214
Religion, 215
Government, 223
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CONTENTS</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Policy,</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>War,</td>
<td>317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Navy,</td>
<td>333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Commerce,</td>
<td>347</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Agriculture,</td>
<td>374</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Manufactures,</td>
<td>387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Population,</td>
<td>397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taxes,</td>
<td>411</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Public credit,</td>
<td>440</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fine arts, and belles lettres,</td>
<td>447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Philosophy,</td>
<td>462</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Morals,</td>
<td>471</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reflections upon the good and the evil which the discovery of the New World hath done to Europe,</td>
<td>486</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
BOOK XVIII.

English Colonies founded in Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia, Carolina, Georgia, and Florida. General Reflections on all these Settlements.

No society was ever founded on injustice. A people formed by a compact so extraordinary, would have been, at the same time, both the most degraded and the most unfortunate of people. Declared enemies of the human race, they would equally have been entitled to compasison from the sentiments they would have inspired, and those they would have experienced. Feared and hated by all surrounding powers, they would have incessantly been agitated by the same passions. Their misfortunes would have excited universal joy, and their prosperity general affliction. The nations would one day have united to exterminate them; but time would have rendered this league useless. It would have been sufficient for their annihilation, and for the avenging of other nations, that each
of their members should have modelled his conduct upon the maxims of the state. Animated with the spirit of their institution, they would all have been eager to raise themselves upon the ruin of each other. No measure would have appeared too odious for this purpose. This would have been realizing the fable of the race engendered from the teeth of the dragon, which Cadmus sowed upon the earth, and which was destroyed as soon as created.

How different would be the destiny of an empire founded on virtue! Agriculture, the arts, the sciences, and commerce, improved under the protection of peace, would have expelled idleness, ignorance, and misery. The chief of the state would have received the different ranks of men in the state, and would have been adored. He would have understood that not one of the society could suffer, without some injury to the whole body, and therefore he would have attended to the happiness of all. Impartial equity would ensure the observation of the treaties which it had dictated, the stability of laws, which it had simplified, and the distribution of taxes, which it would have proportioned to the public expences. All the neighbouring powers, interested in the preservation of this people, would arm in their defence, upon the least danger which should threaten them. But in default of foreign succours, they might themselves oppose, to the unjust aggressor, the impenetrable barrier of a rich and numerous people, for whom the word Country would not merely be a nominal idea. This is what may be called imaginary excellence in politics.

These two sorts of government are equally unknown in the annals of the world; which present us with nothing but imperfect sketches, more or less resembling the atrocious sublimity, or more or less distant from the affecting beauty, of one or the other of these great portraits. The nations which have made the most splendid figure on the theatre of the world, actuated by destructive ambition, have displayed a greater resemblance to the former. Others, more wise in their
constitution, more simple in their manners, more limit-
ed in their views, and enveloped, if we may use the
expression, with a kind of secret happiness, seemed to
be more conformable to the second. Among the lat-
ter Pennsylvania may be reckoned.

Lutheranism, which was destined to cause a remark-
able change in Europe, either by its own influence, or
by the example it gave, had occasioned a great fer-
ment in the minds of all men, when there arose, in the
midst of the commotions it excited, a new religion,
which at first appeared much more like a rebellion
guided by fanaticism, than like a sect that was govern-
ed by any fixed principle. The generality of innova-
tors in religion follow a regular system, composed of
doctrines connected with each other, and contend at
first only to defend them, till persecution irritates and
stimulates them to rebellion, so that at length they
have recourse to arms. The Anabaptists, on the con-
tary, as if they had only looked into the Bible for the
word of command to attack, lifted up the standard of
rebellion, before they had agreed upon a system of
doctrine. It is true, indeed, their leaders had taught,
that it was a ridiculous and useless practice to admin-
ister baptism to infants, and asserted that their opinion
upon this point was the same as that of the primitive
church; but they had not yet ever reduced to prac-
tice this article of belief, which was the only one that
furnished a pretense for their separation. The spirit
of sedition prevented them from paying a proper at-
tention to the schismatic tenets on which their divi-
sion was founded. To shake off the tyrannical yoke
of church and state, was their law and their faith. To
enlist in the armies of the Lord, to join with the faith-
ful, who were to wield the sword of Gideon, this was
their device, their motive, and their signal for rallying.
It was not till after they had carried fire and sword
into a great part of Germany, that the Anabaptists
thought of giving some basis and some connection to
their creed, and of marking and cementing their con-
federacy by some visible sign of union. Having been
united at first by inspiration to raise a body of troops, in 1525 they were united to compose a religious code. In this mixed system of intolerance and mildness, the Anabaptist church, being the only one in which the pure word of God is taught, neither can nor ought to communicate with any other.

The spirit of the Lord blowing wheresoever it listeth, the power of preaching is not limited to one order of the faithful, but is dispensed to all. Every one likewise has the gift of prophecy.

Every sect which hath not preserved a community of all things which constituted the life and spirit of primitive Christianity, has degenerated, and is for that reason an impure society.

Magistrates are useless in a society of the truly faithful. A Christian never has occasion for any; nor is a Christian allowed to be one himself.

Christians are not permitted to take up arms even in their own defence, much less is it lawful for them to enlist as soldiers in mercenary armies.

Both lawsuits and oaths are forbidden the disciples of Christ, who has commanded them to let their yea, be yea, and their nay, nay.

The baptism of infants is an invention of the devil and the pope. The validity of baptism depends upon the voluntary consent of adults, who alone are able to receive it with a consciousness of the engagement they take upon themselves.

Such was in its origin the religious system of the Anabaptists. Though it appears founded on charity and mildness, yet it produced nothing but violence and iniquity. The chimerical idea of an equality of stations, is the most dangerous one that can be adopted in a civilized society. To preach this system to the people, is not to put them in mind of their rights, but leading them on to assassination and plunder; it is letting domestic animals loose, and transforming them into wild beasts. The rulers of the people must be more enlightened, or the laws by which they are governed must be softened; but there is in fact no such
thing in nature as a real equality; it exists only in the system of equity. Even the savages themselves are not equal when once they are collected into hordes. They are only so while they wander in the woods; and even then the man who suffers the produce of his chafe to be taken from him, is not the equal of him who deprives him of it. Such has been the origin of all societies.

A doctrine, the basis of which was the community of goods and equality of ranks, was hardly calculated to find partizans any where but among the poor. The pealants therefore adopted it with the greater enthusiasm, in proportion as the yoke from which it delivered them was more insupportable. The further greater part, especially those who were condemned to slavery, rose up in arms on all sides, to support a doctrine, which, from being vassals, made them equal to their lords. The apprehension of seeing one of the first bands of society, obedience to the magistrate, broken, united all other sects against them, who could not subsist without subordination. After having carried on a more obstinate resistance than could have been expected, they yielded at length to the number of their enemies. Their sect, notwithstanding it had made its way all over Germany, and into a part of the North, was nowhere prevalent, because it had been every where opposed and dispersed. It was but just tolerated in those countries, in which the greatest latitude of opinion was allowed; and there was not any state in which it was able to settle a church, authorized by the civil power. This of course weakened it, and from obscurity it fell into contempt. Its only glory is that of having, perhaps, contributed to the foundation of the sect of Quakers.

This humane and peaceable sect arose in England, amidst the confusions of that bloody war, which terminated in a monarch’s being dragged to the scaffold by his own subjects. The founder of it, George Fox, was of the lower clas’s of the people; a man who had been formerly a mechanic, but whom a singular and
B O O K

contemplative turn of mind had induced to quit his
employment. In order to wean himself entirely from
all earthly affections, he broke off all connections with
his own family; and for fear of being tempted to re-
new them, he determined to have no fixed abode. He
often wandered alone in the woods, without any other
amusement but his Bible. In time he even learned to
go without that, when he thought he had acquired
from it a degree of inspiration similar to that of the
apostles and the prophets.

He then began to think of making proselytes, in
which he found no difficulty in a country where the
minds of all men were filled and disturbed with en-
thusiasmic notions. He was, therefore, soon followed
by a multitude of disciples, the novelty and singularity
of whose opinions, upon incomprehensible subjects,
could not fail of attracting and fascinating all those
who were fond of the marvellous.

The first thing by which they caught the eye, was
the simplicity of their dress, in which there was no
gold or silver lace, no embroidery, laces, or ruffles, and
from which they affected to banish every thing that
was superfluous or unnecessary. They would not suf-
fer either a button in the hat or a plait in the coat, be-
cause it was possible to do without them. Such an
extraordinary contempt for established modes reminded
those who adopted it, that it became them to be
more virtuous than the rest of men, from whom they
distinguished themselves by this external modesty.

All outward marks of deference, which the pride
and tyranny of mankind exact from those who are
unable to refuse them, were disdainful by the Qua-
kers, who disdained the names of master and servant.
They condemned all titles, as being tokens of pride
in those who claimed them, and of meanness in those
who bestowed them. They did not allow to any per-
son whatever the appellation of eminence or excelle-
ence, and so far they might be in the right; but
they refused to comply with those reciprocal demon-
strations of respect which we call politeness, and in
this they were to blame. The name of friend, they said, was not to be refused by one Christian or citizen to another, but the ceremony of bowing they considered as ridiculous and troublesome. To pull off the hat they held to be a want of respect to a man's self, in order to show it to others. They carried this idea so far, that even the magistrates could not compel them to any external mark of reverence; but they addressed both them and princes according to the ancient majesty of language, in the second person and in the singular number; and they justified this licence by the custom of those very persons who were offended at it, and who used to address their saints and their God in the same manner.

The austerity of their morals ennobled the singularity of their manners. The use of arms, considered in every light, appeared a crime to them. If it were to attack, it was violating the laws of humanity; if to defend one's self, it was breaking through those of Christianity. Universal peace was the gospel they had agreed to profess. If any one smote a Quaker upon one cheek, he immediately presented the other; if any one asked him for his coat, he offered his waistcoat too. Nothing could engage these equitable men to demand more than the lawful price for their work, or to take less than what they demanded. An oath, even before a magistrate, and in support of a just cause, they deemed to be a profanation of the name of God, in any of the wretched disputes that arise between weak and perishing beings.

The contempt they entertained for the outward forms of politeness in civil life, was changed into aversion for the ritual and ceremonial parts of religion. They looked upon churches merely as the ostentatious edifices of priestcraft; they considered the Sabbath as a pernicious and idle intermission, and baptism and the Lord's Supper as ridiculous symbols. For this reason they rejected all regular orders of clergy. Every one of the faithful they imagined received an immediate illumination from the Holy Ghost, which gave a cha...
BOOK 

XVIII.

character far superior to that of the priesthood. When they were assembled together, the first person who found himself inspired, arose, and imparted the lights he had received from heaven. Even women were often favoured with this gift of speech, which they called the gift of prophecy; sometimes many of these holy brethren spoke at the same time; but much more frequently a profound silence prevailed in their assemblies.

The enthusiasm occasioned both by their meditations and discourses, excited such a degree of sensibility in the nervous system, that it threw them into convulsions, for which reason they were called Quakers. To have cured these people in process of time of their folly, nothing more was requisite than to turn it into ridicule; but instead of this, persecution contributed to make it more general. While every other new sect met with encouragement, this was exposed to every kind of punishment; imprisonments, whippings, pillories, mad-houses, were none of them thought too terrible for bigots, whose only crime was that of wanting to be virtuous and reasonable over much. The constancy with which they bore their sufferings, at first excited compassion, and afterwards admiration for them. Even Cromwell, who had been one of their most violent enemies, because they used to insinuate themselves into his camps, and diffused his soldiers from their profession, gave them public marks of his esteem. His policy exerted itself in endeavouring to draw them into his party, in order to conciliate to himself a higher degree of respect and consideration; but they either eluded his invitations, or rejected them; and he afterwards confessed, that this was the only religion which was not to be influenced by bribery.

Among the several persons who cast a temporary lustre on the sect, the only one who deserves to be remembered by posterity, is William Penn. He was the son of an admiral, who had been fortunate enough to be equally distinguished by Cromwell, and the two Stuarts, who held the reins of government
after him. This able seaman, more supple and more book
infinituating than men of his profession usually are, had
made several considerable advances to government in
the different expeditions in which he had been enga-
ged. The misfortunes of the times had not admitted
of the repayment of these loans during his life, and
as affairs were not in a better situation at his death,
it was proposed to his son, that instead of money, he
should accept of an immense territory in America. It
was a country, which, though long since discovered
and surrounded by English colonies, had always been
neglected. A spirit of benevolence made him accept
with pleasure this kind of patrony, which was ced-
ed to him almost as a sovereignty, and he determin-
ed to make it the abode of virtue, and the asylum
of the unfortunate. With this generous design, to-
wards the end of the year 1681, he set sail for his
new possessions, which from that time took the name
of Pennsylvania. All the Quakers were desirous to
follow him, in order to avoid the persecution raised
against them by the clergy, on account of their not
complying with the tithes and other ecclesiastical fees;
but from prudential motives he declined taking over
any more than two thousand.

His arrival in the New World was signalized by an
act of equity, which made his person and principles
equally beloved. Not thoroughly satisfied with the
right given him to his extensive territory, by the grant
he had received of it from the British ministry, he de-
termined to make it his own property by purchasing
it of the natives. The price he gave to the savages
is not known; but though some people accuse them
of stupidity for consenting to part with what they ne-
ever ought to have alienated upon any terms; yet
Penn is not less entitled to the glory of having given
an example of moderation and justice in America,
which was never thought of before by the Europe-
ans. He rendered himself as much as possible a legal
possessor of the territory, and by the use he made of
it supplied any deficiency there might be in the validity of his title. The Americans entertained as great an affection for his colony, as they had conceived an aversion for all those which had been founded in their neighbourhood without their consent. From that time there arose a mutual confidence between the two people, founded upon good faith, which nothing has ever been able to shake.

Penn’s humanity could not be confined to the savages only; it extended itself to all those who were desirous of living under his laws. Sensible that the happiness of the people depended upon the nature of the legislation, he founded his upon those two first principles of public splendour and private felicity, liberty and property. If it were allowed to borrow the language of fable, with respect to an account that seems to be fabulous, we should say, that Astarte, who had been gone up into heaven for so long a time, was now come down upon earth again, and that the reign of innocence and concord was going to be revived among mankind. The mind of the writer and of his reader dwells with pleasure on this part of modern history, and feels some kind of compensation for the disgust, horror, or melancholy, which the whole of it, but particularly the account of the European settlements in America, inspires. Hitherto we have only seen these barbarians depopulating the country before they took possession of it, and laying every thing waste before they cultivated it. It is time to observe the dawning of reason, happiness, and humanity, rising from among the ruins of a hemisphere, which still reeks with the blood of all its people, civilized as well as savage.

The virtuous legislator made toleration the basis of his society. He admitted every man who acknowledged a God to the rights of a citizen, and made every Christian eligible to state employments. But he left every one at liberty to invoke the Supreme Being as he thought proper, and neither established a reign-
ing church in Pennsylvania, nor exacted contributions for building places of public worship, nor compelled any persons to attend them.

Penn, attached to his name, was defirous that the property of the settlement which he had formed should remain in perpetuity to his family; but he deprived them of any decisive influence in the public resolutions, and ordained, that they should not exercise any act of authority without the concurrence of the deputies of the people. All the citizens who had an interest in the law, by having one in the object of it, were to be electors, and might be chosen. To avoid as much as possible every kind of corruption, it was ordained that the representatives should be chosen by suffrages privately given. To establish a law, a plurality of voices was sufficient; but a majority of two-thirds was necessary to settle a tax. Such a tax as this was certainly more like a free gift than a subsidy demanded by government; but was it possible to grant's indulgences to men who were come so far in search of peace?

Such was the opinion of that real philosopher Penn. He gave a thousand acres to all those who could afford to pay 450 livres [£8l. 15s.] for them. Every one who could not, obtained for himself, his wife, each of his children above sixteen years old, and each of his servants, fifty acres of land, for the annual quit-rent of one sol ten deniers and a half [about one penny] per acre. Fifty acres were also given to every citizen who, when he was of age, consented to pay an annual tribute of two livres five sols [£1s. 10½d.].

To fix these properties for ever, he established tribunals to maintain the laws made for the preservation of property. But it is not protecting the property of lands to make those who are in possession of them purchase the decree of justice that secures them: for in that case every individual is obliged to part with some of his property, in order to secure the rest; and law, when protracted, exhausts the very treasures it should preserve and the property it should defend,
BOOK X VIII.

Left any persons should be found whose interest it might be to encourage or prolong law-suits, he forbade, under very strict penalties, all those who were engaged in the administration of justice to receive any salary or gratuity whatsoever. And further, every district was obliged to choose three arbitrators, whose business it was to endeavour to prevent, and accommodate, any disputes that might happen, before they were carried into a court of justice.

This attention to prevent law-suits sprang from the desire of preventing crimes. All the laws, that they might have no vices to punish, were calculated to put a stop to them even in their very sources, poverty and idleness. It was enacted that every child above twelve years old, should be obliged to learn a profession, let his condition be what it would. This regulation, at the same time that it secured the poor man a subsistence, furnished the rich man with a resource against every reverse of fortune, preserved the natural equality of mankind, by recalling to every man’s remembrance his original designation, which is that of labour, either of the mind or of the body.

Virtue had never perhaps inspired a legislation better calculated to promote the felicity of mankind. The opinions, the sentiments, and the morals corrected whatever might be defective in it, and remedied any part of it that might be imperfect. Accordingly, the prosperity of Pennsylvania was very rapid. This republic, without either wars, conquests, struggles, or any of those revolutions which attract the eyes of the vulgar, soon excited the admiration of the whole universe. Its neighbours, notwithstanding their savage state, were softened by the sweetness of its manners; and distant nations, notwithstanding their corruption, paid homage to its virtues. All were delighted to see those heroic days of antiquity realized, which European manners and laws had long taught every one to consider as entirely fabulous.

Prosperity of Pennsylvania. Pennsylvania is defended on the east by the ocean, on the north by New York and New Jersey, on the
South by Virginia and Maryland, on the west by the
Indians; on all sides by friends, and within itself by
the virtue of its inhabitants. Its coasts, which are at
first very narrow, extend gradually to 120 miles, and
the breadth of it, which has no other limits than its
population and culture, already comprehends 145 miles.
Pennsylvania Proper is divided into eleven counties;
Philadelphia, Bucks, Chester, Lancaster, York, Cumber-
land, Berks, Northampton, Bedford, Northumber-
land, and Westmoreland.

In the same region, the counties of Newcastle, Kent,
and Sussex, form a distinct government, but are regu-
larly regulated on the same principles.

The sky of the colony is pure and serene, and the
climate, naturally very wholesome, has been rendered
still more so by cultivation; the waters, equally salu-
rious and clear, always flow upon a bed of rock or
sand; and the year is tempered by the regular return
of the seasons. Winter, which begins in the month
of January, lasts till the end of March. As it is sel-
don accompanied with clouds or fogs, the cold is, ge-
nerally speaking, moderate; sometimes, however, sharp
enough to freeze the largest rivers in a night’s time.
This change, which is as short as it is sudden, is occa-
sioned by the north-west winds, which blow from the
distances of mountains and lakes of Canada. The spring is ushered
in by soft rains, and a gentle heat, which increases gra-
dually till the end of June. The heats of the dog-
days would be insupportable, were it not for the re-
freshing breezes of the south-west wind, which afford
almost a constant relief.

Though the country be unequal, it is not on that
account less fertile. The soil in some places consists of
a yellow and black sand, in others it is gravelly, and
sometimes it is a greyish ash-colour upon a stony bot-
tom; generally speaking, it is a rich earth, particularly
between the rivulets, which, interjecting it in all di-
rections, contribute more to the fertility of the coun-
try than navigable rivers would.
When the Europeans first came into the country, they found nothing but wood for building, and iron mines. In process of time, by cutting down the trees, and clearing the ground, they covered it with innumerable herds, a great variety of fruits, plantations of flax and hemp, many kinds of vegetables, every sort of grain, and especially wheat and maize, which a happy experience had shown to be particularly proper to the climate. Cultivation was carried on in all parts with such vigour and success as excited the astonishment of all nations.

From whence could arise this extraordinary prosperity? From that civil and religious liberty which has attracted the Swedes, Dutch, French, and particularly some laborious Germans, into that country. It has been the joint work of Quakers, Anabaptists, members of the Church of England, Methodists, Presbyterians, Moravians, Lutherans, and Catholics.

Among the numerous facts which abound in this country, a very distinguished one is that of the Dumplers. It was founded by a German, who, weary of the world, retired to an agreeable solitude within fifty miles of Philadelphia, in order to be more at liberty to give himself up to contemplation. Curiosity brought several of his countrymen to visit his retreat; and by degrees his pious, simple, and peaceable manners induced them to settle near him; and they all formed a little colony, which they called Euphrates, in allusion to the Hebrews, who used to sing psalms on the borders of that river.

This little city forms a triangle, the outsides of which are bordered with mulberry and apple-trees, planted with regularity. In the middle of the town is a very large orchard; and between the orchard and these ranges of trees are houses, built of wood, three stories high, where every Dumpler is left to enjoy the pleasures of his meditations without disturbance. These contemplative men do not amount to above five hundred in all; their territory is about 250 acres in ex-
tent, the boundaries of which are marked by a river, a piece of stagnant water, and a mountain covered with trees.

The men and women live in separate quarters of the city. They never see each other but at places of worship, nor are there any assemblies of any kind but for public business. Their life is spent in labour, prayer, and sleep. Twice every day and night they are called forth from their cells to attend divine service. Like the Methodists and Quakers, every individual among them has the right of preaching when he thinks himself inspired. The favourite subjects on which they discourse in their assemblies, are humility, temperance, chastity, and the other Christian virtues. They never violate that day of repose, which all orders of men, whether idle or laborious, much delight in. They admit a hell and a paradise, but reject the eternity of future punishments. They abhor the doctrine of original sin as an impious blasphemy, and in general every tenet that is severe to man appears to them injurious to the divinity. As they do not allow merit to any but voluntary works, they only administer baptism to the adult. At the same time they think baptism so essentially necessary to salvation, that they imagine the souls of Christians in another world are employed in converting those who have not died under the law of the gospel.

Still more disinterested than the Quakers, they never allow themselves any law-suits. One may cheat, rob, and abuse them, without ever being exposed to any retaliation, or even any complaint from them. Religion has the same effect on them that philosophy had upon the Stoics; it makes them insensible to every kind of insult.

Nothing can be plainer than their dress. In winter, it is a long white gown, from whence there hangs a hood, which serves instead of a hat, a coarse shirt, thick shoes, and very wide breeches. The only difference in summer is, that linen is used instead of wool-
The women are dressed much like the men, except that they have no breeches.

Their common food consists wholly of vegetables, not because it is unlawful to eat any other, but because that kind of abstinence is looked upon as more conformable to the spirit of Christianity, which has an aversion for blood.

Each individual follows with cheerfulness the branch of business allotted to him. The produce of all their labours is deposited in a common stock, in order to supply the necessities of every one. This union of industry has not only established agriculture, manufactures, and all the arts necessary for the support of this little society, but hath also supplied, for the purposes of exchange, superfluities proportioned to the degree of its population.

Though the two sexes live separate at Euphrates, the Dumplers do not on that account foolishly renounce matrimony; but those who find themselves disposed to it leave the city, and form an establishment in the country, which is supported at the public expense. They repay this by the produce of their labours, which is all thrown into the public treasury, and their children are sent to be educated in the mother-country. Without this wise privilege, the Dumplers would be no better than monks, and in process of time would become either savages or libertines.

The most edifying, and at the same time the most extraordinary circumstance, is the harmony that subsists between all the sects established in Pennsylvania, notwithstanding the difference of their religious opinions. Though not all of the same church, they all love and cherish one another as children of the same father. They have always continued to live like brethren, because they had the liberty of thinking as men. To this delightful harmony must be attributed more particularly the rapid progress of the colony.

At the beginning of the year 1774, the population of this settlement amounted to three hundred and fifty
thousand inhabitants, according to the calculations of the general congress. It must, however, be acknowledged, that thirty thousand Negroes made part of this numerous population; but truth also requires us to say, that slavery, in this province, hath not been a source of corruption, as it hath always been, and always will be, in societies that are not so well regulated. The manners are still pure, and even austere, in Pennsylvania. Is this singular advantage to be ascribed to the climate, the laws, the religion, the emulation constantly subsisting between the different sects, or to some other particular cause? Let the reader determine this question.

The Pennsylvanians are in general well made, and their women of an agreeable figure. As they sooner become mothers than in Europe, they sooner cease breeding. If the heat of the climate seems on the one hand to hasten the operations of nature, its inconstancy weakens them on the other. There is no place where the temperature of the sky is more uncertain, for it sometimes changes five or six times in the same day.

As, however, these varieties have neither any dangerous influence upon animals, nor even upon vegetables, and as they do not destroy the harvests, there is a constant plenty, and an universal appearance of easy circumstances. The economy, which is so particularly attended to in Pennsylvania does not prevent both sexes from being well clothed; and their food is still preferable in its kind to their clothing. The families whose circumstances are the least easy, have all of them bread, meat, cider, beer, and rum. A very great number are able to afford to drink constantly French and Spanish wines, punch, and even liquors of a higher price. The abuse of these strong drinks is less frequent than in other places, but is not without example.

The pleasing view of this abundance is never disturbed by the melancholy appearance of poverty. There are no poor in all Pennsylvania. All those...
whose birth or fortune have left them without resources, are suitably provided for out of the public treasury. The spirit of benevolence is carried still further, and is extended even to the most engaging hospitality. A traveller is welcome to stop in any place, without the apprehensions of giving the least uneasy sensation, except that of regret for his departure.

The happiness of the colony is not disturbed by the oppressive burden of taxes. In 1766, they did not amount to more than 280,140 livres [11,672l. 10s.]. Most of them, even those that were designed to repair the damages of war, were to cease in 1772. If the people did not experience this alleviation at that period, it was owing to the irruptions of the savages, which had occasioned extraordinary expenses. This trifling inconvenience would not have been attended to, if Penn's family could have been prevailed upon to contribute to the public expences, in proportion to the revenue they obtained from the province: a circumstance required by the inhabitants, and which in equity they ought to have complied with.

The Pennsylvanians, happy possessors, and peaceable tenants, of a country that usually renders them twenty or thirty fold for whatever they lay out upon it, are not restrained by fear from the propagation of their species. There is hardly an unmarried person to be met with in the country. Marriage is the more happy and the more reverenced for it; the freedom, as well as the sanctity of it, depends upon the choice of the parties: they choose the lawyer and the priest rather as witnesses, than as the means to cement their engagement. Whenever two lovers meet with any opposition, they go off on horseback together: the man gets behind his mistress; and in this situation they present themselves before the magistrate, where the girl declares she has run away with her lover, and that they are come to be married. So solemn an avowal cannot be rejected, nor has any person a right to give them any molestation. In all other cases, paternal authority is excessive. The head of a family, whose af-
fairs are involved, is allowed to sell his children to his creditors; a punishment, one should imagine, very sufficient to induce an affectionate father to attend to his affairs. An adult discharges, in one year's service, a debt of 112 livres 10 sols [£1. 13s. 9d.]; children under twelve years of age are obliged to serve till they are one and twenty, in order to pay off the same sum. This is an image of the old patriarchal manners of the East.

Though there be several villages, and even some cities in the colony, most of the inhabitants may be said to live separately, as it were, within their families. Every proprietor of land has his house in the midst of a large plantation, entirely surrounded with quickset hedges. Of course, each parish is near twelve or fifteen leagues in circumference. This distance of the churches makes the ceremonies of religion have little effect, and still less influence. Children are not baptized till a few months, and sometimes not till a year or two after their birth.

All the pomp of religion seems to be reserved for the last honours man receives before he is shut up in the grave for ever. As soon as any person is dead in the country, the nearest neighbours have notice given them of the day of the burial. These spread it in the habitations next to theirs; and within a few hours the news is thus conveyed to a distance. Every family sends at least one person to attend the funeral. As they come in, they are presented with punch and cake. When the assembly is complete, the corpse is carried to the burying-ground belonging to his sect, or if that should be at too great a distance, into one of the fields belonging to the family. There is generally a train of four or five hundred persons on horseback, who observe a continual silence, and have all the external appearance suitable to the melancholy nature of the ceremony. One singular circumstance is, that the Pennsylvanians, who are the greatest enemies to parade during their lives, seem to forget this character of modesty at their deaths. They are all desirous that
the poor remains of their short lives should be attend-
ed with a funeral pomp proportioned to their rank or
fortune. It is a general observation, that plain and
virtuous people, even those that are savage and poor,
pay great attention to the ordering of their funerals.
The reason is, that they look upon these last honours
as duties of the survivors, and the duties themselves as
so many distinct proofs of that principle of love which
is very strong in private families while they are in a
state nearest to that of nature. It is not the dying
man himself who exacts these honours; his parents,
his wife, his children, voluntarily pay them to the
ashes of a husband and father that has deserved to be
lamented. These ceremonies have always more nu-
merous attendants in small societies than in larger
ones, because, though there are fewer families upon
the whole, the number of individuals there is much
larger, and all the ties that connect them with each
other are much stronger. This kind of intimate union
has been the reason why so many small nations have
overcome larger ones; it drove Xerxes and the Per-
ians out of Greece, and it will some time or other ex-
pel the French from Corsica.

But from whence does Pennsylvania get the articles
necessary for her own consumption, and in what man-
er does she contrive to be abundantly furnished with
them? With the flax and hemp that is produced at
home, and the cotton she procures from South Ame-
rica, she fabricates a great quantity of ordinary linens;
and with the wool that comes from Europe she manu-
factures many coarse cloths. Whatever her own in-
dustry is not able to furnish, she purchases with the
produce of her territory. Her ships carry over to the
English, French, Dutch, and Danish islands, biscuit,
flour, butter, cheese, tallow, vegetables, fruits, salt
meat, cyder, beer, and all sorts of wood for building.
The cotton, sugar, coffee, brandy, and money, receiv-
ed in exchange, are so many materials for a fresh com-
merce with the mother-country, and with other Eu-
ropean nations, as well as with other colonies. The
Azores, Madeira, the Canaries, Spain, and Portugal, open an advantageous market for the corn and wood of Pennsylvania, which they purchase with wine and piastres. The mother-country receives from Pennsylvania, iron, flax, leather, furs, linseed, masts and yards, for which it returns thread, fine cloths, tea, Irish and India linens, hardware, and other articles of luxury or necessity. But all these branches of trade have been hitherto prejudicial to the colony, though it can neither be censured nor commiserated on this account. Whatever measures may be adopted, it is unavoidably necessary that rising states should contract debts; and the one we are now speaking of will remain in debt as long as the clearing of the lands requires greater expenses than the produce will enable it to answer. Other colonies, which enjoy almost exclusively some branches of trade, such as rice, tobacco, and indigo, must have grown rich very rapidly. Pennsylvania, the riches of which are founded on agriculture and the increase of her flocks, will acquire them more gradually; but her prosperity will be fixed upon a more firm and permanent basis.

If any circumstance can retard the progress of the colony, it must be the irregular manner in which the plantations are formed. Penn's family, who are the proprietors of all the lands, grant them indiscriminately in all parts, and in as large a proportion as they are required, provided they are paid 112 livres 10 fols [4l. 13s. gd.] for each hundred acres, and that the purchasers agree to give an annual rent of 22 fols 6 deniers [18s. 4½d.]. The consequence of this is, that the province wants that sort of connection which is so necessary in all establishments, and that the scattered inhabitants easily become the prey of the most insignificant enemy that ventures to attack them.

There are different ways of clearing the lands which are followed in the colony. Sometimes a huntsman will settle in the midst of a forest, or quite close to it. His nearest neighbours assist him in cutting down trees, and placing them one above another: and this confti-
BOOK tutes a house. Around this spot he cultivates, without any assistance, a garden or a field, sufficient to subsist himself and his family.

A few years after the first labours are finished, some more active or richer men arrive from the mother-country. They indemnify the huntman for his labour, and agree with the proprietors of the provinces for some lands that have not yet been paid for. They build more commodious habitations, and clear a greater extent of territory.

At length some Germans, who come into the New World from inclination, or are driven into it by persecution, complete these settlements that are as yet unfinished. The first and second order of planters remove into other parts, with a more considerable flock for carrying on agriculture than they had at first.

In 1767, the exports of Pennsylvania amounted to 13,164,439 livres 5 sols 3 deniers [about 548,518l. 6s. 9d.]; and they have since increased much more considerably in that colony than in any other.

Philadelphia, or the City of Brothers, is the centre of this great trade. This famous city is situated at the conflux of the Delaware and the Schuykill, at the distance of 120 miles from the sea. Penn, who defined it for the metropolis of a great empire, designed it to be one mile in breadth and two in length between the rivers; but its population has proved insufficient to cover this extent of ground. Hitherto the banks of the Delaware are only built upon; but without giving up the ideas of the legislator, or deviating from his plan. These precautions are highly proper. Philadelphia must become the most considerable city of America, because the colony must necessarily improve greatly, and its productions must pass through the harbour of the capital before they arrive at the sea.

The streets of Philadelphia, which are all regular, are from fifty to a hundred feet broad. On each side of them there are foot-paths defended by posts, placed at different distances.
The houses, each of which has its garden and orchard, are commonly three stories high, and are built of brick. The present buildings have received an additional decoration from a kind of marble of different colours, which is found about a mile out of the town. Of this, tables, chimney-pieces, and other household furniture, are made; besides which, it is become rather a considerable article of commerce with the greatest part of America.

These valuable materials could not have been found in common in the houses, unless they had been lavishly ed in the churches. Every sect has its own church, and some of them have several. But there are a number of citizens, who have neither churches, priests, nor any public form of worship, and who are still happy, humane, and virtuous.

The town-house is a building holden in as much veneration, though not so much frequented, as the churches. It is constructed with the greatest magnificence. There the legislators of the colony assemble every year, and more frequently if necessary, to settle every thing relative to public business. These men of trust are here supplied with every publication that may give them any information respecting government, trade, and administration. Next to the town-house is a most elegant library, formed in 1732, under the care of the learned Dr. Franklin, and consisting of the best English, with several French and Latin authors. It is only open to the public on Saturdays. The founders have free access to it at all times. Others pay a trifle for the loan of the books, and a forfeit if they be not returned at a stated time. This little fund, which is constantly accumulating, is appropriated to the increase of the library, to which have been lately added, in order to make it more useful, some mathematical and philosophical instruments, with a very fine cabinet of natural history.

Not far from this there is another monument of the same nature. This consists of a fine collection of Greek and Latin clasics, with their most esteemed

B iii
BOOK commentators, and of the best performances that have graced the modern languages. This library was bequeathed to the public, in 1752, by the learned and generous citizen Logan, who had spent a long and laborious life in collecting it.

The college, which is intended to prepare the mind for the attainment of all the sciences, owed its rise, in 1749, to the labours of Dr. Franklin, whose name stands always recorded among the great or useful things accomplished in this country which gave him birth. At first, it only initiated the youth in the belles lettres; but medicine, chemistry, botany, and natural philosophy, have been since taught there. Knowledge of every kind, and masters in every science, will increase, in proportion as the lands, which are become their patrimony, shall yield a greater produce. If ever despotism, superstition, or war, should plunge Europe again into that state of barbarism out of which philosophy and the arts have extricated it, the sacred fire will be kept alive in Philadelphia, and come from thence to enlighten the world.

This city is amply supplied with every assistance human nature can require, and with all the resources industry can make use of. Its quays, the principal of which is two hundred feet wide, present a suit of convenient warehouses, and docks ingeniously contrived for ship-building. Ships of five hundred tons may land there without any difficulty, except in times of frost. There, is taken on board the merchandise which has either been brought by the rivers Schuylkill and Delaware, or carried along better roads than are to be met with in most parts of Europe. Police has made a greater progress in this part of the New World, than among the most ancient nations of the Old.

It is impossible to determine precisely the population of Philadelphia, as the bills of mortality are not kept with any exactness, and there are several sects who do not christen their children. It appears, however, that in 1766 it contained 20,000 inhabitants. As most of them are employed in the sale of the pro-
ductions of the colony, and in supplying it with what they draw from abroad, their fortunes must necessarily be very considerable; and they must increase still further in proportion as the cultivation advances in a country where not above one-sixth of the land has hitherto been cleared.

Philadelphia, as well as the other cities of Pennsylvania, is entirely open. The whole country is equally without defence. This is a necessary consequence of the principles of the Quakers. These sectaries cannot be too much favoured, on account of their modesty, probity, love of labour, and benevolence. One might, perhaps, be tempted to accuse their legislation of imprudence and temerity.

It may, perhaps, be said, that when the founders of the colony established that civil security which protects one citizen from another, they should also have established that political security, which protects one state from the encroachments of another. The authority which hath been exerted to maintain peace and good order at home, seems to have done nothing, if it has not prevented invasion from abroad. To pretend that the colony would never have enemies, was to suppose the world peopled with Quakers. It was encouraging the strong to fall upon the weak, leaving the lamb to the mercy of the wolf, and submitting the whole country to the oppressive yoke of the first tyrant who should think proper to subdue it.

But on the other hand, how shall we reconcile the strictness of the gospel maxims, by which the Quakers are literally governed, with those military preparations, either offensive or defensive, which maintain a continual state of war between all Christian nations? Besides, what could the enemy do, if they were to enter Pennsylvania with sword in hand? Unless they massacred, in the space of a night or a day's time, all the inhabitants of that fortunate region, they would not be able totally to extirpate the race of those mild and charitable men. Violence has its boundaries in its very excess; it is consumed and ex-
tunguished, as the fire in the ashes that feed it. But virtue, when guided by humanity and by the spirit of benevolence, is revived as the tree under the edge of the pruning-knife. The wicked stand in need of numbers to execute their fanguinary projects. But the Quaker, who is a good man, wants only a brother from whom he may receive, or to whom he may give assistence. Let then the warlike nations, let people who are either slaves or tyrants, go into Pennsylvania; there they will find all avenues open to them, all property at their disposal; not a single soldier, but numbers of merchants and farmers. But if these inhabitants be tormented, restrained, or oppreseed, they will fly, and leave their lands uncultivated, their manufactures destroyed, and their warehouses empty. They will cultivate, and spread population in some new land; they will go round the world rather than turn their arms against their pursuers, or submit to bear their yoke. Their enemies will have only gained the hatred of mankind, and the execration of posterity.

May I not be deceived in what I have advanced; and may I not have mistaken the wishes of my heart for a decree of truth! I am distressed even at the bare suspicion. Fortunate and wise country! art thou then one day to experience the fatal destiny of other countries? art thou to be ravaged and subdued as they have been? Far be it from me to entertain a prelage that might tend to invalidate, in my mind, the most comfortable of all ideas; that there exists a providence who watches over the preservation of the good! Not let the numerous events which seem to depose the contrary have any influence over me!

It is upon this prospect that the Pennsylvanians have founded their opinion of their future securicy. Besides, as they do not perceive that the most warlike states are the most permanent; that mistrust, which is ever upon its guard, makes men rest with greater tranquillity, or that there can be any satisfaction in the possession of any thing that is kept with such ap-
prehensions; they enjoy the present moment without any concern for the future. The people of Maryland are of a different opinion.

Charles the First, far from having any aversion for the Catholics, as his predecessors, had some reason to protect them, from the zeal which, in hopes of being tolerated, they had shown for his interest. But when the accusation of being favourable to popery had alienated the minds of the people from that weak prince, whose chief aim was to establish a despotic government, he was obliged to give the Catholics up to the rigour of the laws enacted against them by Henry the Eighth. These circumstances induced Lord Baltimore to seek an asylum in Virginia, where he might be indulged in a liberty of conscience. As he found there no toleration for an exclusive system of faith, which was itself intolerant, he formed the design of a new settlement in that uninhabited part of the country which lay between the river of Potowmack and Pennsylvania. His death, which happened soon after he had obtained powers from the crown for peopling this land, put a stop to the project for that time; but it was resumed, from the same religious motives, by his son. This young nobleman left England in the year 1633, with two hundred Roman Catholics, most of them of good families. The education they had received, the cause of religion for which they had left their country, and the fortune which their leader promised them, prevented those disturbances which are but too common in infant settlements. The neighbouring savages, won by mildness and acts of beneficence, concurred with eagerness to afloat the new colonists in forming their settlement. With this unexpected help, these fortunate persons, attached to each other by the same principles of religion, and directed by the prudent councils of their chief, applied themselves unanimously to every kind of useful labour: the view of the peace and happiness they enjoyed, invited among them a number of men who were either persecuted...
for the same religion, or for different opinions. The Catholics of Maryland gave up at length the intolera-
rant principles, of which they themselves had been the victims, after having first set the example of them,
and opened the doors of their colony to all sects, of
what religious principles soever. They all enjoyed
the rights of a city in the same extent; and the go-
vernment was modelled upon that of the mother-
country.

These wise precautions, however, did not secure
Baltimore, at the time of the subversion of the mo-
narchy, from losing all the concessions he had obtain-
ed. Deprived of his possessions by Cromwell, he was
restored to them by Charles the Second; after which
they were again disputed with him. Though he was
perfectly clear from any reproach of mal-administra-
tion; and though he was extremely zealous for the
Tramontane doctrines, and much attached to the in-
terests of the Stuarts; yet he had the mortification of
finding the legality of his charter attacked under the
arbitrary reign of James II. and of being obliged to
maintain an action at law for the jurisdiction of a pro-
vince which had been ceded to him by the crown,
and which he himself had formed at his own expense.

This prince, whose misfortune it had always been not
to distinguish his friends from his foes, and who had
also the ridiculous pride to think that regal author-
ty was sufficient to justify every act of violence, was pre-
paring a second time to deprive Baltimore of what
had been given him by the two kings, his father and
brother, when he was himself removed from the throne
which he was so unfit to fill. The successor of the
weak despotic prince terminated this contest, which
had arisen before his accession to the crown, in a man-
ner worthy of his political character: he left the Bal-
timores in possession of their revenues, but deprived
them of their authority. When this family, who were
more regardless of the prejudices of religion, because
members of the church of England, they were rei-
flated in the hereditary government of Maryland; they began again to conduct the colony, assisted by a council, and two deputies chosen by each district. Fortunately for itself, Maryland hath been less fruitful in events than any other settlement formed in the northern continent. There are only two facts worthy of being recorded in its history.

Berkley, extravagantly zealous for the church of England, expelled from Virginia those among its inhabitants who did not profess this mode of worship; and they were obliged to seek an asylum in the province we are now speaking of. The Virginians were highly incensed at the favourable reception which these people met with; and in the first rage of an unjust resentment, they persuaded the savages that their new neighbours were Spaniards. This odious name entirely changed the sentiments of the Indians; and, without deliberation, they ravaged the grounds which they had assisted in clearing; and massacred, without mercy, those very men whom they had just received in a brotherly manner. It required a great deal of time, and patience, and many sacrifices, before these prejudiced minds could be convinced of their mistake.

Baltimore, attending more to his reason than to the prejudices of education, granted an equal share in the government to every different professor of Christianity. The Catholics were excluded from it, at the memorable period when this nobleman was deprived of his authority. The British ministry either could not, or would not, put a stop to this act of fanaticism. It exerted its influence only in preventing the founders of the colony from being driven out of it, and the penal laws, which were not even attended to in England, from being enforced.

The province is very well watered. A number of springs are found in it, and it is intersected by five navigable rivers. The air, which is much too damp upon the coasts, becomes pure, light, and thin, in propor-
tion as the foil becomes more elevated. Spring and autumn are most agreeably temperate; but in the winter there are some exceedingly cold days; and in summer, some in which the heat is very troublesome. The circumstance, however, which is the least sup- portable in this country, is the great quantity of dis- guiling insects that are found there.

Maryland is one of the smallest provinces of North America; and accordingly, grants have been made of almost all the territory, both in the plains and upon the mountains. They remained for a long time either fallow, or very ill cultivated; but the labours have in- creased, since the population, according to the calcula- tion of congress, hath amounted to three hundred and twenty thousand inhabitants.

Several of these are Catholics, and a great many more are Germans. Their manners have more mild- ness than energy; and this may arise from the women not being excluded from society, as in most of the other parts of the continent. The men who are free, and not very rich, who are settled upon the high grounds, and who originally bred no flocks, cut no wood, and cultivated no corn, but for the use of the colony, have gradually furnished a great quantity of these articles to the West Indies. The prosperity, however, of the colony, hath been more particularly owing to the slaves employed at a greater or less dis- tance from the sea, in the plantations of tobacco.

This is a sharp caustic plant; formerly much used, as it still is, sometimes in medicine, which, if taken inwardly, in substance, is a real poison, more or less active, according to the dose. It is chewed, smoked in the leaves, and is in more general use as snuff.

It was discovered in the year 1520, near Tabasco, in the Gulf of Mexico, from whence it was carried to the neighbouring islands. It was soon after introduc- ed in our climates, where the use of it became a mat- ter of dispute among the learned, which even the igno- rant took a part in; and thus tobacco acquired co-
lebrity. By degrees fashion and custom have greatly extended its consumption in all parts of the known world.

The stem of this plant is straight, hairy, and viscous. It is three or four feet high. Its leaves, equally downy, and disposed alternately on the stem, are thick, pulpy, of a pale green, broad, oval, terminating in a point, and much larger at the foot than at the summit of the plant. This summit branches out into clusters of flowers of a light purple hue. Their tubular calix, which hath five indentations, encloses a corolla, lengthened out in form of a funnel, spread out at the top, divided into five parts, and furnished with as many stamina. The pistil, concealed at the bottom of the flower, and terminated by a single style, becomes, as it ripens, a capsula, with two cavities filled with small seeds.

Tobacco requires a moderately binding soil, but rich, even, deep, and not too much exposed to inundations. A virgin soil is very proper for this plant, which absorbs a great deal of moisture.

The seeds of the tobacco are sown upon beds. When it is grown to the height of two inches, and hath got at least half a dozen leaves, it is gently pulled up in damp weather, and transplanted, with great care, into a well-prepared soil, where the plants are placed at the distance of three feet from each other. When they are put into the ground with these precautions, their leaves do not suffer the least injury; and all their vigour is renewed in four-and-twenty hours.

The cultivation of tobacco requires continual attention. The weeds which grow round it must be plucked up; the top of it must be cut off, when it is two feet and a half from the ground, to prevent it from growing too high; it must be stripped of all sprouting suckers; the leaves which grow too near the bottom of the stem, those that are in the least inclined to decay, and those which the insects have touched, must all be taken off, and their number re-
duced to eight or ten at most. One industrious man is able to take care of two thousand six hundred plants, which ought to yield one thousand weight of tobacco.

The plant is left about four months in the ground. As it advances to maturity, the pleasant and lively green colour of its leaves is changed into a darker hue; the leaves are also curved, the scent of them grows stronger, and extends to a distance. The plant is then ripe, and must be cut up.

The plants, when collected, are laid in heaps upon the ground that produced them, where they are left to exude only for one night. The next day they are laid in warehouses, constructed in such a manner that the air may have free access to them on all sides. Here they are left separately suspended as long a time as is necessary to dry them properly. They are then spread upon hurdles, and well covered over, where they ferment for a week or two. At last they are stripped of their leaves, which are either put into barrels, or made up into rolls. The other methods of preparing the plant, which vary according to the different tastes of the several nations that use it, have nothing to do with its cultivation.

The inhabitants of the East Indies, and of Africa, cultivate tobacco only for their own use. They neither sell nor purchase any.

Salonica is the great mart for tobacco in the Levant. Syria, the Morea, or the Peloponnesus, and Egypt, send there all their superfluous quantity. From this port it is sent to Italy, where it is smoked, after it hath been mixed with the tobacco of Dalmatia and Croatia, to soften its caustic quality.

The tobacco of these two last provinces is of a very excellent kind; but it is so strong, that it cannot be used till mixed with a milder sort.

The tobacco of Hungary would be tolerably good, if it had not generally a smell of smoke which is very disgusting.

The Ukraine, Livonia, Prussia, and Pomerania, cul-
tivate a tolerably large quantity of this production. In order to improve it, the court of Russia hath caused some tobacco seeds, brought from Virginia and from Hamersfort, to be sown in their colonies of Sarratow, upon the Volga; but this experiment hath been attended with little or no success.

The tobacco of the Palatinate is very indifferent; but it hath the property of mixing with a better kind, and of acquiring its flavour.

Holland also furnishes tobacco. That which is produced in the province of Utrecht, from Hamersfort, and from four or five neighbouring districts, is of a superior quality. Its leaves are large, supple, oily, and of a good colour. It hath the uncommon advantage of communicating its delicious perfume to tobacco of an inferior quality. There is a great deal of this latter sort upon the territories of the Republic; but the species which grows in Guelderland is the worst of any.

Tobacco was formerly cultivated in France, and with more success than anywhere else, near Pont de l'Arche in Normandy, at Verton in Picardy, and at Montauban, Tonneins, and Cleral, in Guyenne. It was prohibited in 1721, except upon some frontier towns, whose original terms of capitulation it was not thought proper to infringe. Hainault, Artois, and Franche Comté, profited very little from a liberty which the nature of their soil did not allow them to make use of. It has been more useful to Flanders and Alsace; for their tobaccos, though very weak, may be mixed, without inconvenience, with others of a superior kind.

In the beginning, the islands of the New World attended to the culture of tobacco; but it was succulently succeeded by richer productions in them all, except at Cuba, which supplies all the snuff consumed by the Spaniards of both hemispheres. Its perfume is exquisite, but too strong. The same crown derives
from Caraccas the tobacco which is smoked by its subjects in Europe. It is likewise used in the North, and in Holland, because there is none to be found any where to be compared with it, for this purpose.

The Brazils cultivated this production very early, and have not since disdained it. They have been encouraged in this pursuit, by the constant repute which their tobacco hath enjoyed upon the western coasts of Africa. Even in our climates, it is in tolerable request among persons who smoke. It could not be taken in snuff, on account of its acrimony, without the preparations which it undergoes. These preparations consist in soaking every leaf in a decoction of tobacco, and of gum copal. These leaves, thus steeped, are formed into rolls, and wrapped up in the skin of an ox, which keeps up their moist ure.

But the best tobaccos upon the face of the earth grow in the North of America; and in that part of the New World, the tobacco gathered at Maryland is of the second sort. This plant has not, however, an equal degree of perfection throughout the whole extent of the colonies. That of the growth of Chester and of Chouptan, resembles the Virginia tobacco in quality, and is consumed in France. That which grows in Patapsico and Potuxant, which is very fit for smoking, is consumed in the North, and in Holland. Upon the northern shores of the Potowmack, the tobacco is excellent in the higher parts, and of moderate quality in the lower ones.

Saint Mary, formerly the capital of the state, is of no consequence at present; and Annapolis, which now enjoys this prerogative, is scarce more considerable. It is at Baltimore that almost all the business is transacted, the harbour of which can receive ships that draw seventeen feet of water. These three towns, the only ones which are in the colony, are situated upon the bay of Chesapeak, which runs two hundred and fifty miles up the country, and the mean breadth of which is twelve miles. There are two capes at its entrance; and in the middle is a sand bank. The channel which
is near Cape Charles can admit none but very small vessels, while that which runs along-side Cape Henry admits the largest ships at any season of the year.

Few of the lands between the Appalachian mountains and the sea are so good as those of Maryland. These, however, are in general too light, sandy, and shallow, to reward the planter for his labour and expenses, in as short a time as in our climates. Fertility, which always attends the first clearing of the soil, is rapidly followed by an extraordinary decrease in the quantity and quality of the corn. The soil is still sooner exhausted by the culture of tobacco. This leaf loses much of its strength, whenever the same spot hath yielded, without intermission, a few crops of tobacco. For this reason, inspectors were created in 1733, who were empowered to cause all the tobacco to be burnt which had not the proper flavour. This was a prudent institution; but it seems to foretell, that the most important production of the province must one day be given up, or that it will infallibly be reduced to very little.

Then, or perhaps before, the iron mines, which are in great abundance in the colony, will be worked. This is a source of prosperity which hath not hitherto been carried beyond the use of seventeen or eighteen forges. A greater degree of liberty, and new wants, will communicate more strength and more activity to the colonists.

Other manufactures will also undoubtedly arise. Maryland had never any of any kind. It received from Great Britain all the articles it wanted for the most ordinary purposes of life. This was one of the reasons which occasioned its being burdened with debts. Mr. Stirenwith hath at length established manufactures for stockings, for silk, woollen, and cotton stuffs, and for all kinds of hardware, even fire-arms. These branches of industry, at present united in one manufacture, at a considerable expense, and with extraordinary facility, will be more or less rapidly diff-
BOOK XVIII.

In what manner Virginia was established, and by whom.

persed throughout the province; and, crossing the Potowmack, will be likewise adopted at Virginia.

This other colony, with the same kind of soil and of climate as Maryland, hath a few advantages over the latter. Its extent is much more considerable. Its rivers can admit larger ships, and allow them a longer navigation. Its inhabitants have a more elevated turn of mind, have more resolution, and are more enterprising: this may be attributed to their being generally of English extraction.

Virginia was, about two centuries ago, the only country which England intended to occupy on the continent of North America. This name doth not at present belong to any thing more than the space which is bounded by Maryland on one side, and by Carolina on the other.

The English landed upon these savage shores in 1606, and their first settlement was James Town. Unfortunately, the object that first presented itself to them was a rivulet, which, issuing from a sand-bank, carried along with it a quantity of talc, which glittered at the bottom of a clear and running water. In an age when gold and silver were the only objects of men's researches, this despicable substance was immediately taken for silver. The first and only employment of the new colonists was to collect it; and the illusion was carried so far, that two ships, which arrived there with necessaries, were sent home so fully freighted with these imaginary riches, that there scarce remained any room for a few furs. As long as this infatuation lasted, the colonists disdained to employ themselves in clearing the lands; so that a dreadful famine was at length the consequence of this foolish pride. Sixty men only remained alive out of five hundred who had been sent from Europe. These unfortunate few, having only a fortnight's provision left, were upon the point of embarking for Newfoundland, when Lord Delaware arrived there with three ships, a fresh colony, and supplies of all kinds.
History has described this nobleman to us as a man whose genius raised him above the common prejudices of the times. His disinterestedness was equal to his knowledge. In accepting the government of the colony, which was fill in its infancy, he had no motive but to gratify the inclination a virtuous mind has to do good, and to secure the esteem of posterity, which is the second reward of that generosity that devotes itself totally to the service of the public. As soon as he appeared, the knowledge of his character procured him universal respect. He first endeavoured to reconcile the wretched colonists to their fatal country, to comfort them in their sufferings, and to make them hope for a speedy conclusion of them. After this, joining the firmness of an enlightened magistrate to the tenderness of a good father, he taught them how to direct their labours to an useful end. Unfortunately for the reviving colony, Delaware's declining health soon obliged him to return to Europe; but he never lost sight of his favourite colonists, nor ever failed to make use of all his credit and interest at court to support them.

The colony, however, made but little progress; a circumstance that was attributed to the oppression of exclusive privileges. The company which exercised them was disdained upon Charles the First's accession to the throne. Before that period, all the authority had been entirely in the hands of the monopoly. Virginia then came under the immediate direction of the crown, which exacted no more than a rent of two livres five sols [1s. 10½d.] upon every hundred acres that were cultivated.

Till this time the colonists had known no true enjoyment of property. Every individual wandered where chance directed him, or fixed himself in the place he liked best, without consulting any titles or agreements. At length boundaries were ascertained; and those who had been so long wanderers, now became citizens, had determined limits to their plantations. The establishment of this first law of society...
changed the appearance of every thing. Fresh plantations arose on all sides. This activity drew great numbers of enterprising men over to Virginia, who came either in search of fortune, or of liberty, which is the only compensation for the want of it. The memorable troubles that produced a change in the constitution of England, added to these a multitude of Royalists, who went there with a resolution to wait, with Berkley, the governor of the colony, who was also attached to King Charles, the fate of that deserted monarch. Berkley still continued to protect them, even after the king’s death; but some of the inhabitants, either brought over or bribed, and supported by the appearance of a powerful fleet, delivered up the colony to the Protector. If the governor was compelled to follow the stream against his will, he was, at least, among those whom Charles had honoured with polls of confidence and rank, the last who submitted to Cromwell, and the first who shook off his yoke. This brave man was sinking under the oppression of the times, when the voice of the people recalled him to the place which his successor’s death had left vacant; but far from yielding to these flattering solicitations, he declared that he never would serve any but the legitimate heir of the dethroned monarch. Such an example of magnanimity, at a time when there were no hopes of the restoration of the royal family, made such an impression upon the minds of the people, that Charles the Second was proclaimed in Virginia before he had been proclaimed in England.

The colony did not, however, receive from so generous a step all the benefit that might have been expected. The new monarch, either from weakness or corruption, granted to rapacious courtiers immense territories, which absorbed the possessions of a great number of obscure citizens. The act of navigation, suggested by the Protector for the purpose of securing to the mother-country the supplying of all their settlements in the New World with provisions, and the exclusive trade of all their productions, was observed
with such rigour, as to double almost the value of the articles to be purchased by Virginia, and lessen still more the value of what they had to sell. This double oppression exhausted all the resources, and dispelled all the hopes of the colony; and to complete its misfortunes, the savages attacked it with a degree of spirit and skill which they had not manifested in any of the preceding wars.

Scarce had the English landed in these unknown regions, than they had disposed the natives against them by the dishonesty they had practised in their exchanges. This source of discord might have been put to sleep, had the English contented to take Indian wives, as they were solicited to do. But although they had not yet any European women with them, they rejected this connection with disdain. This contempt exasperated the Americans, already alienated by their want of faith; and they became irreconcilable enemies. Their hatred was manifested by secret assassinations, and by public hostilities, and in 1622, by a conspiracy, in which three hundred and thirty-four people lost their lives, and which would even have destroyed the whole colony, had not the commanders been apprised of the danger a few hours before the time appointed for a general massacre.

Since this act of treachery, many atrocious ones have been committed on both sides. Truces between the two nations were unfrequent, and ill observed. The rupture was usually begun by the English. The less profit they drew from their plantations, the more artifice and force did they employ to deprive the savages of their furs. This insatiable avidity, which indiscriminately seized upon all the inhabitants, whether settled or wandering, in the neighbourhood of the colony, made the Americans again take up arms towards the end of the year 1675. They all, by agreement, fell upon the settlements, imprudently dispersed, and at too great a distance to afford each other any assistance.

Such a complication of misfortunes drove the Vir-
ginians to despair. Berkley, who had so long been
their idol, was accused of wanting fortitude to resist
the oppressions of the mother-country, and activity to
repel the interruptions of the savages. The eyes of all
were immediately fixed upon Bacon, a young officer,
full of vivacity, eloquence, and intrepidity, of an infi-
nuating disposition, and an agreeable person. They
chose him for their general, in an irregular and tumultuous manner. Though his military successes might
have justified this prepossession of the licentious multi-
tude, yet this circumstance did not prevent the go-
v ernor, who, with his remaining partisans, had retired
on the borders of the Potowmack, from declaring Ba-
con a traitor to his country. A sentence so severe, and
which was ill-timed, determined Bacon to assume a
power by force, which he had exercised peaceably,
and without opposition, for six months. Death put
an end to all his projects. The malecontents, disunited
by the loss of their chief, and intimidated by the troops
which were coming from Europe, were induced to sue
for pardon, which was readily granted them. The re-
b ellion, therefore, was attended with no bad con-
sequences, and mercy ensured submission.

Tranquillity was no sooner restored, than means
were thought of to reconcile the Indians, with whom
all intercourse had for some time been at an end. The
communications were opened again in the year 1678,
by the general assembly; but it was stipulated, that
the exchanges should be made in no other markets,
except such as were settled by themselves. This in-
novation displeased the savages; and matters soon re-
turned to their former course.

The raising of the value of tobacco was a still more
important object, as this was the most considerable,
and almost the only production of the colony. It was
thought that nothing would contribute more effectu-
ally to raise it from the state of degradation into which
it had fallen, than to refuse the tobaccos which were
brought to Virginia from Maryland and from Caroli-
na, and to send them to Europe. If the legislators
had been better informed, they would have under-Book
stood, that this staple must necessarily, sooner or later, draw into their own hands the freight of this commodity, and would make them the arbiters of its price. By sending it away from their ports, through an ill-judged motive of avarice, they drew upon themselves, in all the markets, competitors, who convinced them, by dear-bought experience, of the error of their principles.

These arrangements were scarcely made, before there arrived a new governor to the colony, in the spring of 1679. This was Lord Colepepper. The troubles with which this settlement had been so recently agitated encouraged him to propose a law, which should condemn to one year's imprisonment, or to a fine of 11,250 livres [468l. 15s.], all those citizens who should speak or write any thing against their governor; and to three months imprisonment, or to a fine of 2250 livres [93l. 15s.], those who should speak or write against the members of the council, or against any other magistrate.

Was this governor apprehensive then, that the faults of administration, and the dishonesty of its administrators, should be suspected? In what part of the world would not the same consequences be drawn from the imposing of silence? Is it praise or censure that is feared, when the command for silence is issued? These prohibitions calumniate the government, if it be good, because they tend to persuade that it is not so. But what measures can be adopted to enforce the observance of these prohibitions? Can we be ignorant, that it is the nature of man to attempt those actions, which, by becoming dangerous, have a sense of glory attached to them? To oppress a man, and to prevent him from murmuring and complaining, is an atrocious act of violence against which he never fails to revolt. But how will the government discover those who are rebellious to their orders? This can only be done by spies, by informations, and by all those measures which will certainly divide the citizens, and raise misfortune and
hatred among them. Whom will government punish? The most honest and the most generous men, who will never be silent when they are persuaded that it is their duty to speak out. They will certainly bid defiance to menaces, or will know how to elude them. If they should adopt the first of these resolutions, will government dare to imprison them? and if it should, would they not soon find persons to avenge them? If it should not, they would fall into contempt. If their men had been allowed to explain themselves with frankness, they would have blended dignity and moderation in their remonstrances. Constraint, and the danger of punishment, will transform these remonstrances into violent, bitter, and seditious libels; and it is the tyranny of government that will have rendered them guilty. Sovereigns, or you who are depositaries of their authority, if your administration be a good one, deliver it up to all the severity of our examination; it can only endure our respect and submission. If it be a bad one, correct it, or defend it by force. If you be a set of abominable tyrants, have at least the courage to acknowledge it. If you be just, let the people talk and sleep in peace. If you be oppressors, tranquillity and sleep are not made for you nor will you ever enjoy them, notwithstanding all your efforts. Remember the fate of him who was willing to be hated, provided he might be feared. You will certainly experience the same, unless you be surrounded by vile slaves, such as the inhabitants of Virginia at that time undoubtedly were. The representatives of this province granted, without hesitation, their consent to a law, which secured impunity to all the plunderers of their governors. The misfortunes of Virginia were soon aggravated by other calamities.

At the origin of the colony, justice was administered with a degree of disinterestedness which warranted the equity of the judgments. One single court took cognizance of all differences, and decided upon them in a few days, with a right of appeal to the general assembly, which used as much dispatch in settling them.
This order of things gave the governors too little influence over the fortunes of individuals, for them not to endeavour to suppress it. By their manoeuvres, and under several pretences, they obtained that the appeals, which till then had been carried before the representatives of the province, should be made exclusively to their council.

A still more fatal innovation was ordained in 1692 by another governor, who enacted, that the laws, the tribunals, the formalities, every thing, in a word, that contributed to form the chaos of English jurisprudence, should be established in his government. Nothing was left suitable to the planters of Virginia, than statutes so singular, so complicated, and often so contradictory. Accordingly, these uninformed men found themselves engaged in a labyrinth to which they could find no issue. They were generally alarmed for their rights and their properties; and this apprehension slackened their labours for a long time.

These were not carried on with vigour and success, till after the beginning of the century, at which time nothing impeded their increase; only the frontiers of the colony were exposed in the latter times to the devastations of the savages, whom they had exasperated by their acts of atrociousness and injustice. These differences were terminated in 1774. They would have been forgotten, had it not been for the speech made by Logan, chief of the Shawanese, to Lord Dunmore, governor of the province.

"I now ask of every white man, whether he hath ever entered the cottage of Logan, when pressed with hunger, and been refused food? Whether coming naked, and shivering with cold, Logan hath not given him something to cover himself with. During the course of this last war, so long and so bloody, Logan hath remained quietly upon his mat, willing to be the advocate of peace. Yes, such is my attachment for white men, that even those of my nation, when they passed by me, pointed at me, saying, Logan is a friend to white men. I had even..."
thought of living amongst you; but that was before
the injury which I have received from one of you.
Last summer, Colonel Cresip massacred in cool blood,
and without any provocation, all the relations of Lo-
gan, without sparing either his wife or his children.
There is not now one drop of my blood in the veins
of any human creature existing. This is what has
excited my revenge. I have fought it; I have kill-
ed several of your people, and my hatred is appea-
ed. I rejoice at seeing the prospect of peace bright-
en upon my country. But do not imagine that my
joy is instigated by fear. Logan knows not what
fear is. He will never turn his back, in order to save
his life. But, alas! no one remains to mourn for
Logan when he shall be no more!"

What a beautiful, simple, energetic, and affecting
speech! Are Demosthenes, Cicero, or Boëtius, more
elloquent than this savage? What better proof can
be adduced of the truth of that well-known maxim
which says, that from the abundance of the heart the
mouth speaks.

Virginia, like most of the other colonies, was inha-
bited at first only by vagabonds, destitute of family
and fortune. They soon obtained some kind of wealth
by labour, and they were desirous of sharing the swee-
of it with a female companion. As there were no
women in the province, and that they would have
none but such as were decent, they gave 2250 livres
[93l. 15s.] for every young person brought them from
Europe with a certificate of virtue and chastity. This
custom was not of long duration. As soon as at
least doubts respecting the fertility and fertility of the
country were removed, whole families, even of re-
spectable rank, went to Virginia. The population
was increasing with some degree of rapidity, when its
progress was stopped by fanaticism.

The religion of the mother-country was the first,
and soon became the only one which was followed
in this province, when some Non-conformists at
last crossed the seas. Their tenets, or their ceremonies,
disgusted; and in 1624 a law was made, which expelled from the province all those inhabitants who did not belong to the church of England. The imperious law of necessity soon caused the revocation of this fatal decree: but a toleration so tardy, and which was evidently granted with reluctance, did not produce the great effects that were expected from it. A small number only of Presbyterians, Quakers, and French refugees, ventured to put any trust in this repentance. The religion of Henry VIII. continued to be the prevailing one, and was almost exclusive.

In process of time, however, men multiplied upon this soil, the fertility of which was daily increasing in reputation. The passion for riches with which the Old Continent was more and more infected, gave citizens incessantly to this part of the New World. If the calculations of congress be not exaggerated, the population amounts to fix hundred and fifty thousand souls, including the slaves, whose number, according to the common opinion, amounts to one hundred and fifty thousand. The Dutch first introduced these unfortunate people into the colony in 1620.

The labours of these white men, and of these Negroes, give to the two hemispheres, corn, maize, dry vegetables, iron, hemp, hides, furs, salt meats, tar, wood, maids, and especially tobacco, which is generally superior to that of Maryland, though it be not equally excellent in every part of the province. The preference is given to that of York River; the second belt is reckoned to be that which grows along James's River, and that which grows on the borders of the Rappahanoc, and to the south of the Potowmack, is the least esteemed.

From 1752 till the end of 1755, Great Britain received from Virginia and Maryland together, three million five hundred and one thousand one hundred and ten quintals of tobacco, which made for each of the four years, eight hundred and seventy-five thousand two hundred and four hundred quintals. Virginia exported two million nine hundred and eighty-nine
thousand eight hundred quintals, which reduced its annual consumption to one hundred and twenty-four thousand eight hundred and thirty quintals.

From the year 1763, till the end of 1770, the two colonies sent to the mother-country no more than five million five hundred thousand quintals of tobacco, eight hundred and twelve thousand five hundred quintals each of the eight years. No more was sold to foreigners than five million one hundred and forty-eight thousand quintals, or six hundred and forty-three thousand five hundred quintals per annum; the nation therefore annually consumed one hundred and sixty-nine thousand quintals.

In the interval between these two periods the importation, therefore, decreased annually, one year with another, sixty-two thousand seven hundred and four-score quintals, and the exportation one hundred and three thousand nine hundred and fifty quintals; while the consumption in England increased forty-one thousand one hundred and seventy quintals every year.

The use of tobacco hath not decreased in Europe; the passion for this superfluity hath even increased, notwithstanding the heavy duties with which it hath been burdened by all governments. If the tobacco, furnished by North America be daily less sought after among us, it is because Holland, Alsatia, the Palatinate, and principally Russia, have carried on this culture with great industry.

In 1769, Virginia and Maryland together sold to the amount of 16,195,577 livres 4 sols 7 deniers [about 674,315 l. 14s. 4d.] of their productions. Two-thirds of this sum belonged to the first of these settlements. Tobacco was the principal of these productions; first of all the colonies exported fifty-seven million three hundred and thirty-seven thousand seven hundred and ninety-five pounds weight of it; and the other, twenty-five million seven hundred and eighty-one thousand seven hundred and sixty-nine pounds weight.

In Virginia, vessels employed for the exportation of these productions do not find them collected in a small
number of staples, as in the other commercial states of the globe. They are obliged to form their cargo by detail from the plantations themselves, which are situated at a greater or less distance from the ocean, upon navigable rivers, of one or two hundred miles in length. This custom fatigues the navigators, and makes their voyage tedious. Great Britain, which is always attentive to the preservation of her seamen, and is particularly careful of lessening the number of their voyages, wished, and even ordered, that some towns should be built at the mouth of the rivers, where the productions of the province might be sent. But neither infinuations, nor the constraint of the laws, were of any avail. A few small villages only were built, which could scarce fulfil even the least part of the views of the mother-country. Williamsburg itself hath no more than two thousand inhabitants, though it be the residence of the governor, the place where the national assemblies and the courts of justice are holden, and where colleges are instituted; though it be decorated with the finest public edifices on the northern continent; and though it be the capital of the colony, since the ruin of James-town.

Men, who prefer the tranquillity of a rural life to the tumultuous abode of cities, ought naturally to be economical and laborious; but this was never the case in Virginia. Its inhabitants were always very expensive in the furniture of their houses; they were always fond of entertaining their neighbors with ostentation. They always liked to display the greatest luxury before the English navigators, whom business brought to their plantations. They always gave themselves up to that effeminacy, and to that negligence, so common in countries where slavery is established. Accordingly, the engagements of the colony became habitually very considerable. At the beginning of the troubles, they were supposed to amount to 25,000,000 of livres [1,041,666l. 13s. 4d.]. This prodigious sum was due to the merchants of Great Britain, for Negroes, or for other articles which they had furnished.
The confidence of these bold lenders was particularly founded upon an unjust law, which secured their payment in preference to every other debt, though previously contracted.

The colony hath great powers to extricate itself from a situation apparently so desperate. It will succeed, when more simplicity shall prevail in the manners, and more moderation in the expenses; when availing itself of the resources offered by an immense and fertile territory, it shall vary and improve its cultures; it will succeed, when it shall no longer receive from foreigners the most ordinary household furniture, and that which is in most general use; when its manufactures shall no longer be confined to the employing of some small quantities of cotton, which is of too indifferent a quality to be sought for in the European manufactures; and when its public coffers, less plundered, and better regulated, shall admit of the diminution of the taxes, which are much more considerable in that province than in any other of this continent. Several of these counsels may concern the two Carolinas.

The vast country which these provinces occupy, was discovered by the Spaniards, soon after their first expeditions in the New World; they despised it, because it did not offer any gold to their avarice. Admiral Coligny, more wise, and more able, opened there a source of industry to the French Protestants; but fanaticism, which pursued them, ruined their hopes by the affixture of this just, humane, and enlightened man. They were succeeded by a few Englishmen towards the end of the sixteenth century; who by an inexplicable caprice forsook this infant settlement, to go and cultivate a harsher soil, under a less temperate climate.

There was not a single European seen in Carolina, when the lords Berkley, Clarendon, Albemarle, Craven, Ashley, and Messrs. Carteret, Berkley, and Colleton, obtained from Charles II. in 1663, a grant of this fine country. The plan of government for this
new colony was drawn up by the famous Locke. A B O O K
philosopher, who was a friend to mankind, and to that
moderation and justice which should be the only rule
of their actions, ought to have destroyed the very
foundations of that fanaticism, which in all countries
hath excited divisions among them, and which will
induce them to take up arms against each other to the
end of time.

Intoleration, however horrid it may appear to us, is
a necessary consequence of the spirit of superstition.
Will it not be acknowledged, that punishments should
be proportioned to the nature of offences? What crime
can be greater than that of infidelity, in the eyes
of him who considers religion as the fundamental basis
of morality? According to these principles, the irreli-
gious man is the common enemy of all society; the
breaker of the only tie that connects men with each
other; the promoter of all the crimes that may escape
the severity of the laws. It is he who stifles every re-
morise, who suts the passions loose from every restraint,
and who keeps, as it were, a school of wickedness.
What! shall we lead to the gibbet an unfortunate
man, whom indigence conceals upon the highway, who
rushes out upon the traveller with a pistol in his hand,
and demands a small pittance that may be necessary
for the subsistence of his wife and children, who may
be expiring with misery; and shall we pardon a rob-
ber infinitely more dangerous? We think meanly of
the man who suffers his friend to be ill spoken of in
his presence; and shall we require that the religious
man shall suffer the infidel to blaspheme his Master, his
Father, and his Creator with impunity? We must ei-
ther admit that all faith is absurd, or we must put up
with intoleration as a necessary evil. Saint Lewis rea-
soned very confidently when he said to Joinville, If
thou shouldest ever bear any one speak ill of God, draw thy
sword and stab him through the heart; I allow thee to do
it. So important it is in all countries, as we are af-
fured is the case in China, that sovereigns, and the
depotaries of their authority, should not be attached.

Vol. VI.
Every thing induces us to imagine that such was
the opinion of Locke. But not daring to attack too
openly the prejudices of the times, founded equally
on virtues and vices, he wished to conciliate them as
much as could be consistent with a principle dictated
by reason and humanity. As the savage inhabitants
of America, said he, have no idea of a revelation, it
would be the height of folly to torment them for their
ignorance. Those Christians who should come to peo-
ple the colony, would undoubtedly come in quest of
a liberty of conscience, which priests and princes de-
ny them in Europe: it would therefore not be con-
sistent with good faith to persecute, after having re-
ceived them. The Jews and the Pagans did not more
deferve to be rejected, for an infatuation which mild-
ness and persuasion might have put a stop to.

Thus it was that the English philosopher reasoned
with men whose minds were imbued and prejudiced
with tenets which it had not yet been allowed to dis-
cuss. Out of regard to their weaknesses, he placed the
system of toleration which he was establishing under
the following restriction: that every person above se-
venteen years of age, who should claim the protec-
tion of the laws, should cause his name to be register-
ed in some communion. This was a breach made in
his system. The liberty of conscience admits of no
kind of modification. This is an account which man
owes to God alone. In whatever manner the magis-
trate may be made to interfere in it, it is an act of
injustice. A Deist could not possibly subscribe to such
terms.

Civil liberty, however, was much less favoured by
Locke. Whether this proceeded from motives of com-
plainance for those who employed him, a kind of mean-
ness which we are averse from suspecting him of; or
whether, being more of a metaphysician than a states-
man, he had pursued philosophy only in those tracts
which had been opened by Descartes and Leibnitz, it
is certain, that the same man who had dissipate and destroyed so many errors in his theory concerning the origin of ideas, made but very feeble and uncertain advances in the paths of legislation. The author of a work, the permanency of which will render the glory of the French nation immortal, even when tyranny shall have broken all the springs, and all the monuments of the genius of a people esteemed by the whole world for so many brilliant and amiable qualities; even Montesquieu himself did not perceive that he was making men for governments, instead of governments for men.

The code of Carolina, by a singularity not to be accounted for in an Englishman and in a philosopher, gave to the eight proprietors who founded the settlement, and to their heirs, not only all the rights of sovereignty, but all the powers of legislation.

The first use these sovereigns made of their authority was to create three orders of nobility. Those to whom they gave no more than twelve thousand acres of land were called barons; those who received twenty-four thousand were called caciques, and the title of landgrave was bestowed on those two who obtained fourscore thousand each. These concessions could never be alienated in detail, and their fortunate possessors were alone to form the house of peers. The house of commons was composed of the representatives of the towns and counties, but with privileges less considerable than in the mother-country. The assembly was called a court palatine. Every tenant was obliged to pay annually 1 livre 2 sols 6 deniers [11½d.] per acre, but he was allowed to redeem this duty.

The progress of this great settlement was for too long a time impeded by powerful obstacles. The colony had from its origin been open indiscriminately to all sects, which had all enjoyed the same privileges. It had been understood, that this was the only way to make an infant state acquire rapid and great prosperity. The members of the church of England being afterwards jealous of the non-confor-
BOOK XVIII.

Mists, wanted to exclude them from government, and even to oblige them to shut up the houses where they performed divine service. These acts of folly and of violence were annulled in 1706 by the mother-country, as being contrary to humanity, to justice, to reason, and to policy. From the collision of these opinions arose cabals and tumults, which diverted the inhabitants from useful labours, and turned their attention to a multitude of absurdities, which will be never so much despised as they deserve to be.

Two wars, which were carried on against the savages, were almost as extravagant and as destructive of every improvement. All the wandering or fixed nations between the ocean and the Appalachian mountains, were attacked and massacred without any interest or motive; those who escaped being put to the sword, either submitted or were dispersed. In the meanwhile, a form of constitution ill-arranged, was the principal cause of an almost general indolence. The lords who were proprietors, imbued with despotic principles, used their utmost efforts to establish an arbitrary government. The colonists, on the other hand, who were not ignorant of the rights of mankind, exerted themselves with equal warmth to avoid servitude. It was necessary either to establish a new order of things, or to suffer, that a vast country, from which such great advantages had been expected, should remain in perpetual humiliation, misery, and anarchy. The British senate at length took the resolution, in 1728, to restore this fine country to the nation, and to grant to its first masters 540,000 livres [22,500l.] in compensation. Granville alone, from motives which are unknown to us, was left in possession of his eighth share, which was situated on the confines of Virginia: but even this part was not long before it recovered its independence. The English government, as it was already established in the other provinces of the New World, was substituted to the whimsical arrangement, which, in times of extreme corruption, had been extorted from an indolent and weak mo-
search by infatiable favourites. The country might then expect to prosper. It was divided into two distinct governments, under the names of North and South Carolina, in order to facilitate the administration of it.

The two countries united occupy more than four hundred thousand miles upon the coast, and about two hundred thousand miles in the inland parts. It is a plain, in general sandy, which is rendered very marshy by the overflowing of the rivers, and by heavy and frequent rains. The soil doth not begin to rise, till at the distance of fourscore or a hundred miles from the sea; and it continues rising as far as the Appalachian mountains. Upon these latitudes, and in the midst of pine-trees, which are irregularly placed there by nature, a few sheep, extremely degenerated, both in their flesh and in their fleece, feed upon a strong and coarse grass; there are also a number of horned cattle, who have not preserved all their strength and all their beauty; and an innumerable quantity of hogs, who appear to have improved.

The country is watered by a great number of rivers, some of which are navigable. They would be so for a longer space, were it not for the rocks and the water-falls which interrupt the navigation.

Though the climate be as variable as the rest of North America, it is commonly agreeably temperate. A piercing cold is never felt but in the evening and morning, and there are seldom any excessive heats. Though fogs be frequent, they are at least dispelled in the middle of the day. Unfortunately, in the months of July, August, September, and October, intermittent fevers prevail in the plains, and are sometimes fatal to the natives themselves, and, too often, destroy foreigners.

Such is the natural organization of the two Carolinas; let us see what distinguishes them from each other.

North Carolina is one of the largest provinces of the continent; it unfortunately doth not offer advan-
tages proportioned to its extent. Its soil is generally flatter, more sandy, and more marshy, than that of South Carolina. These melancholy plains are covered with pines or cedars, which announce a barren soil; and are intersected at intervals by a small number of oaks, too full of sap to be employed in the construction of ships. The coasts, generally blocked up by a sand bank, which keeps navigators at a distance, are not more favourable to population than the inland countries. Finally, the country is more exposed than the neighbouring regions to the hurricanes that come from the south-east.

These were undoubtedly the motives which prevented the English of North Carolina from settling there, though that country was the first which they discovered in the New World. None of the numerous people who were driven to that part of the hemisphere, either from inclination or necessity, carried there their misery or their recklessness. It was long after, that a few vagabonds, without friends, without laws, and without plan to fix themselves, settled there. But, in process of time, the lands in the other colonies became scarce, and then men who were not able to purchase them, betook themselves to a country where they could get lands without purchase. According to the account of congress, three hundred thousand souls, in which few slaves are included, are still found in the province. There are but few of these inhabitants which are either English, Irish, or German. Most of them are of Scotch origin, and for this reason:

These Highlanders, whose character has been so boldly described by a masterly hand, were never enslaved either by the Romans, the Saxons, or the Danes. They bravely repulsed every invasion, and no foreign customs could penetrate beyond the foot of their inaccessible habitations. Separated from the rest of the globe, they displayed in their manners the politeness of courts, without having any of their vices; their countenance showed the pride with which the nobility of their origin had inspired them; and they
were possessed of all the delicacy of our point of ho-
bour, but without its suspicious minutiae. As industry
had not transformed them into mere machines, and as
the nature of their soil and climate did not require the
labours of the fields for more than two seasons in the
year, they had a great deal of leisure time, which they
employed in war, in hunting, in dancing, or in con-
versations animated by picturesque expressions, and
original ideas. Most of them were musicians. Schools
were every where opened for the instruction of youth.
Under every roof was found one historian, to recall to
their minds great events, and a poet to celebrate them.
The lakes, the forests, the caves, the cataracts, the ma-
jectic grandeur of all the objects that surrounded them,
inspired them with an elevation of mind, cast a shade
of melancholy over their characters, and kept up in
their hearts a sacred enthusiasm. These people esteem-
ed themselves, without despising other nations. Their
aspect struck the civilized man with awe, in whom they
only beheld one of their equals, whatever title he might
be decorated with. They received all for-
egners who came to them with a simple and cordial
affection. They kept a long time in their memory a
resentment for any injury offered to any of them;
which was rendered common to them all by the ties
of blood. After an engagement they dressed their
enemies wounds before their own. As they were al-
ways armed, the habitual use of destructive weapons
prevented them from having any fear of them. They
believed in spirits; and if the lightning shone during
the night, if thunder rolled over their heads, if the
storm rooted up the trees around their houses, or
shook their roofs, they imagined that it was some for-
gotten hero reproaching them for their silence; they
then took up their instruments, and sang a hymn to
his honour; they assured him that his memory would
never be forgotten among the children of men. They
believed in presages and in divination. They all sub-
mitted to the established form of worship; superstition

D iii
never excited quarrels among them, nor caused the effusion of one drop of blood.

These manners were never altered; nor could they be so. The Scotch formed a great number of tribes, called clans; each of which bore a different name, and lived upon the estate of some particular lord. It was the hereditary patriarch of a family, from whom they all claimed their descent, and they all knew to what degree.

The castle was in some measure a common property, where every person was sure of meeting with an honourable reception, and where they all resorted upon the first rumour of war. They all revered their own dignity in their chief; they had a brotherly affection for the other members of the confederation. They all patiently supported their fate, because it never had any thing humiliating in it. The head of the clan, on his side, was the common father of them all, as well from gratitude as from interest.

This order of things subsisted during a long series of ages without the least alteration. At last the noblemen contracted the habit of spending a great part of their lives in travelling, at London, or at court. These repeated absences detached from them their vassals, who saw them less frequently, and were no longer assisted by them. These men, who were no longer restrained by any tie of affection in their barren and savage mountains, then dispersed themselves. Several of them went in search of another country in divers provinces of America. The greatest number took refuge in North Carolina.

These colonists are seldom assembled together, and they are therefore the least informed of the Americans, and the most indifferent to the public interest. Most of them live dispersed upon their plantations, without ambition or foresight. They are but little inclined to labour, and they are seldom good planters. Though they have the English form of government, the laws have very little force among them. Their domestic
are better than their social manners; and there is scarce an instance of any one of them having had any connection with a slave. Their food consists of pork, milk, and maize; and they can be accused of no other kind of intemperance than an inordinate passion for spirituous liquors.

The first unfortunate people whom chance dispersed along these savage coasts confined themselves to the cutting of wood, which they delivered to the navigators, who came to purchase it. In a short time they collected from the pine tree, which covered the country, turpentine, tar, and pitch. To collect the turpentine, it was sufficient to make incisions in the trunk of the tree, which being carried on to the foot of it, terminated in vessels placed there to receive it. When they wanted tar, they raised a circular platform of potter's earth, on which they laid piles of pines; to these they set fire, and the resin distilled from them into casks placed underneath. The tar was converted into pitch, either in great iron pots, in which they boiled it, or in pits formed of potter's earth, into which it was poured while in a fluid state. In process of time, the province was enabled to furnish Europe with hides, a small quantity of wax, a few furs, ten or twelve millions weight of an inferior kind of tobacco; and the West Indies, with a great quantity of salt pork, maize, dried vegetables, a small quantity of indifferent flour, and several objects of less importance. The exports of the colony did not, however, exceed twelve or fifteen hundred thousand livres [from 50,000l. to 62,500l.].

North Carolina hath not yet attended to the exportation of its own productions. What its soil furnishes to the New Hemisphere, hath been hitherto taken away by the navigators of the North of America, who brought in exchange rum, of which it hath still continued to make an immense consumption. The articles which the colony delivers to the Old World, have passed through the hands of the English, who supplied
it with clothes, instruments for agriculture, and some
Negroes.

Through the whole extent of the coasts, there is no
port but that of Brunswick, which can receive the ves-
nels defined for those transactions. Those which draw
no more than sixteen feet water anchor at that town,
which is built almost at the mouth of the river of Cape
Fear, towards the southern extremity of the province.
Wilmington, its capital, situated higher up upon the
same river, admits only much smaller vessels.

South Carolina furnishes to the trade of both hemi-
spheres as North Carolina, but in less quantity. Its
labours have been chiefly turned towards rice and in-
digo.

Rice is a plant very much resembling wheat in shape
and colour, and in the figure and disposition of its
leaves. The panicle which terminates the stem is
composed of small flowers, distinct from each other,
which have four unequal scales, fix stamina, and one
pistil, surrounded with two styles. This pistil becomes
a white seed, extremely farinaceous, covered with two
interior scales, which are larger, yellowish, covered
with light asperities, and furnished with several falcate
coffæ, the middle one of which terminates in an elon-
gated extremity. This plant thrives only in low, damp
and marshy lands, when they are even a little over-
flowed. The period of its discovery is traced to the
remotest antiquity.

Egypt, unfortunately for itself, first attended to it.
The pernicious effect of this culture rendered the
country the most unhealthy in the known world:
constantly ravaged by epidemical disorders, and di-
fflicted with cutaneous diseases, which passed from that
region to the others, where they have been perpetu-
ated during whole centuries, and where they have or-
ly been put a stop to by the contrary cause to that
which had occasioned them, to wit, the drying up of
the marishes, and the restoring of salubrity to the air
and to the waters. China and the East Indies maj
experience the same calamities, if art doth not oppose pre
preservatives to nature, whose benefits are sometimes accom
panied with evils, or if the heat of the torrid zone doth not quickly dispel the damp and malignant vapours which are exhaled from the rice grounds. It is a known fact, that in the rice grounds of the Mila
nefe, the cultivators are all livid and dropscial.

Opinions differ about the manner in which rice hath been naturalized in Carolina. But whether the prov
ince may have acquired it by a shipwreck, or wheth
er it may have been carried there with slaves, or whether it be sent from England, it is certain that the soil seemed favourable for it. It multiplied, however, very slowly, because the colonists, who were obliged to send their harvests into the ports of the mother
country, by which they were sent into Spain and Por
ugal, where they were consumed, acquired so small a profit from their productions, that it was scarcely suffi
ficient to defray the expences of cultivation. In 1730, a more enlightened administration permitted the direct exportation of this grain beyond Cape Finifterre. Some years afterwards it was allowed to be carried to the West Indies; and then the provinces, being sure of selling the good rice advantageously in Europe, and the inferior or spoiled rice in America, attended serious
ly to the cultivation of it. This production grows, by the care of the Negroes, in the morasses which are near the coasts. At a great distance from the ocean, indigo is cultivated by the same hands, but with less danger.

This plant, which originally comes from Indostan, succeded at first at Mexico, afterwards at the Antilles, and lastly in South Carolina. The first experimen
tments made in this province yielded only a produce of an exceedingly inferior quality; but this dye acquires daily a greater degree of perfection. Its culti
vators do not even despair of supplanting, in time, the Spaniards and the French in all the markets. Their hopes are founded upon the extent of their soil, upon
the abundance and the cheapness of subsistence, and especially upon the custom which they have of ploughing their grounds with animals, and of sowing the indigo in them in the same manner as corn; while, on the contrary, in the West Indies they are the slaves who prepare the grounds, and who throw the seed into holes, disposed at different distances to receive it.

If, contrary to all probability, this revolution in trade should ever happen, South Carolina, which at present reckons two hundred and fifty thousand inhabitants, half white people and half Negroes, and the exportations of which, including those of North Carolina, amounted, in the year 1769, to 12,631,336 livres [44,722l. 6s. 8d.], would soon double its population and its cultures. It is already the richest of all the provinces of the northern continent. Accordingly, the taste for the conveniences of life is generally prevalent, and the expenses are carried as far as luxury. This magnificence was more particularly remarked some time ago in the funerals. As many citizens as it was possible to collect were assembled at them; expensive dishes were served up, and the most exquisite wines and the scarcest liquors were lavished. To the plate which the family had, was added that of the relations, the neighbours, and the friends. It was common to see fortunes either much encroached upon, or even deranged, by these obsequies. The fanguiary and ruinous contests between the mother-country and the colonies have put a stop to these profusions, but without abolishing a custom perhaps still more extravagant.

From the origin of the settlement, the ministers of religion adopted the custom of pronouncing indiscriminately, in the churches, an eulogy upon every one of their flock after death. The praise was never in proportion to the actions and virtues of the deceased, but to the greater or less reward which they were to receive for the funeral oration. So that, while, in our countries, the Catholic priests were making a traf-
fic of prayer, the clergy of the church of England were carrying on, in the other hemisphere, the more odious traffic of the praefes of the dead.

Could there be a more effectual method of degrading virtue, of diminishing the horror of vice, and of corrupting in men's minds the true notions of each? Could there be any thing more scandalous to a whole Christian audience, than the impudence of an orator, of a preacher of the gospel extolling a citizen who had been abhorred for his avarice, his cruelty, and his debauchery; a bad father, an ungrateful son, or married persons who had led a life of dissoluteness; and placing in heaven those whom the Almighty Judge had precipitated into the depth of the infernal regions?

South Carolina hath only three cities worthy of being called so; and these are also ports.

George Town, situated at the mouth of the Black River, is still very inconsiderable; but its situation must render it one day more important.

Beaufort, or Port Royal, will never emerge from a state of mediocrity, though its road be capable of receiving and securing the largest ships.

It is Charlestown, the capital of the colony, which is at present the most important staple, and which must necessarily become still more so.

The channel which leads up to it is full of breakers, and embarrassed with a sand-bank: but with the assistance of a good pilot, a ship arrives safely in the harbour. It can receive three hundred sail; and ships of three hundred and fifty or four hundred tons burden can enter it at all times, with their entire cargo.

The town occupies a great space, at the confluence of the two navigable rivers, Ashley and Cooper. Its streets are very regular, and most of them large; it hath two thousand convenient houses, and a few public buildings, which would be reckoned handsome even in Europe. The double advantage which Charlestown enjoys, of being the staple for the productions of the colony which are to be exported, and of all the foreign merchandise that can be consumed there, keeps
BOOK up a constant activity in it, and hath successively been the cause of making some considerable fortunes.

The two Carolinas are still very far from attaining to that degree of splendour to which they have a right to aspire. North Carolina doth not cultivate all the productions of which its soil is susceptible, and that which it seems to attend a little, to are in a manner left to chance. The inhabitants of South Carolina are more intelligent and more active: but they have not yet found out, at least not sufficiently, how far they might improve their fortune by the culture of the above tree, and of silk. Neither of these provinces have cleared one quarter of their territory which may be usefully employed. This labour is reserved for future generations, and for an increase of population. Then, undoubtedly, some kind of industry will be established in provinces, where there would not exist the least appearance of any, if the French refugees had not brought a linen manufactury to them.

Between Carolina and Florida, there is a slip of land which extends sixty miles along the sea-side, which requires, by degrees, a breadth of one hundred and fifty miles, and hath three hundred miles in depth, as far as the Appalacian mountains. This country is limited on the North by the Savannah river, and to the South by the river Alatamaha.

The English ministry had been long desirous of erecting a colony on this tract of country, that was considered as dependent upon Carolina. One of their instances of benevolence, which liberty, the source of every patriotic virtue, renders more frequent in England than in any other country, served to determine the views of government with regard to this place. A rich and humane citizen, at his death, left the whole of his estate to set at liberty such insolvent debtors as were detained in prison by their creditors. Where shall we find, either in France or in other parts, any person who shall thus propose to expiate a long abuse of prosperity? Several will die, after having squandered away millions, without being able to recollect
one good action they have done. Several will die, and will leave behind them, to heirs who are anxious for their death, treasures acquired by usury and concussion, without repairing, by some honourable and useful institution, the crime of their opulence. Is it then one of the necessary effects of gold, to harden the heart to the last, and to stifle remorse; since there is scarce any man who hath known how to make a good use of it during his life; scarce any man who has employed it in procuring tranquillity to himself in his last moments? Prudential reasons of policy concurred in the performance of this will dictated by humanity; and the government gave orders, that inch unhappy prisoners as were releaved should be transplanted into that desert country, that was now intended to be peopled. It was named Georgia, in honour of the reigning sovereign.

This instance of respect, the more pleasing, as it was not the effect of flattery; and the execution of a design of so much real advantage to the state, were entirely the work of the nation. The parliament added 225,000 livres [9375l.] to the estate left by the will of the citizen; and a voluntary subscription produced a much more considerable sum. General Oglethorpe, a man who had distinguished himself in the house of commons by his taste for great designs, by his zeal for his country, and his passion for glory, was fixed upon to direct these public finances, and to carry into execution so excellent a project. Desirous of maintaining the reputation he had acquired, he chose to conduct himself the first colonists that were sent to Georgia; where he arrived in January 1733, and fixed his people on a spot ten miles distant from the sea, in an agreeable and fertile plain on the banks of the Savannah. The river gave its name to this feeble settlement, which might one day become the capital of a flourishing colony. It consisted at first of no more than one hundred persons; but before the end of the year the number was increased to six hundred and eighteen, of whom one hundred and twenty-seven had
emigrated at their own expense. Three hundred men, and one hundred and thirteen women, one hundred and two lads, and eighty-three girls, formed the beginning of this new population, and the hopes of a numerous posterity.

This settlement was increased in 1735 by the arrival of some Scotch Highlanders. Their national courage induced them to accept an establishment offered them upon the borders of the Alatamaha, to defend the colony, if necessary, against the attacks of the neighbouring Spaniards. Here they built the town of Darien, five leagues distant from the island of St. Simon, where the hamlet of Frederica was already established.

In the same year, a great number of Protestants, driven out of Salzbourg by a fanatical priest, embarked for Georgia, to enjoy peace and liberty of conscience. Ebenezer, situated upon the river Savannah, sixteen leagues from the ocean, owed its rise to the victims of an odious superstition.

Some Switzers followed the example of these with Saltzburghers, though they had not, like them, been persecuted. They also settled on the bank of the Savannah, but three leagues lower, and upon a spot which subjected them to the laws of Carolina. Their colony, consisting of a hundred habitations, was named Purysburg, from Purys their founder, who having been at the expense of their settlement, was deservedly chosen their chief, in testimony of their gratitude to him.

In these four or five colonies, some men were found more inclined to trade than agriculture. These, therefore, separated from the rest, in order to build the city of Augusta, one hundred and forty-five miles distant from the ocean. The goodness of the soil was not the object they had in view; but they wished to share with Virginia and the Carolinas the peltries which their provinces obtained from the Creeks, the Chickasaws, and the Cherokees, which were the most numerous savage nations of this continent. Their project was successful, that as early as the year 1739, six hundred people were employed in this commerce. The sale of
these furs was with much greater facility carried on, from the circumstance of the Savannah admitting, during the greatest part of the year, ships from twenty to thirty tons burden as far as the walls of Augusta.

The mother-country ought, one would imagine, to have formed great expectations from a colony which had received, in a very short space of time, five thousand inhabitants, which had cost the treasury 1,485,000 livres [61,875l.], and the zealous patriots a great deal more. What must not, therefore, have been their astonishment, when, in 1741, they were informed, that most of the unfortunate people who had sought an asylum in Georgia had successively withdrawn themselves from it; and that the few who remained there seemed only desirous to fix in a less insupportable spot? The reasons of this singular event were inquired into, and discovered.

This colony, even in its origin, brought with it the seeds of its decay. The government, together with the property of Georgia, had been ceded to individuals. The example of Carolina ought to have prevented this imprudent scheme; but nations, any more than individuals, do not learn instruction from their past misconduct. Facts are generally unknown; and if they should not be, still bad consequences are imputed to unable predecessors, or else some trifling difference in circumstances, or in some frivolous precautions, afford a pretence for giving a false colouring to measures that are faulty in themselves. Hence it happens, that an enlightened government, though checked by the watchful eye of the people, is not always able to guard against every misuse of its confidence. The English ministry, therefore, sacrificed the public interest to the rapacious views of interested individuals.

The first use which the proprietors of Georgia made of the unlimited power they were invested with, was to establish a system of legislation, that made them entirely masters, not only of the police, justice, and finances of the country, but even of the lives and estates of its inhabitants. Every species of right was with-
drawn from the people, who are the original possessors of every right. Obedience was required of them, though contrary to their interest and knowledge; and it was considered as their duty and their fate.

As great inconveniences had been found to arise in other colonies from large possessions, it was thought proper in Georgia to allow each family only fifty acres of land at first, and never more than five hundred, which they were not permitted to mortgage, or even to dispose of by will to their female issue. This last regulation, of making only the male issue capable of inheritance, was soon abolished; but there still remained too many obstacles to excite a spirit of emulation.

When a man is neither pursuèd by the laws, nor driven away to avoid ignominy, nor tormented by religious tyranny, by the persecutions of his creditors, by shame or misery, or by the want of every kind of resource in his own country, he doth not renounce his relations, his friends, and his fellow-citizens; he doth not banish himself, he doth not cross the seas, he doth not go in search of a distant land, unless he be attracted there by hopes which are more powerful than the allurements of his native soil, than the value he sets upon his exisfcence, and the dangers to which he exposes himself. To go on board of ship, in order to be landed on an unknown region, is the act of a desperate man, unless the imagination be influenced by the prospect of some great happiness; a prospect which the least alarm will dissipate. If the vague and unlimited confidence the emigrant hath in his industry, in which his whole fortune conflits, be shaken by any means whatever, he will remain upon the shore. Such must necessarily have been the effect of the boundaries assigned to every plantation. Several other errors still affected the original plan of this country, and prevented its increase.

The taxes imposed upon the most fertile of the English colonies are very inconsiderable, and even these are not levied till the settlements have acquired some degree of vigour and prosperity. From its infant state,
Georgia had been subjected to the fines of a feudal government, with which it had been, as it were, fettered. The revenues raised by this kind of service must have increased beyond measure in process of time. The founders of it, blinded by a spirit of avidity, did not perceive, that the smallest duty imposed upon a populous and flourishing province would much sooner enrich them, than the heaviest taxes laid upon a barren and uncultivated country.

To this species of oppression was added an arrangement which became a fresh cause of inactivity. The disorders which were the consequence of the use of spirituous liquors throughout all the continent of North America, occasioned the importation of rum to be prohibited in Georgia. This prohibition, however laudable the motive for it might be, deprived the colonists of the only drink which could correct the bad effects of the water of the country, which they found everywhere unhealthy, and of the only means they had of repairing their strength, exhausted by continual perspiration. It also secluded them from the trade of the West Indies, where they were no more allowed to exchange for these liquors the wood, the seeds, and the cattle, which ought to have constituted their first riches.

Weak as these resources were, they must have increased very slowly, on account of a prohibition which would deserve recommendation, had it been dictated by a sentiment of humanity, and not by policy. The planters of Georgia were not allowed the use of slaves. Other colonies having been established without their assistance, it was thought that a country, defined to be the bulwark of those possessions, ought not to be peopled by a set of slaves, who could not be in the least interested in the defence of their oppressors. But would this prohibition have taken place, had it been foreseen that colonists, who were less favoured by the mother-country than their neighbours, who were situated in a country less susceptible of culture, and in a hotter climate, would want strength and spirit to un-
dertake a cultivation that required greater encourage-
ment?

The demands of the people, and the refusals of the
government, may be equally extravagant. The peo-
ple listen only to their wants, and sovereigns confine
only their personal interest. The former, common-
ly very indifferent, especially in distant countries, with
respect to the powers to which they belong, and those
which they may receive by an invasion, neglect their
political security, in order to attend only to their per-
sonal welfare. The latter, on the contrary, will nev-
er hesitate between the felicity of the people, and
the solidity of their possessions; and will always pre-
fer a steady and permanent authority over a set of
miserable beings, to an uncertain and precarious sway
over men who are happy. Their mistrust, which a
long series of vexations hath too well justified, will
induce them to consider the people as slaves, ever
ready to escape from them by revolt or by flight;
and it will not enter into the thoughts of any one of
them, that this habitual sentiment of hatred, which
they suppose to exist against them because they have
deferved it, and which is but too real, would be ex-
tinguished, if they could experience a few years of a
mild and paternal administration: for nothing is ali-
enated with so much difficulty as the affection of the
people. It is founded on the advantages rarely felt,
but always acknowledged, of a supreme authority,
whatever it may be, which directs, which is watchful,
which protects, and which defends. For the same
reason, nothing is more easily recovered, when ali-
enated. The delusive hope of a change for the better
is alone sufficient to quiet our imagination, and to
prolong our miseries without end. What I here ad-
vance is confirmed by the almost universal example
of the whole world. At the death of a tyrant all na-
tions flatter themselves with the hopes of a king. The
tyants continue their system of oppression, and die in
peace; and the people still continue to groan under
it, and to expect with patience a king who never ap-
pears. The successor, educated as his father or his grandfather, is prepared from his infancy to model himself after their example, unless he should have received from nature a strength of genius, a firmness of soul, a rectitude of judgment, and a fund of benevolence and equity, which may correct the defect of his education. Without this fortunate disposition, he will not inquire, in any circumstance, what is proper to be done, but what hath been done before him. He will not ask what is most suitable to the good of his subjects, whom he will consider as his nearest enemies, on account of the parade of guards that surround him; but he will study what will increase his despotism and their servitude. He will remain ignorant during life of the most simple and most evident of truths; which is, that their strength and his are inseparable from each other. The example of the past will be his only rule of conduct, both on those occasions when it may be prudent to follow it, and on those it would be proper to deviate from it. The measure which the ministry will adopt in politics, will always be that which shall be most analogous to the spirit of tyranny, the only one which has been decorated with the title of the great art of governing. When, therefore, the inhabitants of Georgia asked for slaves, in order to know whether they should have been granted or refused to them, it was only necessary to examine whether they were required for the better cultivation of the lands, and the greater security of the property of the colony. In the meanwhile, the truly desperate situation of the new settlement proclaimed too forcibly the impropriety of the ministry, to make it possible to persevere in such fatal measures. At length the province received the same form of government which made the other colonies prosper. When it ceased to be a fief belonging to individuals, it became a truly national possession.

Since this fortunate revolution, Georgia hath improved considerably, though not so rapidly as was expected. It is true, that neither the vine, the olive...
BOOK tree, nor silk, have been cultivated, as the mother
country wished; but its marshes have furnished a to-
lerable quantity of rice; and indigo, superior in qua-
li ty to that of Carolina, hath been produced upon the
higher grounds. Before the 1st January 1768, a grant
had been made of six hundred thirty-seven thousand
one hundred and seventy acres of land. Those which,
in 1763, were worth no more than 3 livres 7 sols 6 de-
niers [2s. 9½d.], were sold in 1776 for 67 livres 10 sols
[2l. 16s. 3d.]. In 1769, the exportations of the co-
 lony amounted to 1,625,418 livres 9 sols 5 deniers [a-
 bout 67,725l. 15s. 4½d.]; and since that time they
have considerably increased.

This prosperity will undoubtedly be augmented. In
proportion as the forests shall be felled, the air will be-
come more salubrious, and the productions will increase
with the population, which at present doth not exceed
thirty thousand men, most of whom are slaves. How-
ever, as the lands are not so extensive in Georgia as in
most of the other provinces, and that in the same pro-
portion less of them are susceptible of culture, the
riches of that colony will always be limited. Let us
see whether Florida hath a right to expect a more brilli-
ant destiny.

Under this name the ambition of Spain comprehen-
ded formerly all that tract of land in America,
which extended from the Gulf of Mexico to the most
northern regions. But fortune, which sports with the
vanity of nations, hath long since confined this unli-
mited denomination to the peninsula formed by the
sea, between Georgia and Louisianna.

It was Luke Velaiquisé, whose memory ought to be
held in execration in this world, as he deserves to be
punished in the next; it was that monster, to whom I
can scarce give the name of man, who first landed up-
on this region, with the intention of obtaining slaves
either by stratagem or by force. The novelty of the
spectacle attracted the neighbouring savages. They
were invited to come on board the ships; they were
intoxicated, put in irons, and the anchor was weighed,
while the guns were fired upon the rest of the Indians, who remained upon the shore. Several of these unfortunate people, so cruelly torn from their own country, refused to take the food which was offered them, and perished from inanition. Others died of grief; and those who survived their despair, were buried in the mines of Mexico.

These infatiable gulls required more victims. The perfidious Velasquez went in search of them again in the same country. He was known, and half of his infamous companions were murdered on their arrival. Those who fled from a justly implacable enemy, were shipwrecked; he himself only escaped the fury of the waves, to lead the remainder of his detested life in shame, misery, and remorse.

Spain had forgotten that part of the New World, when the memory of it was revived by a settlement made there by the French. The court of Madrid thought proper to drive from their rich possessions so active a nation; and they accordingly gave orders for the destruction of the infant colony. This command was put in execution in 1565; and the conquerors re-occupied the place, which was rendered an absolute desert by their cruelties. They were threatened with a lingering death, when they were relieved by the culture of sassafras.

This tree, which is an evergreen, is peculiar to America, and is better at Florida than in any other part of that hemisphere. It grows equally on the borders of the sea and upon the mountains, but always in a soil which is neither too dry nor too damp. Its roots are even with the surface of the ground. Its trunk, which is very straight, without leaves, and not high, is covered with a thick and dirty bark, of an ash colour, and throws out at its summit some branches which spread out on the coasts. The leaves are disposed alternately, green on the upper, and white on the under surface, and are divided into three lobes. Sometimes they are found entire, especially in young plants. The branches
are terminated by clusters of small yellow flowers. They are of the same kind as those of the laurel or cinnamon tree. The fruits, which succeed, are small, blue, pendent berries, fixed to a red pedicle, and to a calix of the same colour.

Its flower is taken in infusion, as mullein and tea is. The decoction of its root is used with effect in intermittent fevers. The bark of the trunk hath an acrid and aromatic taste, and a smell similar to that of fennel and aniseed. The wood is whitish and less odoriferous. They are both used in medicine to promote perspiration, to attenuate thick and viscid humours, to remove obstructions, to cure the gout and the palsy. Saffafras was also formerly much prescribed in the venereal disease.

The first Spaniards who settled there would probably have fallen a sacrifice to this last disorder, at least they would not have recovered from those dangerous fevers with which most of them were attacked on their arrival in Florida, either in consequence of the food of the country, or of the badness of the waters. But the savages taught them, that by drinking falling, and at their meals, water in which the root of saffafras had been boiled, they might depend upon a speedy recovery. The experiment upon trial proved successful.

What can be the reason that this medicine and so many others which produce extraordinary cures in those distant countries, seem to have lost almost all their efficacy when transplanted into ours? It must probably be owing to the climate being more favourable for perspiration, to the nature of the plant which degenerates and loses some part of its strength during a long voyage, and especially to the nature of the disease, when joined to our intemperate way of living; and the obstinacy of which increases from the numberless disorders prevailing in our constitutions.

The Spaniards established some small posts at San Matheo, at Saint Marc, and at Saint Joseph; but it
was only Saint Augustine and at Pensacola that they properly formed settlements; the former on their arrival in the country, and the latter in 1696.

Pensacola was attacked and taken by the French during the short contests which divided the two houses of Bourbon in 1718; but it was soon restored.

In 1740, the English besieged the former of these settlements in vain. The Scotch Highlanders, in endeavouring to cover the retreat of the assailants, were beaten and slain. One of their serjeants only was spared by the savage Indians, who, while they were fighting for the Spaniards, refused him to undergo the torments which they inflicted upon their prisoners. This man, it is said, on seeing the horrid tortures that awaited him, addressed the blood-thirsty multitude in the following manner:

"Heroes and patriarchs of the western world, you were not the enemies that I fought for; but you have at last been the conquerors. The chance of war has thrown me in your power. Make what use you think proper of the right of conquest. This is a right I do not call in question. But as it is customary in my country to offer a ransom for one's life, listen to a proposal not unworthy of your notice.

"Know then, valiant Americans, that in the country of which I am a native, there are some men who possess a superior knowledge of the secrets of nature. One of those sages, connected to me by the ties of kindred, imparted to me, when I became a soldier, a charm to make me invulnerable. You must have observed how I have escaped all your darts. Without such a charm would it have been possible for me to have survived all the mortal blows you have aimed at me? For I appeal to your own valour, to testify that mine has sufficiently exerted itself, and has not avoided any danger. Life is not so much the object of my request, as the glory of communicating to you a secret of so much consequence to your safety, and of rendering the most valiant nation upon the
BOOK XVIII.

"earth invincible. Suffer me only to have one of my hands at liberty, in order to perform the ceremony of enchantment, of which I will now make trial on myself before you."

The Indians listened with eagerness to this discourse, which was flattering both to their warlike character and their turn for the marvellous. After a short consultation, they untied one of the prisoner's arms. The Highlander begged that they would put his broadsword into the hands of the most expert and stoutest man among them; and at the same time laying bare his neck, after having rubbed it, and muttering some words accompanied with magic signs, he cried aloud with a cheerful countenance, "Observe now, O valiant Indians, an incontestible proof of my honesty. Thou warrior, who now holdest my keen cutting weapon, do thou now strike with all thy strength far from being able to sever my head from my body, thou wilt not even wound the skin of my neck."

He had scarcely spoken these words, when the Indian aiming the most violent blow, struck off the head of the sergeant, to the distance of twenty feet. The savages astonished, stood motionless, viewing the bloody corpse of the stranger; and then turned their eyes upon one another, as if to reproach each other with their blind credulity. But admiring the artifice the prisoner had made use of to avoid the torture by hastening his death, they bestowed on his body the funeral honours of their country. If this fact, the date of which is too recent to admit of credit, has not all the marks of authenticity it should have, it will only be one falsehood more to be added to the accounts of travellers.

The treaty of peace of 1763, put in the power of Great Britain, that fame Florida which had refused the strength of their arms twenty-three years before. At that time there were no more than six hundred inhabitants. It was with the sale of their hides, and with the provisions they furnished to their garrison, that they were to provide themselves with clothes.
and to supply a small part of their wants, which were exceedingly confined. These miserable people went all to Cuba, though convinced that they would be obliged to beg their bread, if their monarch, mov'd with such an instance of affection, did not provide for their subsistence.

What motive could induce the Spaniards to prefer an oppressive to a free government? Was it superstitious, which cannot suffer the altars of the heretics near its own? Was it prejudice, which renders suspicious the morals and the probity of those who profess a different religion? Was it the fear of seduction for themselves, and still more for their children? Long accustomed to idleness, did they imagine that they should be compelled to labour? Or hath man so bad an opinion of man, that he should rather choose to dishonour himself and his fate, than to abandon it to the mercy of his fellow-creature? However it may be, nothing but a desert remained to the power that obtained the possession; but was it not an acquisition to lose inhabitants not inured to fatigue, and who would never have been well affected?

Great Britain congratulated itself upon the acquisition of the property of an immense province, the limits of which were still extended as far as the Mississipi, by the cession of one part of Louisiana. That power had for a long time been desirous of settling on a territory which would open an easy communication to them with the richest of the Spanish colonies. They did not give up the hopes of a smuggling trade, but they were aware that this precarious and momentary advantage was not sufficient to render their conquests flourishing, and they turned their labours and expectations principally towards cultivation.

The new acquisition was divided into two governments. It was thought that this would be a powerful inducement to carry on with greater zeal, and to direct with more vigour, the cultivation of the lands. Ministry might also have determined upon this di
tion, in expectation of always finding more submission in two separate provinces than in one alone.

Saint Augustine became the capital of East Florida and Pensacola of West Florida. These capitals, which were at the same time tolerable good harbours, did not undoubtedly unite all the conveniences they were susceptible of, but it was still a very fortunate circumstance to find those which they really did possess. The other colonies did not enjoy this advantage at their origin.

The first colonists who settled in these countries were half-pay officers and disbanded soldiers. All those among them who had served in America and were settled there, obtained the grant of a piece of land proportionable to their rank. This favour was not extended to all the army that had fought in the New World. It would have been apprehended, that the military men of the three kingdoms who were in the same situation, might be tempted to forsake the mother-country, already too much exhausted by the late hostilities.

The new colony received also cultivators from the neighbouring settlements, from the mother-country and from several Protestant states. It also obtained some, whose arrival was a matter of astonishment in both hemispheres.

The Greeks groan under the Ottoman tyranny, and must be inclined to shake off this detested yoke. This was the opinion of Dr. Turnbull, when, in 1767, he went to offer an asylum in British America to the inhabitants of the Peloponnesus. Several of them yielded to his solicitations; and for the sum of one hundred guineas he obtained leave from the government of the place to embark them at Modon. He landed in Corsica and at Minorca, and prevailed also upon some of the inhabitants of those two islands to follow him.

The emigrants, to the number of a thousand, arrived in East Florida with their prudent conductor, when sixty thousand acres of land were granted to them.
This would have been an immense possession, even if the climate had not destroyed any of them; but they had unfortunately been so much thwarted by the winds as to prevent their landing before Summer, which is a dangerous season, and which destroyed one quarter of their number. They were mostly the old people who perished. They were numerous, because the judicious Turnbull chose to carry none with him but whole families.

Those who escaped this first disaster have since enjoyed perfect health, which has only been affected by a few fevers. The men are become stronger in their constitutions, and the women, who, on account of the change of climate, did not breed often at first, are at present very fruitful. It is presumed that the children will be taller than they would have been in the country from whence their parents came.

The small colony have received from their founder institutions, which they have themselves approved, and which are observed. They are still no more than one entire family, where the spirit of concord must be kept up for a long time. On the first of January 1776, they had already cleared two thousand three hundred acres of a tolerably fertile soil. They had animals sufficient for their subsistence and for their labour. Their crops were sufficient for their own consumption, and they sold 67,500 livres [2382l. 10s.] worth of indigo. The industry and activity by which they are distinguished, give great expectations from time and experience.

Why should not Athens and Lacedemon be one day revived in North America? Why should not the city of Turnbull become in a few centuries the residence of politeness, of the fine arts, and of eloquence? The new colony is less distant from this flourishing state than were the barbarous Pelasgians from the fellow-citizens of Pericles. What difference there is between a settlement conceived and founded by a wife and pacific man, and the conquests of a long series of avaricious, extravagant, and sanguinary men; between
the present state of South America and what it might have been, had those who discovered it, took possession of it and laid it waste, been animated with the same spirit as the worthy Turnbull? Will not nations learn by his example, that the foundation of a colony requires more wisdom than expense? The universe hath been peopled by one man and one woman only.

The two Floridas, which in 1769 did not export productions to the amount of more than 673,209 livres 18 sols 9 deniers [about 28,045l. 8s. 3½d.], have a remarkable advantage over the rest of this great continent. Situated in a great measure between two seas, they have nothing to fear from the frozen winds, nor from the unforeseen variations in the temperature of the air, which at all seasons occasion such frequent and fatal devastations in the neighbourhood. It is therefore to be hoped that the vine, the olive, the cotton tree, and other delicate plants, will prosper there sooner and better than in any of the adjacent provinces. In 1774, the society instituted in London for the encouragement of arts, manufactures, and sciences, gave a gold medal to Mr. Strachey, for his having produced as fine indigo as that which comes from Guatimala. Although, in the first paroxysms of enthusiasm, the qualities of this production have been but moderately attended to, yet it will become a source of riches for the colony.

The soil of East Florida, however, being a great deal too sandy, constantly drove away all men who were desirous of making a rapid fortune. It would scarce have been peopled, except by some extraordinary event. The troubles with which North America hath been agitated, have driven to that commonly barren soil a few peaceful citizens, who had a settled aversion for disputes, and a still greater number of men, who, either from ambition, habit, or prejudice, were devoted to the interest of the mother-country.

The same inducements have given colonists to the other Florida, which is much more fertile, especially on the pleasant borders of the Mississippi. This pro-
vince hath had the advantage to furnish Jamaica, and several of the British islands in the West Indies, with wood, and with various articles, which they formerly received from the several countries of New England. This population would have been still more rapid if the coasts of Pensa cola had been more accessible, and if its harbours had been less infested with worms. How greatly might the improvements of the two provinces be accelerated, if the new sovereigns of North America would depart from the maxims they have uniformly pursued, and would condescend to intermarriages with Indian families! And for what reason should this method of civilizing the savage tribes, which has been so successfully employed by the most enlightened politicians, be rejected by a free people, who, from their principles, must admit a greater equality than other nations? Would the English then be still reduced to the cruel alternative of seeing their crops burnt, and their husbandmen massacred, or of persecuting without intermission, and exterminating without pity, those wandering bands of natives? Ought they not to prefer to sanguinary and inglorious hostilities a humane and infallible method of disarming the only enemy that remains to disturb their tranquility?

The English flatter themselves, that, without the assistance of these alliances, they shall soon be freed from the little interruption that remains. It is the fate of savage nations, say they, to wait away in proportion as the people of civilized states come to settle among them. Unable to submit to the labour of cultivation, and failing of their usual subsistence from the chase, they are reduced to the necessity of abandoning all those tracts of lands which industry and activity have undertaken to clear. This is actually the case with all the natives bordering on the European settlements. They keep daily retiring further into the woods; they fall back upon the Aslenipouals and Hudson's Bay, where they must necessarily encroach upon each other, and in a short time must perish for want of subsistence.
"But before this total destruction is brought about, events of a very serious nature may occur. We have not yet forgotten the generous Pondiack. That formidable warrior had broken with the English in 1762. Major Roberts, who was employed to reconcile him sent him a present of brandy. Some Iroquois, who were standing round their chief, shuddered at the sight of this liquor. Not doubting but that it was poisoned, they insisted that he should not accept so suspicious a present. How can it be, said their leader, that a man who knows my esteem for him, and the signal services I have done him, should entertain a thought of taking away my life?" Saying this, he received and drank the brandy with a confidence equal to that of the most renowned hero of antiquity.

By many instances of magnanimity similar to this, the eyes of the savage nations had all been fixed upon Pondiack. His design was to unite them in a body for the defence of their lands and independence. Several unfortunate circumstances concurred to defeat this grand project; but it may be resumed, and it is not impossible that it may succeed. The usurper would then be under a necessity of protecting their frontier against an enemy that hath none of those expenses to sustain, or evils to dread, which war brings with it among civilized nations; and will find the advantages they have promised themselves from conquest made at the expense of so much treasure and so much blood, considerably retarded at least, if not entirely lost. Should the English disdain an advice dictated to them through me by justice and humanity, may another Pondiack arise from his ashes, and consummate his plan.

The two Floridas, part of Louisiana, and all Canada, obtained at the same era, either by conquest or treaty, rendered the English masters of all that space which extends from the river St. Lawrence to the Mississippi; so that without reckoning Hudson's Bay, Newfoundland, and the other islands of North America, they would have been in possession of the most exten-
five empire that ever was formed upon the face of the globe.

This vast territory is divided from north to south by a chain of high mountains, which alternately receding from and approaching to the coast, leave between them and the ocean a tract of land of a hundred and fifty, two hundred, and sometimes three hundred miles in breadth. Beyond these Appalachian mountains is an immense desert, into which some travellers have ventured as far as eight hundred leagues, without finding an end to it. It is supposed that the rivers at the extremity of these uncultivated regions have a communication with the South Sea. If this conjecture, which is not destitute of probability, should be confirmed by experience, England would unite in her colonies all the branches of communication and commerce of the world. As her territories extend from one American sea to the other, she may be said to join the four quarters of the world. From all her European ports, from all her African settlements, she freights and sends out ships to the New World. From her maritime settlements in the east she would have a direct channel to the West Indies by the Pacific Ocean. She would discover those slips of land, or branches of the sea, the isthmus of the strait, which lies between the northern extremities of Asia and America. By the vast extent of her colonies, she would have in her own power all the avenues of trade, and would secure all the advantages of it by her numerous fleets. Perhaps, by having the empire of all the seas, she might aspire to the supremacy of both worlds. But it is not in the destiny of any single nation to attain to such a pitch of greatness. Is then extent of dominion so flattering an object, when conquests are made only to be lost again? Let the Romans speak! Does it constitute power, to possess such a share of the globe, that some part shall always be enlightened by the rays of the sun, if while we reign in one world we are to languish in obscurity in the other? Let the Spaniards answer!

The English will be happy if they can preserve, by

Vol. VI.
the means of culture and navigation, an empire, which must ever be found too extensive, when it cannot be maintained without bloodshed. But as this is the price which ambition must always pay for the success of its enterprises, it is by commerce alone that conquests can become valuable to a maritime power. Never did war procure for any conqueror a territory more improveable by human industry than that of the northern continent of America. Although the land in general be so low near the sea, that in many parts it is scarcely distinguishable from the top of the mainmast, even after anchoring in fourteen fathom, yet the coast is very easy of access, because the depth diminishes insensibly as you advance. From this circumstance, it is easy to determine exactly by the line the distance of the main land. Befo this, the mariner has another sign, which is the appearance of trees, that, seeming to rise out of the sea, form an enchanting object to his view upon a shore, which presents roads and harbours without number, for the reception and preservation of shipping.

The productions of the earth arise in great abundance from a soil newly cleared; but, on the other hand, they are a long time before they come to maturity. Many plants are even so late in flower, that the winter prevents their ripening; while, on our continent, both the fruit and the seed of them are gathered in a more northern latitude. What can be the cause of this phenomenon? Before the arrival of the Europeans, the North Americans, living upon the produce of their hunting and fishery, left their lands totally uncultivated. The whole country was covered with woods and thickets. Under the shade of these forests grew a multitude of plants. The leaves, which fell every winter from the trees, formed a bed three or four inches thick. Before the damps had quite rotted this species of manure, the summer came on; and nature, left entirely to herself, continued heaping incessantly upon each other these effects of her fertility. The plants buried under wet leaves, through which they with difficulty made their way in a long course
of time, became accustomed to a long vegetation. Book XvIII.

The force of culture has not yet been able to subdue the habit fixed and confirmed by ages, nor have the dispositions of nature given way to the influence of art. But this climate, so long unknown or neglected by mankind, presents them with advantages which supply the defects and ill consequences of that omission.

It produces almost all the trees that are natives of our climate. It has also others peculiar to itself, among which are the sugar maple, and the candleburry myrtle.

The latter, thus named on account of its produce, is a branching, tortuous shrub, rather irregular, and which delights in a moist foil. It is therefore seldom found at any distance from the sea, or from large rivers. Its leaves, alternately disposed, are narrow, entire, or denticulated, and always covered with small gilded points, which are almost imperceptible. It bears male and female flowers, upon two different plants. The first form a bezil, every scale of which bears six stamina. The second, disposed alike on young sprigs, have, instead of stamina, an ovary, surmounted with styles, which becomes a very small, hard, and spherical shell, which is covered with a granulated, white, and unctuous substance. These fruits, which together appear like a bunch of grapes, are gathered at the end of the autumn, and thrown into boiling water. The substance with which they are covered detaches itself, swims at the top, and is skimmed off. As soon as this is grown cold, it is commonly of a dirty green colour. To purify it, it is boiled a second time, when it becomes transparent, and acquires an agreeable green colour.

This substance, which in quality and consistence is a medium between tallow and wax, supplied the place of both to the first Europeans who landed in this country. The dearness of it has occasioned it to be less used, in proportion as the number of domestic animals hath increased. Nevertheless, as it burns flower than tal-
low, is left subject to melt, and has not that disagreeable smell, it is still preferred, wherever it can be procured at a moderate price. If it be mixed with a fourth part of tallow, it burns much better; but this is not its only property. It serves to make excellent soap and plasters for wounds: it is even employed for the purpose of sealing letters. The sugar maple merits no less attention than the candeburry myrtle, as may be conceived from its name.

This tree, the nature of which is to flourish by the side of streams, or in marshy places, grows to the height of the oak. Its trunk is straight and cylindrical, and covered with a tolerably thin bark. Its branches, which are always opposite, are covered with leaves disposed in the same manner, which are whitish underneath, and are divided into five acute lobes. Its flowers, collected in clusters, have a calyx, with five divisions, charged with as many petals, and eight stamina, which are sometimes abortive. In the centre of them is a pistil, which becomes a fruit, composed of two pods, pressed together, and closed at the bottom, open and alated at the top, and filled with a single seed.

In the month of March, an incision, of the depth of three or four inches, is made at the lower part of the trunk of the maple. A pipe is put into the orifice, through which the juice that flows from it is conveyed into a vessel placed to receive it. The young trees are so full of this liquor, that in half an hour they will fill a quart bottle. The old ones afford less, but of much better quality. No more than one incision, or two at most, can be made, without draining and weakening the tree. If three or four pipes be applied, it soon dies.

The sap of this tree has naturally the flavour of honey. To reduce it to sugar, it is evaporated by fire, till it has acquired the consistence of a thick syrup. It is then poured into moulds of earthen ware, or bark of the birch tree. The syrup hardens as it cools, and becomes a red kind of sugar, almost transparent, and
pleasant enough to the taste. To give it a whiteness, flour is sometimes mixed up with it in the making; but this ingredient always changes the flavour of it. This kind of sugar is used for the same purposes as that which is made from canes; but eighteen or twenty pounds of juice go to the making of one pound of sugar, so that it can be of no great use in trade. Honey is the sugar of the savages of our countries; the maple is the sugar of the savages of America. Nature displays in all parts its sweets and its wonders.

Amidst the multitude of birds which inhabit the forests of North America, there is one extremely singular in its kind; this is the humming bird; a species of which, on account of its smallness, is called l’oiseau mouche, or the fly bird. Its beak is long and pointed like a needle, and its claws are not thicker than a common pin. Upon its head it has a black tuft of incomparable beauty. Its breast is of a rose colour, and its belly white as milk. The back, wings, and tail, are grey, bordered with silver, and streaked with the brightest gold. The down, which covers all the plumage of this little bird, gives it so delicate a cast, that it resembles a velvet flower, the beauty of which fades on the slightest touch.

The spring is the only season for this charming bird. Its nest, perched on the middle of a bough, is covered on the outside with a grey and greenish moss, and on the inside lined with a very soft down gathered from yellow flowers. This nest is half an inch in depth, and about an inch in diameter. There are never found more than two eggs in it, about the size of the smallest peas. Many attempts have been made to rear the young ones; but they have never lived more than three weeks or a month at most.

The humming bird lives entirely on the juice of flowers, fluttering from one to another, like the bees. Sometimes it buries itself in the calix of the largest flowers. Its flight produces a buzzing noise like that of a spinning-wheel. When tired, it lights upon the nearest tree or stake; rests a few minutes, and flies
again to the flowers. Notwithstanding its weakness, it does not appear timid; but will suffer a man to approach within eight or ten feet of it.

Who would imagine, that so diminutive an animal could be malicious, passionate, and quarrelsome? These birds are often seen fighting together with great fury and obstinacy. The strokes they give with their beak are so sudden and so quick, that they are not distinguishable by the eye. Their wings move with such agility, that they seem not to have any kind of motion. They are more heard than seen; and their noise resembles that of a sparrow.

These little birds are all impatience. When they come near a flower, if they find it faded and withered, they tear all the leaves afunder. The precipitation with which they peck it, betrays, as it is said, the rage with which they are animated. Towards the end of the summer, thousands of flowers may be seen stript of all their leaves by the fury of the humming birds. It may be doubted, however, whether this mark of resentment is not rather an effect of hunger than of an unnecessarily destructive instinct.

Every species of beings hath another that is an enemy to it. That of the fly-bird is a large spider, which is very greedy of its eggs. This is the sword which is continually suspended over the tyrant's head.

North America was formerly devoured by insects. As the air was not then purified, the ground cleared, the woods cut down, nor the waters drained off, their little animals destroyed, without opposition, all the productions of nature. None of them were useful to mankind. There is only one at present, which is the bee; but this is supposed to have been carried from the Old to the New World. The savages call it the English fly; and it is only found near the coasts. These circumstances announce it to be of foreign original. The bees fly in numerous swarms through the forests of the New World. Their numbers are continually increasing, and their honey, which is converted to several iles, supplies many persons with food.
Their wax becomes daily a considerable branch of trade.

The bee is not the only present which Europe has had it in her power to make to America. She has enriched the also with a breed of domestic animals, for the savages had none. America had not yet associated beasts with men in the labours of cultivation, when the Europeans carried over thither oxen, sheep, and horses. They were all, at first, exposed, as well as man, to epidemic diseases. If the contagion did not attack them, as it did their proud sovereign, in the course even of their generation, several of their species were at least reproduced with much difficulty. All of them, except the hog, lost much of their strength and size. It was not till late, and that only in some places, that they recovered their original properties. Without doubt, it was the climate, the nature of the air, and the soil, which prevented the success of their transplantation. Such is the law of climates, which wills every people, every animal and vegetable species, to grow and flourish in its native soil. The love of their country seems an ordinance of nature prescribed to all beings, as the desire of preserving their existence.

Yet there are certain correspondences of climate, which form exceptions to the general rule against the transplanting of animals and plants. When the English first landed on the North American continent, the wandering inhabitants of those desolate regions had scarcely arrived at the cultivation of a small quantity of maize, a plant which resembles a reed. Its leaves, which are large, and very long, surround, at their bases, the stem, which is round and knotty at intervals. It is terminated by a panicle of male flowers. Each of the bunches which compose it, hath two flowers, covered with two common scales; and each flower hath three stamens, enclosed between two scales proper to them. At the axilla of the inferior leaves, the female flowers are found, disposed in a very close cluster, upon a thick and fleshy axis, con-
Book sealed under several coverings. The pistil of these flowers, surrounded with some small scales, and sur- mounted with a long style, becomes a farinaceous seed, almost spherical, and half sunk into the common axis. Its maturity is known by its colour, and by the separation of the covering, through which the blade of corn may be seen.

This species of corn, unknown at that time in Europe, was the only one known in the New World. The culture of it was by no means difficult. The savages contented themselves with taking off the turf, making a few holes in the ground with a stick, and throwing into each of them a single grain, which produced two hundred and fifty or three hundred. The method of preparing it for food was not more complicated. They pounded it in a wooden or stone mortar, and made it into a pafte, which they baked under embers. They often ate it toasted merely upon the coals.

The maize has many advantages. Its leaves are useful in feeding cattle; a circumstance of great moment where there are very few meadows. A hungry, light, sandy soil, agrees well with this plant. The feed may be frozen in the spring two or three times without impairing the harvest. In short, it is of all plants the one that is least injured by the excess of drought or moisture.

These causes, which introduced the cultivation of it in that part of the world, induced the English to pre- serve and even promote it in their settlements. They fold it to the southern part of Europe, and to the East Indies, and employed it for their own use. They did not, however, neglect to enrich their plantations with European grains, all of which succeeded, though not so perfectly as in their native soil. With the superfluity of their harvests, the produce of their herds, and the clearing of their forests, the colonists formed a trade with all the wealthiest and most populous provinces of the New World.

The mother-country, finding that her northern co-
ionies had supplanted her in her trade with South Am-
erica, and fearing that they would soon become her
rivals, even in Europe, at all the markets for salt pro-
visions and corn, endeavoured to divert their industry
to objects that might be more useful to her. An op-
portunity soon presented itself.

The greatest part of the pitch and tar the English
wanted for their fleet, used to be furnished by Sweden.
In 1703, that state was so blind to its true interest, as
to lay this important branch of commerce under the
restrictions of an exclusive charter. The first effect of
this monopoly was a sudden and considerable increa-
s of price. England, taking advantage of this blunder
of the Swedes, encouraged, by considerable premiums,
the importation of all sorts of naval stores which North
America could furnish.

These rewards did not immediately produce the ef-
fect that was expected from them. A bloody war,
raging in each of the four quarters of the world pre-
vented both the mother-country and the colonies from
giving to this beginning revolution in commerce, the
attention which it merited. The northern nations,
which had all the fame motives of interest, taking this
inaction, which was only occasioned by the hurry of
a war, for an absolute proof of inability, thought they
might without danger lay every restrictive clause up-
on the exportation of marine stores, that could con-
tribute to enhance the price of them. For this purpose
they entered into mutual engagements which were
made public in 1718, a time, when all the maritime
powers still felt the effects of a war that had continued
fourteen years.

England was alarmed at so odious a convention. She
dispatched to America men of sufficient ability to con-
vince the inhabitants how necessary it was for them to af-
flit the views of the mother-country; and of sufficient
experience to direct their first attempts towards great ob-
jects, without making them pass through those minute
details, which quickly extinguish an ardour excited
with difficulty. In a very short time, such quantities
BOOK of pitch, tar, turpentine, yards and masts, were brought into the harbours of Great Britain, that she was enabled to supply the nations around her.

This sudden success blinded the British government. The cheapness of the naval stores furnished by the colonies, in comparison of those which were brought from the Baltic, gave them an advantage, which seemed to ensure a constant preference. Upon this the ministry concluded that the bounties might be withdrawn. But they had not taken into their calculation the difference of freight, which was entirely in favour of their rivals. A total flop ensued in this branch of trade, and made them sensible of their error. In 1729, they revived the bounties; which, though they were not laid so high as formerly, were sufficient to give to the vent of American stores the greatest superiority, at least in England, over those of the northern nations.

The woods, though they constituted one of the principal riches of the colonies, had hitherto been overlooked by the governors of the mother-country. The produce of them had long been exported by the English to Spain, Portugal, and the different markets in the Mediterranean, where it was bought up for building and other uses. As these traders did not take in return merchandise sufficient to complete their cargoes, it had been a practice with the Hamburghers, and even the Dutch, to import on their bottoms the produce of the most fertile climates of Europe. This double trade of export, and carrying the merchandise of other nations, had considerably augmented the British navigation. The parliament, being informed of this advantage, in the year 1722, immediately exempted the timber of the colonies from all those duties of importation to which Russian, Swedish, and Danish timber are subject. This first favour was followed by a bounty, which, at the same time that it comprehended every species of wood in general, was principally calculated for those which are employed in ship-building. Unfortunately the materials of the
New World were found to be very inferior in quality to those of the Old; they were, however, employed preferably to the latter by the English navy. England drew its yards and its masts from North America, and was likewise desirous of getting fàils and rigging from thence.

The French Protestants, who, when driven from their country by a prince, became infected with a spirit of bigotry, carried their national industry into all the countries of his enemies, and taught England the value of flax and hemp, two commodities of the utmost importance to a maritime power. Both these plants were cultivated with success in Scotland and Ireland; but the manufactures of the nation were chiefly supplied with them from Russia. To put a stop to this foreign importation, it was proposed to grant a bounty to North America of 135 livres [51. 12s.] for every ton of these articles. This was doing a great deal; and yet so considerable an encouragement had no great success. There were not many lands in that part of the New World which were good enough for a production which prospers only upon an excellent soil. This region abounds more in iron, that metal which is destined to conquer the gold and silver of the south.

This most serviceable of metals, so necessary to mankind, was unknown to the Americans, till the Europeans taught them the most fatal use of it, that of making weapons. The English themselves long neglected the iron mines, which nature had lavished on the continent where they were settled. That channel of wealth had been diverted from the mother-country by being clogged with enormous duties. The proprietors of the national mines, in concert with those of the coppice woods, which are used in the working of them, had procured imposts to be laid on them that amounted to a prohibition. By corruption, intrigue, and sophistry, these enemies to the public good had stifled a competition which would have been fatal to their interests. At length the government took the first step towards a right conduct. The importation of
American iron into the port of London was granted duty free; but at the same time it was forbidden to be carried to any other ports, or even more than ten miles inland. This whimsical restriction continued till 1757. At that time the general voice of the people called upon the parliament to repeal an ordinance so manifestly contrary to every principle of public utility, and to extend to the whole kingdom a privilege which had been granted exclusively to the capital.

Though nothing could be more reasonable than this demand, it met with the strongest opposition. Combinations of interested individuals were formed, to represent, that the hundred and nine forges worked in England, not reckoning those of Scotland, produced annually eighteen thousand tons of iron, and employed a great number of able workmen; that the mines, which were inexhaustible, would have supplied a much greater quantity, had not a perpetual apprehension prevailed, that the duties on American iron would be taken off; that the iron works carried on in England consumed annually one hundred and ninety-eight thousand cords of underwood, and that those woods furnished, moreover, bark for the tanneries, and materials for ship-building; and that the American iron, not being proper for steel, for making sharp instruments, or many of the utensils of navigation, would contribute very little to lessen the importation from abroad, and would have no other effect than that of putting a stop to the forges of Great Britain.

These groundless representations had no weight with the parliament, who saw clearly, that, unless the price of the original materials could be lessened, the nation would soon lose the numberless manufactures of iron and steel, by which it had so long been enriched; and there was no time to be lost in putting a stop to the progress other nations were making in these works. It was therefore resolved, that the free importation of iron from America should be permitted in all the ports of England. This wise resolution was accompanied with an act of justice. The proprietors of coppice
were, by a statute of Henry the Eighth, forbidden to clear their lands; but the parliament took off this prohibition, and left them at liberty to make use of their estates as they should think proper.

Previous to these regulations, Great Britain used to pay annually to Spain, Norway, Sweden, and Russia, ten millions of livres [416,666l. 13s. 4d.] for the iron she purchased of them. This tribute is greatly lessened, and will still decrease. The ore is found in such quantities in America, and is so easily separated from the ground, that the English did not despair of having it in their power to furnish Portugal, Turkey, Africa, the East Indies, and every country in the world with which they had any commercial connections.

Perhaps the English might be too sanguine in their representations of the advantages they expected from so many articles of importance to their navy. But it was sufficient for them, if by the assistance of their colonies they could free themselves from that dependence in which the northern powers of Europe had hitherto kept them, with regard to the equipment of their fleets. Nothing appeared to them more capable of checking their natural armour for the empire of the sea, which alone could ensure to them the empire of the New World.

After having paved the way to that grand object, by forming a free, independent navy, superior to that of every other nation, England has adopted every measure that could contribute to her enjoyment of a species of conquest she had made in America, not so much by the force of her arms, as by her industry. In proportion as the settlements, from their natural tendency, advanced from the north to the south, fresh projects and enterprizes, suitable to the nature of the soil and of the climate, suggested themselves. To the wood, the grains, and the cattle, which had been the former productions, were added successively rice, tobacco, indigo, and other riches. The English, who had no wine of their own growth in Europe, resolved
Upon the northern continent of North America are found prodigious quantities of wild vines, which bear grapes, different in colour, size, and quantity, but all of a sour and disagreeable flavour. It was supposed that good management would give these plants that perfection which unassisted nature had denied them; and French vine-dressers were invited into a country, where neither public nor private impositions took away their inclination to labour, by depriving them of the fruits of their industry. The repeated experiments they made, both with American and European plants, were all equally unsuccessful. The juice of the grape was too watery, too weak, and too difficult to preserve. The country was too full of woods, which attract and confine the moist and hot vapours; the seasons were too unsettled, and the insects too numerous near the forests, to suffer a production to grow up and prosper, of which the English, and all other nations who have it not, are so ambitious. The time will come, perhaps, when this country will furnish a liquor, in the preparation of which most parts of the globe are employed, and the use of which many other parts are so much attached to: but this event will not happen for several centuries, and after several repeated experiments. It is most probable that the harvest of the vine will be preceded by that of silk; the work of that little worm which clothes mankind with the leaves of trees digested in its entrails.

A very considerable sum of money was annually exported from Great Britain for the purchase of this rich production; it was therefore determined to obtain it from Carolina, which, from the mildness of the climate, and the great abundance of mulberry trees, seemed favourable to the project. Some attempts made by the government to attract some Swissers into the colony were yet more successful than could have been expected. Yet the progress of this branch of
trade has not been answerable to so promising a begining. The blame has been laid on the inhabitants, who buying only Negro men, from whom they received an immediate and certain profit, neglected to have women, who with their children might have been employed in bringing up silk-worms, an occupation suitable to the weakness of that sex, and to the tenderest age. But it ought to have been considered, that men, coming from another hemisphere into a rude uncultivated country, would apply their first care to the cultivation of eliculient plants, breeding cattle, and the toils of immediate necessity. This is the natural and constant proceeding of well-governed states. From agriculture, which is the source of population, they rise to the arts of luxury; and the arts of luxury nourish commerce, which is the child of industry and parent of wealth. In 1769, the parliament were of opinion that this period was at length arrived; and they granted a bounty of 25 per cent. for seven years on all raw silks imported from the colonies, a bounty of 20 per cent. for seven years following, and for seven years after that a bounty of 15 per cent. This encouragement would necessarily be followed by the cultivation of cotton and olive trees, and of several other plants. The nation thought that there are few productions, either of Europe or Asia, which might not be transplanted and cultivated with more or less success on some of the vast countries of North America. Men only were wanting; and no proper precautions were neglected to increase their number.

The first persons who landed in this desert and savage region were Englishmen, who had been persecuted at home for their civil and religious opinions.

It was not to be expected that this first emigration would be attended with important consequences. The inhabitants of Great Britain are strongly attached to their native soil, that nothing less than civil wars or revolutions can incline those among them who have any property, character, or industry, to a change of climate and country: for which reason, the re-estab-
blishment of public tranquillity in the mother-country was likely to put an insurmountable bar to the progress of American cultivation.

Add to this, that the English, though naturally active, ambitious, and enterprising, were ill adapted to the business of clearing the soil of the New World. Accustomed to a quiet life, ease, and many conveniences, nothing but the enthusiasm of religion or politics could support them under the labours, milieus wants, and calamities inseparable from new plantations.

It is further to be observed, that though England might have been able to overcome these difficulties, she ought not to have wished to do it. Without doubt, the founding of colonies, rendering them flourishing, and enriching herself with their productions, was an advantageous prospect to her; but those advantages would be dearly purchased at the expense of her own population.

Happily for her, the intolerant and despotic spirit that prevailed in most countries in Europe, forced numberless victims to take refuge in an uncultivated tract, which, in its state of desolation, seemed to implore that assistance for itself which it offered to the unfortunate. These men, who had escaped from the rod of tyranny, in crossing the seas, abandoned all the hopes of return, and attached themselves for ever to a country, which at the same time afforded them an asylum and an easy quiet subsistence. Their good fortune could not remain for ever unknown. Multitudes, particularly from Germany, flocked to partake of it. One of the advantages which the emigrants propounded to themselves was the becoming citizens throughout the whole extent of the British dominions, after a residence of seven years in any of the colonies.

While tyranny and persecution were destroying and exhausting population in Europe, English America was beginning to be filled with three sorts of inhabitants. The first class, which is the most numerous, consists of freemen.
The Europeans, who overrun and desolate the globe for these three centuries past, have scattered colonies in most of the points of its circumference; and their race hath more or less degenerated everywhere. The English settlements of North America appeared to have undergone a similar fate. The inhabitants were universally thought to be less robust in labour, less powerful in war, and less adapted to the arts, than their ancestors. Because the care of clearing the lands, of purifying the air, of altering the climate, and of improving nature, had absorbed all the faculties of this people; transplanted under another sky, it was concluded that they were degenerated, and unable to elevate their minds to any complicated speculations.

In order to dispel this fatal prejudice, it became necessary that a Franklin should teach the philosophers of our continent the art of governing the thunder. It was necessary that the pupils of this illustrious man should throw a striking light upon several branches of the natural sciences. It was necessary that eloquence should renew, in that part of the New World, those strong and rapid impressions which it had made in the proudest republics of antiquity. It was necessary that the rights of mankind, and the rights of nations, should be firmly established there, in original writings, which will be the delight and the consolation of the most distant ages.

Works of imagination, and of taste, will soon follow those of reasoning and observation. New England will soon, perhaps, be able to quote its Homer, its Theocritus, and its Sophocles. Neither assistance, nor masters, nor models, are now wanting. Education is diffused, and improves daily. There are, in proportion, more persons well brought up, and they have more leisure for prosecuting the bent of their genius, than men have in Europe; where the education, even of youth, is often contrary to the progress and to the unfolding of genius and of reason.

By a singular contrast with the Old World, in which the arts have passed from the south towards the north,
we shall find that in the New World the north will serve to enlighten the southern parts. Hitherto, the mind, as well as the body, hath appeared enervated in the West Indies. Men in those parts, endowed with vivacity and early penetration, have a quick conception, but they do not persevere in study, nor do they use themselves to long-continued thought. Most of them have a great facility for acquiring every kind of knowledge, but have no decisive turn for any particular science. As they are forward, and come to maturity before us, they are far from perfection, and we are almost as near to it as we can be. The glory and happiness of producing a change in their dispositions must be the work of English America. But it is necessary that it should take steps conformable to this noble design, and aim, by justice and laudable means, to form a set of people fit for the creation of a New World. This is what hath not yet been done.

The second class of colonists was formerly composed of malefactors which the mother country transported, after condemnation, to America, and who were bound to a servitude of seven or fourteen years to the planters who had purchased them from the cours of justice. These corrupt men, always disposed to commit fresh crimes, have at length been universally neglected.

They have been replaced by indigent persons, whom the impossibility of subsisting in Europe has driven into the New World. After having bought and sold the Negro, there was but one crime which could go beyond this: this was, to sell one's countryman, without having bought him; and to find some person who would buy him: accordingly this has been done. Having embarked without being able to pay for their passage, these wretched men are at the disposal of their captain, who sells them to whom he chooses. This sort of slavery is for a longer or shorter time; but it can never exceed eight years. If among these emigrants there are any who are not of age, their servitude lasts till they arrive at that period, which is fixed at twenty-one for the boys, and eighteen for the girls.
None of those who are contracted for have a right to marry without the approbation of their master, who sets what price he chooseth on his consent. If any one of them should run away, and be retaken, he is to serve a week for each day's absence, a month for every week, and six months for one. The proprietor who does not think proper to receive again one who has deserted from his service, may sell him to whom he chooseth; but that is only for the term of the first contract. Besides, this service doth not carry any ignominy with it; and the purchaser does all that lies in his power to lessen the stain received by this kind of sale and purchase. At the end of his servitude, the contracted person enjoys all the rights of a free citizen. With his freedom, he receives from the master whom he has served, either implements for husbandry, or utensils proper for his work.

But with whatever appearance of justice this species of traffic may be coloured, the greatest part of the strangers who go over to America under these conditions, would never go on board a ship, if they were not inveigled away. Some artful kidnappers from the fens of Holland spread themselves over the Palatinate, Suabia, and the cantons of Germany, which are the best peopled, or the least happy. There they set forth with raptures, the delights of the New World, and the fortunes easily acquired in that country. Simple men, seduced by these magnificent promises, blindly follow these infamous brokers, engaged in this scandalous commerce, who deliver them over to factors at Amsterdam or Rotterdam. These, who are in the pay of companies who have undertaken to stock the colonies with inhabitants, give a gratuity to the men employed in this service. Whole families are sold, without their knowledge, to masters at a distance, who impose the harder conditions upon them, as hunger and necessity do not permit the sufferers to give a refusal. America acquires its supplies of men for husbandry, as princes do for war, by the same artifices; but with a less honest, and perhaps
BOO more inhuman design; for who knows the number of
those who die, or who survive their expectations? The
deception is perpetually carried on in Europe, by
carefully suppressing all correspondence with Ameri-
ca, which might unveil a mystery of imposture and
iniquity, too well disguised by the interested prin-
ciples which gave rise to it.

But, in a word, there would not be so many dupes,
if there were fewer victims. It is the oppression of
government which makes these chimical ideas of
fortune be adopted by the credulity of the people.
Men, unfortunate in their private affairs, vagabonds,
or contemptible at home, have nothing worse to fear,
in a foreign climate, and easily pursue the prospect of
a better lot. The means made use of to retain them
in a country where chance has given them birth, are
only calculated to excite in them a desire to quit it.
It is mainly supposed that they are to be confined by
prohibitions, menaces, and punishments: these do but
exasperate them, and drive them to desertion by the
very forbidding of it. They should be attached by
milder means, and by future expectations; whereas
they are imprisoned and bound: man, born free, is
restrained from attempting to exit in regions, where
heaven and earth offer him an asylum. It has been
thought better to stifle him in his cradle, than to let
him seek for his subsistence in some favourable climate.
It is not judged proper even to leave him the choice
of his burial-place.—Tyrants in policy! these are the
effects of your laws! People, where then are your
rights?

Is it then become necessary to lay open to the na-
tions the schemes that are formed against their liber-
ity? Must they be told, that by a conspiracy of the
most odious nature, certain powers have lately enter-
ed into an agreement, which must deprive even de-
spair itself of every resource? For these two centu-
ries past, all the princes of Europe have been fabri-
cating, in the secret recesses of the cabinet, that long
and heavy chain with which the people are encom-
passed on every side. At every negotiation fresh links were added to the chain so artificially contrived. Wars tended not to make states more extensive, but subjects more submissive, by gradually substituting military government to the mild and gentle influence of laws and morality. The several sovereigns have all equally strengthened themselves in their tyranny by their conquests or by their losses. When they were victorious they reigned by their armies; when humbled by defeat, they held the command by the misery of their pusillanimous subjects; if they were either competitors or adversaries from motives of ambition, they entered into league or alliance, only to aggravate the servitude of their people. Whether they meant to excite war or to preserve peace, they were certain of turning to the advantage of their authority, either the aggrandisement or the humiliation of their people. If they ceded a province, they exhausted every other, that they might either recover it or indemnify themselves for the loss. If they acquired a new one, the haughtiness they affected out of it was the occasion of cruelty and extortion within. They borrowed one of another, by turns, every art and invention, whether of peace or of war, that might concur sometimes to foment natural antipathy and rivalry, sometimes to obliterate the character of the nations; as if there had been a tacit agreement among the rulers to subject the nations, one by means of another, to the despotism they had constantly been preparing for them. Ye people, who all groan more or less secretly, be not blinded with respect to your condition; those who never entertained any affection for you, are come now not to have any fear for you. In the extremity of wretchedness one single resource remained for you; that of escape and emigration.—Even that has been shut against you.

Princes have agreed among themselves to restore to one another defectors, who, for the most part, enlisted by compulsion or by fraud, have a right to escape; not only villains, who, in reality, ought not to find a
BOOK refuge anywhere; but indifferently all their subjects, whatever may be the motive that obliged them to quit their country.

Thus all ye unhappy labourers, who find neither subsistence nor work in your own countries, after they have been ravaged and rendered barren by the exactions of finance; thus ye die where ye had the misfortune to be born; ye have no refuge but in the grave. All ye artists and workmen of every species, harassed by monopolies, who are refused the right of working at your own free disposal, unless you have purchased the privileges of your calling: ye who are kept for your whole life in the workshop, for the purpose of enriching a privileged factor: ye whom a courtmourning leaves for months together without bread or wages! never expect to live out of a country where soldiers and guards keep you imprisoned; go, wander in despair, and die of regret. If ye venture to complain, your cries will be re-echoed and lost in the depth of a dungeon; if ye make your escape, ye will be pursued even beyond mountains and rivers: ye will be sent back, or given up, bound hand and foot, to torture, and to that eternal restraint, to which you have been condemned from your birth. Do you likewise, whom nature has endowed with a free spirit, independent of prejudice and error, who dare to think and talk like men, do you erase from your minds every idea of truth, nature, and humanity! Applaud every encroachment made on your country and your fellow-citizens, or else maintain a profound silence in the recesses of obscurity and concealment. All ye who were born in those barbarous states, where the condition for the mutual restoration of deserters has been entered into by the several princes, and sealed by a treaty; recollect the inscription Dante has engraven on the gate of his infernal region: Voi ch'entrate, lasciate omai ogni speranza: You who enter here, leave behind you every hope.

What! is there then no asylum remaining beyond the seas? Will not England open her colonies to those
wretches who voluntarily prefer her dominion to the insupportable yoke of their own country? What occasion has she for that infamous band of contracted slaves, seduced and debauched by the shameful means employed by every state to increase their armies? What need has she of those beings still more miserable, of whom she composes another class of her inhabitants?

Yes, by an antiquity, the more shocking as it is apparently the less necessary, the northern provinces have had recourse to the traffic and slavery of the Negroes. It will not be disowned, that they may be better fed, better clothed, less ill-treated, and less overburdened with toil, than in the islands. The laws protect them more effectually, and they seldom become the victims of the barbarity or caprice of an odious tyrant. But still, what must be the burden of a man’s life who is condemned to languish in eternal slavery? Some humane sectaries, Christians who look for virtues in the gospel, more than for opinions, have often been desirous of restoring to their slaves that liberty for which they cannot receive any adequate compensation; but they have been a long time withheld by a law, which directed that an assignment of a sufficiency for subsistence should be made to those who were set at liberty.

Let us rather say, they have been prevented from doing this by the convenient custom of being waited on by slaves; by the fondness they have for power, which they attempt to justify by pretending to alleviate their servitude; and by the opinion so readily entertained that the slaves do not complain of a state, which is by time changed into nature: these are the sophisms of self-love, calculated to appease the clamours of conscience. The generality of mankind are not born with evil dispositions, or prone to do ill by choice; but even among those whom nature seems to have formed just and good, there are but few who possess a soul sufficiently disinterested, courageous, and great, to do any good action, if they must sacrifice some advantage for it.

G iiij
But still the Quakers have lately set an example which ought to make an epocha in the history of religion and humanity. In one of their assemblies, where every one of the faithful, who conceives himself moved by the impulse of the Holy Spirit, has a right of speaking; one of the brethren, who was himself undoubtedly inspired on this occasion, arose and said:

"How long then shall we have two consciences, two measures, two scales! one in our own favour, one for the ruin of our neighbour, both equally false?

Is it for us, brethren, to complain at this moment, that the parliament of England wishes to enslave us, and to impose upon us the yoke of subjects, without leaving us the rights of citizens; while for this century past, we have been calmly acting the part of tyrants, by keeping in bonds of the harshest slavery men who are our equals and our brethren?

What have those unhappy men done to us, whom nature hath separated from us by barriers so formidable, whom our avarice has sought after through storms and wrecks, and brought away from the midst of their burning sands, or from their dark forests inhabited by tygers? What crime have they been guilty of, that they should be torn from a country which fed them without toil, and that they should be transplanted by us to a land where they perish under the labours of servitude? Father of heaven, what family hast thou then created, in which the elder born, after having seized on the property of their brethren, are still resolved to compel them with stripes, to manure with the blood of their veins and the sweat of their brow that very inheritance of which they have been robbed? Deplorable race, whom we render brutes to tyrannize over them; in whom we extinguish every power of the soul, to load their limbs and their bodies with burdens; in whom we efface the image of God and the stamp of manhood. A race mutilated and dishonoured as to the faculties of mind and body, throughout its existence, by us who are Christians and Englishmen! English
men, ye people favoured by Heaven, and respect on the seas, would ye be free and tyrants at the same instant? No, brethren! it is time we should be consistent with ourselves. Let us set free those miserable victims of our pride: let us restore the Negroes to that liberty which man should never take from man. May all Christian societies be induced, by our example, to repair an injustice authorised by the crimes and plunders of two centuries! May men too long degraded, at length raise to heaven their arms freed from chains, and their eyes bathed in tears of gratitude! Alas! these unhappy mortals have hitherto shed no tears but those of despair.

This discourse awakened remorse, and the small number of slaves who belonged to the Quakers were set at liberty. If the fetters of these unfortunate people were not broken by the other colonists of North America, yet Pennsylvania, New Jersey, and Virginia, warmly solicited that this infamous traffic of men should be prohibited. Every colony of this vast continent appeared disposed to follow this example; but they were prevented by an order from the mother-country to its delegates, to reject every proposal tending to this humane project. This cruel prohibition would not have been surprizing, if it had come from those countries which are as deep sunk in barbarism by the shackles of vice, as they have formerly been by those of ignorance. When a government, both facerdotal and military, has brought every thing, even the opinions of men, under its yoke; when man, become an impostor, has persuaded the armed multitude that he holds from Heaven the right of oppressing the earth, there is no shadow of liberty left for civilized nations. Why should they not take their revenge on the people of the torrid zone? But I shall never comprehend by what fatality that legislation, which is the most happily planned of any that hath ever existed, hath been capable of preferring the interest of a few
of its merchants to the dictates of nature, of reason, and of virtue.

The population of North America consists of four hundred thousand Negroes, and of two millions five or six hundred thousand white people, if the calculations of congress be not exaggerated. The number of citizens doubles every fifteen or sixteen years in some of those provinces, and every eighteen or twenty years in others. So rapid an increase must have two sources; the first is, that a number of Irishmen, Jews, Frenchmen, Switzers, Palatines, Moravians, and Salzburgers, after having been worn out with the political and religious troubles they had experienced in Europe, have gone in search of peace and quietness in these distant climates. The second source of that amazing increase arises from the climate itself of the colonies, where experience has shown that the people naturally doubled their numbers every five-and-twenty years. The observations of Mr. Franklin will make these truths evident.

The numbers of the people, says that philosopher, increase every where in proportion to the number of marriages; and that number increases as the means of subsisting a family are rendered more easy. In a country where the means of subsistence abound, more people marry early. In a society, whose prosperity is a mark of its antiquity, the rich, alarmed at the expenses which female luxury brings along with it, engage as late as possible in a state, which is difficult to enter into, and expensive to maintain; and the persons who have no fortunes pass their days in a celibacy which disturbs the married state. The masters have but few children, the servants have none at all, and the artisans are afraid of having any. This circumstance is so evident, especially in great towns, that the population in them is not kept up to its usual standard, and that we constantly find there a greater number of deaths than births. Happily for us this decrease has not yet penetrated into the country, where the
constant practice of making up the deficiency of the towns gives a little more scope for population. But the lands being everywhere occupied, and let at the highest rate, those who cannot acquire property of their own, are hired by those who are in possession of it. Competition, which arises from the multitude of workmen, lowers the price of labour, and the smallness of profit takes away the desire and the hope of, as well as the abilities requisite for, increase by marriage. Such is the present state of Europe.

That of America presents an appearance of a quite contrary nature. Tracts of land, waste and uncultivated, are either given away, or may be obtained for so moderate a price, that a man of the least turn for labour is furnished in a short time with an extent, which, while it is sufficient to rear a numerous family, will maintain his posterity for a considerable time. The inhabitants, therefore, of the New World, marry in greater numbers, and at an earlier time of life, than the inhabitants of Europe. Where one hundred enter into the married state in Europe, there are two hundred in America; and if we reckon four children to each marriage in our climates, we should allow at least eight in the New Hemisphere. If we multiply these families by their produce, it will appear, that, in less than two centuries, North America will arrive at an immense degree of population, unless its natural progress should be impeded by obstacles which it is not possible to foresee.

It is now peopled with healthy and robust men, of a stature above the common size. These Creoles come to their full growth sooner than the Europeans, but do not live so long. The inhabitants are supplied with great plenty of every thing requisite for food, by the low price of meat, fish, grain, game, fruits, cyders, and vegetables. Clothing is not so easily procured, that being still very dear, whether it be brought from Europe or made in the country. Manners are in the state they should be among young colonies, and people given to cultivation, who are not yet polished nor
corrupted by residing in great cities. Throughout the families in general, there reigns economy, neatness, and regularity. Gallantry and gaming, the passions of indolent opulence, seldom interrupt that happy tranquillity. The female sex are still what they should be, gentle, modest, compassionate, and useful; they are in possession of those virtues which perpetuate the empire of their charms. The men are engaged in their first occupations, the care and improvement of their plantations, which will be the support of their posterity. One general sentiment of benevolence unites every family. Nothing contributes to this union so much as a certain equality of station, a security that arises from property, hope, and a general facility of increasing it; in a word, nothing contributes to it so much as the reciprocal independence in which all men live, with respect to their wants, joined to the necessity of social connections for the purposes of their pleasures. Instead of luxury, which brings misery in its train, instead of this afflicting and shocking contrast, an universal ease, wisely dealt out in the original distribution of the lands, has, by the influence of industry, given rise in every breast to the mutual desire of pleasing; a desire, without doubt, more satisfactory than the secret disposition to injure our brethren, which is inseparable from an extreme inequality of fortune and condition. Men never meet without satisfaction, when they are neither in that state of mutual distance which leads to indifference, nor in that way of rivalry which borders on hatred. They come nearer together and unite in societies; in short, it is in the colonies that men lead such a rural life as was the original designation of mankind, best suited to the health and increase of the species: probably they enjoy all the happiness consistent with the frailty of human nature. We do not, indeed, find there those graces, those talents, those refined enjoyments, the means and expense of which wear out and fatigue the springs of the soul, and bring on the vapours of melancholy, which so naturally follow the disgust acting
from sensual enjoyment; but there are the pleasures of domestic life, the mutual attachments of parents and children, and conjugal love, that passion so pure and so delicious to the soul that can taste it, and despise all other gratifications. This is the enchanting prospect exhibited throughout North America. It is in the wilds of Florida and Virginia, even in the forests of Canada, that men are enabled to continue to love, during their whole life, what was the object of their first affection, that innocence and virtue, which never entirely lose their beauty.

If there be any circumstance wanting to the happiness of British America, it is that of forming one entire nation. Families are there found sometimes reunited, sometimes dispersed, originating from all the different countries of Europe. These colonists, in whatever spot chance or discernment may have placed them, all preserve, with a prejudice not to be worn out, their mother-tongue, the partialities and the customs of their own country. Separate schools and churches hinder them from mixing with the hospitable people who afforded them a place of refuge. Still more estranged from this people by worship, by manners, and probably by their feelings, they harbour seeds of dissension that may one day prove the ruin and total overthrow of the colonies. The only preservative against this disaster depends entirely on the conduct of the governments they belong to.

By governments must not be understood those strange constitutions of Europe, which are an absurd mixture of sacred and profane laws. English America was wise or happy enough not to admit any ecclesiastical power: being from the beginning inhabited by Presbyterians, she rejected with horror every thing that might revive the idea of it. All affairs which in the other parts of the globe are determined by the ecclesiastical courts, are here brought before the civil magistrate, or the national assemblies. The attempts made by the members of the English church to establish their hierarchy in that country, have ever
been abortive, notwithstanding the support given them by the mother country: but still they are equally concerned in the administration as well as those of other effects. None but Catholics have been excluded, on account of their refusing those oaths which the public tranquillity seemed to require. In this view American government has deserved the greatest commendation, but in other respects it is not so well regulated.

Policy, in its aim and principal object, resembles the education of children. They both tend to form men, and should be in several respects similar to each other. Savage people, first united in society, require as much as children, to be sometimes led on by gentle means, and sometimes restrained by compulsion. From want of experience, which alone forms our reason, as these savages are incapable of governing themselves in the several changes of things and the various concerns that belong to a rising society, the government that conducts them should itself be enlightened, and guide them by authority to years of maturity. Thus it is that barbarous nations are naturally subject to the oppressive yoke of despotic power, till in the advanced state of society their interests teach them to connect themselves.

Civilized nations, like young men, more or less advanced, not in proportion to their abilities, but from the conduct of their early education, as soon as they become sensible of their own strength and right, require to be managed, and even attended to by their governors. A son well educated should engage in no undertaking without consulting his father: a prince on the contrary, should make no regulations without consulting his people: further, the son, in resolutions where he follows the advice of his father, frequently hazards nothing but his own happiness: in all that a prince ordains, the happiness of his people is concerned. The opinion of the public, in a nation that thinks and speaks, is the rule of the government; and the prince should never thwart that opinion without public reasons, nor oppose it without having first convin-
ced the people of their error. Government is to mo-
del all its forms according to public opinion: this, it
is well known, varies with manners, habits, and infor-
mation. So that one prince may, without finding the
least resistance, do an act of authority, not to be re-
vived by his successor, without exciting the public in-
dignation. From whence does this difference arise?
The first cannot have thwarted an opinion that was
not sprung up in his time, but the latter may have
openly counteracted it a century after. The first, if
I may be allowed the expresssion, may, without the
knowledge of the public, have taken a step, the vio-
ence of which he may have softened or made amends
for by the happy success of his government; the other
shall, perhaps, have increased the public calamities by
such unjust acts of willful authority, as may perpetuate
its first abuses. Public remonstrance is generally the
result of opinion; and the general opinion is the rule
of government: and because the public opinion go-
vers mankind, kings, for this reason, become the ru-
lers of men. Governments then, as well as opinions,
ought to improve and advance to perfection. But
what is the rule for opinions among an enlightened
people? It is the permanent interest of society, the
safety and advantage of the nation. This interest is
modified by the turn of events and situations; public
opinion and the form of the government follow these
central modifications. This is the source of all the
forms of government established by the English, who
are rational and free, throughout North America.

The government of Nova Scotia, of one of the pro-
vinces in New England, New York, New Jersey, Vir-
ginia, the two Carolinas, and Georgia, is styled royal,
because the king of England is there invested with
the supreme authority. Representatives of the people
form a house of commons, as in the mother-country:
a select council, approved by the king, intended to
support the prerogatives of the crown, represents the
house of peers, and maintains that representation by
the fortune and rank of the most distinguished persons
BOOK in the country, who are members of it. A governor convenes, prorogues, and dissolves their assemblies; gives or refuses assent to their deliberations, which receive from his approbation the force of law, till the king, to whom they are transmitted, has rejected them.

The second kind of government which takes place in the colonies, is known by the name of proprietary government. When the English first settled on those distant regions, a rapacious and active court-favoured easily obtained in those wastes, which were as large as kingdoms, a property and authority without bounds. A bow and a few skins, the only homage exacted by the crown, purchased for a man in power the right of sovereignty, or of governing at pleasure in an unknown country: such was the origin of government in the greater part of the colonies. At present, Maryland and Pennsylvania are the only provinces under this singular form of government, or rather this singular foundation of sovereignty. Maryland, indeed, differs from the rest of the provinces only by receiving its governor from the family of Baltimore, whose nomination is to be approved by the king. In Pennsylvania, the governor named by the proprietary family, and confirmed by the crown, is not supported by a council, which gives a kind of superiority, and he is obliged to agree with the commons, in whom is naturally vested all authority.

A third form, styled by the English charter government, seems more calculated to produce harmony in the constitution. At present this subsists only in Connecticut and Rhode Island; but it was formerly extended to all the provinces in New England. It may be considered as a mere democracy. The inhabitants of themselves elect and depose all their officers, and make whatever laws they think proper, without being obliged to have the assent of the king, or his having any right to annul them.

At length the conquest of Canada, joined to the acquisition of Florida, has given rise to a form of legislation hitherto unknown throughout the realm of
Great Britain. Those provinces have been put or left under the yoke of military, and consequently absolute authority. Without any right to assemble in a national body, they receive immediately from the court of London every order of government.

This diversity of governments is not the work of the mother-country. We do not find in it the traces of a reasonable, uniform, and regular legislation. It is chance, climate, the prejudices of the times, and of the founders of the colonies, that have produced this motley variety of constitutions. It is not the province of men, who are cast by chance upon a desolate coast, to constitute legislation.

All legislation, in its nature, should aim at the happiness of society. The means by which it is to attain this great end, depend entirely on its natural qualities. Climate, that is to say, the sky and the soil, are the first rule for the legislator. His resources dictate to him his duties. In the first instance, the local position should be consulted. A number of people thrown on a maritime coast, will have laws more or less relative to agriculture or navigation, in proportion to the influence the sea or land may have on the subsistence of the inhabitants who are to people that desert coast. If the new colony be led by the course of some large river far within land, a legislator ought to have regard to the quality of the soil and the degree of its fertility, as well as to the connections the colony will have either at home or abroad by the traffic of commodities most conducive to its prosperity.

But the wisdom of legislation will chiefly appear in the distribution of property. It is a general rule, which obtains in all countries, that, when a colony is founded, an extent of land be given to every person sufficient for the maintenance of a family; more should be given to those who have abilities to make the necessary advances towards improvement; and some should be reserved for posterity, or for additional settlers, with which the colony may in time be augmented.
The first object of a rising colony is subsistence and population: the next is the prosperity likely to flow from these two sources. To avoid occasions of war, whether offensive or defensive; to turn industry towards those objects which are most advantageous; not to form connections around them, except such as are unavoidable, and may be proportioned to the stability which the colony acquires by the numbers of its inhabitants and the nature of its resources; to introduce, above all things, a partial and local spirit in a nation which is going to be established, a spirit of union within, and of peace without; to refer every institution to a distant but fixed point; and to make every occasional law subservient to the settled regulation which alone is to effect an increase of numbers, and to give stability to the settlement: these circumstances make no more than a sketch of a legislation. The moral system is to be formed on the nature of the climate; a large field for population is at first to be laid open by facilitating marriage, which depends upon the facility of procuring subsistence. Sanity of manners should be established by opinion. In a barbarous island, which is to be stocked with children, no more would be necessary than to leave the principles of truth to unfold themselves with the natural progress of reason. By proper precautions against those idle fears which proceed from ignorance, the errors of superstition should be removed, till that period when the warmth of the natural passions, fortunately uniting with the rational powers, dissipates every phantom. But when people already advanced in life are to be established in a new country, the ability of legislation consists in removing every injurious opinion or habit which may be cured or corrected. If we wish that these should not be transmitted to posterity, we should attend to the second generation, by instituting a general and public education of the children. A prince or legislator should never found a colony, without previously sending thither some proper persons for the education of youth; that is, some gi-
vernors rather than teachers: for it is of less moment to teach them what is good, than to guard them from evil. Good education is ineffectual, when the people are already corrupted. The seeds of morality and virtue, sown in the infant state of a generation already vitiated, are annihilated in the early stages of manhood by debauchery, and the contagion of such vices as have already become habitual in society. The best educated young men cannot come into the world without making engagements and forming connections, which will wholly influence them during the remainder of their lives. If they marry, follow any profession or pursuit, they find the seeds of evil and corruption rooted in every condition; a conduct entirely opposite to their principles; example and discourse which disconcerts and combats their best resolutions.

But in a rising colony, the influence of the first generation may be corrected by the manners of the succeeding one. The minds of all are prepared for virtue by labour. The necessities of life remove all vices proceeding from want of employment. The overflowing of its population hath a natural tendency towards the mother-country, where luxury continually invites and seduces the rich and voluptuous planter. A legislator, who intends to refine the constitution and manners of a colony, will meet with every assistance he can require. If he be only possessed of abilities and virtue, the lands and the people he has to manage will suggest to his mind a plan of society, that a writer can only mark out in a vague manner, liable to all the uncertainty of hypotheses that are varied and complicated by an infinity of circumstances too difficult to be foreseen and combined.

But the chief basis of a society for cultivation or commerce, is property. It is the seed of good and evil, natural or moral, consequent on the social state. Every nation seems to be divided into two irreconcilable parties. The rich and the poor, the men of property and the hirelings, that is to say, masters and
Book

slaves, form two classes of citizens, unfortunately, in
opposition to one another. In vain have some mo-
dern authors wished by sophistry to establish a treaty
of peace between these two states. The rich on all
occasions are disposed to obtain a great deal from the
poor at little expence, and the poor are ever inclined
to set too high a value on their labour; while the rich
man must always give the law in this too unequal bar-
gain. Hence arises the system of counterpoise establish-
ed in so many countries. The people have not wished
to attack property which they considered as sacred,
but they have made attempts to fetter it, and to check
its natural tendency to universal power. These coun-
terpoises have almost always been ill applied, as they
were but a feeble remedy against the original evil in
society. It is then to the repartition of lands that a
legislator will turn his principal attention. The more
wisely that distribution shall be managed, the more
simple, uniform, and exact, will be those laws of the
country which chiefly conduce to the preservation of
property.

The English colonies partake, in this respect, of the
radical vice inherent in the ancient constitution of the
mother-country. As its present government is but a
reformation of that feudal system which had oppressed
all Europe, it still retains many usages, which being
originally nothing more than abuses of servitude, are
still more sensibly felt by their contrast with the liber-
ty which the people have recovered. It has, therefore,
been found necessary to join the laws which left many
rights to the nobility, to those which modify, lessen,
abrogate, or soften the feudal rights. Hence so many
laws of exception for one original law; so many of in-
terpretation for one fundamental; so many new laws
that are at variance with the old. Hence it is agreed,
there is not in the whole world a code so diffusé, so
perplexed, as that of the civil law of Great Britain.
The wisest men of that enlightened nation have often
exclaimed against this disorder. They have either not
been heard, or the changes which have been produced
by their remonstrances have only served to increase the confusion.

By their dependence and their ignorance, the colonies have blindly adopted that deformed and ill-digested code, the burden of which oppressed their ancestors: they have added to that obscene heap of materials by every new law that the times, manners, and place could introduce. From this mixture has resulted a chaos the most difficult to put in order; a collection of contradictions that requires much pains to reconcile. Immediately there sprang up a numerous body of lawyers, to prey upon the lands and inhabitants of those new settled climates. The fortune and influence they have acquired in a short time, have brought into subjection to their rapaciousness the valuable class of citizens employed in agriculture, commerce, in all the arts and labours most indifferently necessary for every society, but almost singularly essential to a rising community. To the severe evil of chicanery, which has fixed itself on the branches, in order to seize on the fruit, has succeeded that of finance, which destroys the heart and the root of the tree.

In the origin of the colonies, the coin bore the same value as in the mother-country. The scarcity of it soon occasioned a rise of one-third. That inconvenience was not remedied by the abundance of specie which came from the Spanish colonies; because it was necessary to transport that into England in order to pay for the merchandise wanted from thence. This was a gulf that absorbed the circulation in the colonies. It was, however, necessary to establish a mode of exchange; and every province, except Virginia, sought for it in the creation of a paper currency.

The general government made at first but a moderate use of this expedient; but the disputes of the savages increasing, as well as the wars against Canada, occasioned men of an enterprising spirit to form complicated and extensive projects; and the management of the public treasury was intrusted to rapacious or unskilful hands. This resource was then more freely
employed than was proper. In vain were taxes levied at first, in order to pay the interest of the paper, and to take up the paper itself at a stipulated period. New debts were contracted to satisfy fresh wants, and engagements were generally carried beyond all excess. In Pennsylvania alone, the paper currency of the state preserved unremittingly its entire value. The credit of it was shaken in two or three other colonies, though it was not entirely lost. But in the two Carolinas, and in the four provinces which constitute what is commonly called New England, it fell into such discredit from the multiplicity of it, that it could no longer be circulated at any rate. Massachusetts's Bay, which had conquered Cape Breton from the French, received from the mother-country 4,050,000 livres [168,750l.] of indemnification. With this sum they paid off twelve times the value in their paper, and those who received the money thought they had made a very good bargain. The parliament, aware of this mischief, made some attempts to remedy it; but their measures were only very imperfectly successful. It would certainly have been a more effectual step, than any of those which had been invented by either a good or bad policy, to have broken the fetters with which the internal industry, and the external commerce, of so many great settlements were shackled.

The first colonists who peopled North America applied themselves solely to agriculture. They soon perceived that their exports did not enable them to buy what they wanted, and they therefore found themselves in a manner compelled to set up some rude manufactures. The interests of the mother-country seemed to be affected by this innovation; which was made a matter of parliamentary inquiry, and discussed with all the attention it deserved. There were men bold enough to defend the cause of the colonists. They urged, that as the business of tillage did not employ men all the year, it was tyranny to oblige them to waste in idleness the time which the land did not require: that as the produce of agriculture and hunt-
ing did not furnish them to the extent of their wants, the preventing them from providing against them by a new species of industry, was in fact reducing them to the greatest distress: in a word, that the prohibition of manufactures only tended to enhance the price of all provisions in a rising state, to lessen, or, perhaps, stop the sale of them, and to deter such persons as might intend to settle in it.

The evidence of these principles was not to be controverted: they were complied with after great debates. The Americans were permitted to manufacture their own clothes themselves, but with such restrictions as betrayed how much avarice regretted, what an appearance of justice could not but allow. All communication from one province to another on this account was severely prohibited. They were forbidden, under the heaviest penalties, to traffic with each other for wool of any sort, raw or manufactured. However, some manufacturers of hats ventured to break through these restrictions. To put a stop to what was termed a heinous disorderly practice, the parliament had recourse to the mean and cruel expedient of law. A workman was not at liberty to set up for himself till after seven years apprenticeship; a master was not allowed to have more than two apprentices at a time, nor to employ any slave in his work-shop.

Iron mines, which seem to put into men's hands the instruments of their own independence, were laid under restrictions still more severe. It was not allowed to carry iron in bars, or rough pieces, anywhere but to the mother-country. Without being provided with crucibles to melt it or machines to bend it, without hammers or anvils to fashion it, they had still left liberty of converting it into steel.

Importation was subjected to still further restraints. All foreign vessels, unless in evident distress or danger of wreck, or freighted with gold or silver, were not to come into any of the ports of North America. Even English vessels were not admitted there, unless
they came immediately from some port of the country. The ships of the colonies going to Europe, were to bring back no merchandise but from the mother country. Every thing was included in this proscription, except wine from the Madeiras, the Azores, and the Canaries, and salt for the fisheries.

All exportations were originally to terminate in England; but important reasons determined the government to relax and abate this extreme severity. The colonists were allowed to carry directly south of Cape Finisterre, grain, meal, rice, vegetables, fruit, salt fish, planks, and timber. All other productions were reserved for the mother-country. Even Ireland, which afforded an advantageous mart for corn, flax, and pipe flaves, has been shut against them by an act of parliament.

The parliament, which represents the nation, assumed the right of directing commerce in its whole extent throughout the British dominions. It is by this authority it pretends to regulate the connections between the mother-country and the colonies, to maintain a communication, an advantageous reciprocal re-action between the scattered parts of an immense empire. There should, in fact, be one power to appeal to, in order to determine finally upon the concerns that may be useful or prejudicial to the general good of the whole society. The parliament is the only body that can assume such an important power. But it ought to employ it to the advantage of every member of society. This is an inviolable maxim, especially in a state where all the powers are formed and directed for the preservation of national liberty.

That principle of impartiality was unattended to, which alone can maintain an equal state of independence among the several members of a free government; when the colonies were obliged to vent in the mother-country all their productions, even those which were not for their own consumption; when they were obliged to take from the mother-country all kinds of merchandise, even those which came from foreign nations. This imperious and useless restraint, loading
the sales and purchases of the Americans with unnecessary and ruinous charges, has necessarily lessened their industry, and consequently diminished their profits; and it has been only for the purpose of enriching a few merchants, or some factors at home, that the rights and interests of the colonies have thus been sacrificed. All they owed to England for the protection they received from her, was only a preference in the sale and importation of all such of their commodities as she should consume; and a preference in the purchase and in the exportation of all such merchandise as came from her hands: so far all subjection was a return of gratitude: beyond it all obligation was violence.

Thus it is that tyranny has given birth to contrary trade. Transgression is the first effect produced by unreasonable laws. In vain has it frequently been repeated to the colonies, that smuggling was contrary to the fundamental interest of their settlements, to all reason of government, and to the express intentions of law. In vain has it been continually laid down in public writings, that the subject who pays duty is oppressed by him who does not pay it; and that the fraudulent merchant robs the fair trader by disappointing him of his lawful profit. In vain have precautions been multiplied for preventing such frauds, and fresh penalties inflicted for the punishment of them. The voice of interest, reason and equity, has prevailed over all the numberless clamours and various attempts of finance. Foreign importations smuggled into North America, amount to one-third of those which pay duty.

An indefinite liberty, or merely restrained within proper limits, would have put a stop to the prohibited engagements of which so much complaint had been made. Then the colonies would have arrived to a state of affluence, which would have enabled them to discharge a load of debt due to the mother-country, amounting to one hundred and twenty, or one hundred and thirty millions of livres [from $5,000,000].
They would then have drawn from thence annually goods to the amount of forty-five millions of livres [1,875,000l.], the sum to which their wants had been raised in the most successful periods. But instead of having their destiny alleviated, as they were incessantly demanding, these great settlements saw themselves threatened with a tax.

England had just emerged from a long and bloody war, during which her fleets had been victorious in all the seas, and her conquests had enlarged her dominions, already too extensive, with an immense acquisition of territory in the East and West Indies. This splendour might perhaps externally dazzle the nations, but the country was continually obliged to lament its acquisitions and its triumphs. Oppressed with a load of debt to the amount of 3,330,000,000 of livres [138,750,000l.], that cost her an interest of 111,577,490 livres [4,649,062l. 8s. 8d.] a year; she was scarce able to support the necessary expenses of the state, with a revenue of 130,000,000 of livres [5,416,666l. 13s. 4d.]; and that revenue was far from increasing, that it was not even certain it would continue.

The lands were charged with a heavier tax than had ever been imposed in time of peace. New duties were laid on houses and windows; and the control of the acts was oppressive on all kinds of property. Wine, plate, cards, dice, and every thing which was considered as an object of luxury or amusement, paid more than it could have been thought possible. To compensate for the sacrifice which had been made for the preservation of the citizens, by prohibiting spirituous liquors, duties were laid on the ordinary drink of the common people, on malt, cider, and beer. The ports dispatched nothing for foreign kingdoms, and received nothing from them, but what was loaded with duties, both of export and import. Materials and workmanship had so prodigiously risen in price in Great Britain, that her merchants were supplanted even in the countries where they had not till then
met with any competitors. The commercial pro-
fits of England with every part of the world, did not amount annually to more than 56,000,000 livres [2,333,333l. 6s. 8d.]; but of this balance 35,000,000 livres [1,458,333l. 6s. 8d.] were to be deducted, to pay the arrears of the sums which foreigners had placed in the public funds.
The springs of the state were all strained. The muscles of the body politic being in a state of extreme tension, were in some measure thrown out of their place. The crisis was a violent one. The people should have been allowed time to recover. They could not be eased by a diminution of expenses; for those made by government were necessary, either for the purpose of improving the conquests, purchased at the price of so much blood and treasure, or to restrain the resentment of the house of Bourbon, irritated by the humiliations of the late war and the sacrifices of the late peace. As other means did not occur, which might secure the present as well as future prosperity of the nation, it was thought proper to call in the colonies to the aid of the mother-country. These views were prudent and just.
The members of a confederate body must all of them contribute to its defence and its splendour, in proportion to their respective abilities; as it is only by public strength that each class is enabled to preserve the entire and peaceful enjoyments of its possessions. The poor are certainly less interested in this than the wealthy; but yet their tranquillity is concerned in it, in the first place, and in the second place, the national riches, which they are called upon to share by their industry. There can be no social principle more evident, and yet the infringement of it is the most ordinary of all political faults. From whence can arise this perpetual contradiction between the conviction and the conduct of government?
It arises from the fault of the legislative power, in exaggerating the means for maintaining the public strength, and in employing for its own caprices part
BOOK XVIII.

of the funds destined for this purpose. The wealth
of the merchant and of the farmer, and the subsistences
of the poor, taken from them in the country places and
in the towns in the name of the state, and profited
ed in the courts to the purposes of interest and vice
are employed to increase the pomp of a number of
men, who flatter, detest, and corrupt their master; or
pass into still baser hands than these, to pay for the
scandal and shame of his pleasures. These treasures
are lavished for a parade of grandeur, the vain deco-
ration of those who can have no real grandeur; for
festivals, the resource of idleness, unable to exert
itself, in the midst of the cares and labours which the
government of an empire would require. A portion of
them, it is true, is given to the public wants: but their
from incapacity or inattention, are applied without judg-
ment as without economy. Authority deceived, an
disdaining even to endeavour to be otherwise, admis
of an unjust distribution of the tax, and of a mode of
collecting it, which is itself an additional oppression.
Then every patriotic sentiment becomes extinct. A
war is excited between the prince and his subjects.
Those who levy the revenues of the state, appear no
thing but the enemies of the citizen. He defends his
fortune from the impost, as he would defend it from
encroachments. Every thing which cunning can take
from power appears a lawful gain; and the subjects,
corrupted by the government, make use of the reprisals against a master who plunders them. They
do not perceive that, in this unequal conflict, they
are themselves both dupes and victims. The insati-
able and eager treasury, less satisfied with what is gi-
ven to them than irritated for what is refused, persecutes
every individual delinquent by a variety of means.
They join activity to interest; and vexations are mul-
tiplied. They go under the denomination of punish-
ment and justice; and the monster, who reduces to
poverty all those whom he prosecutes, returns thanks
to Heaven for the number of culprits whom he pu-
nishes, and for the multiplicity of offences by which
he enriches himself. Happy is the sovereign who, to prevent so many abuses, would not disdain to give his people an exact account of the manner in which all the sums he had required of them were employed. But this sovereign hath not yet appeared; nor indeed will he ever appear. Nevertheless, the debt due by the protected person to the state which protects him, is equally necessary and sacred; and has been acknowledged by all people. The English colonies of North America had not disavowed this obligation; and the British ministry had never applied to them without obtaining the assistance they solicited.

But these were gifts and not taxes, since the grant was preceded by free and public deliberations in the assemblies of each settlement. The mother-country had been engaged in expensive and cruel wars. Tumultuous and enterprising parliaments had disturbed its tranquillity. It had a set of bold and corrupt ministers, unfortunately inclined to raise the authority of the throne on the ruin of all the powers and all the rights of the people. Revolutions had succeeded each other, while the idea had never suggested itself, of attacking a custom, confirmed by two centuries of fortunate experience.

The provinces of the New World were accustomed to consider as a right this mode of furnishing their contingent in men and money. Whether this claim had been doubtful or erroneous, prudence would have required that it should not have been too openly attacked. The art of maintaining authority is a delicate one, which requires more circumspection than is generally thought. Those who govern are perhaps too much accustomed to despise men. They consider them as slaves, bowed down by nature, whereas they are only so by habit. If they be oppressed with a fresh weight, take care lest they should rise up again with fury. Let it not be forgotten, that the lever of power hath no other support but that of opinion; and that the strength of those who govern is really nothing more than the strength of those who suffer themselves
BOOKS to be governed. Let not the people, who are diverted by their employments, or who sleep in their chains, be instructed to pry into truths which are too formidable for government; and when they obey, let them not be made to recollect that they have the right to command. As soon as the instant of this terrible alarm shall arrive; as soon as they shall think that they are not made for their chiefs, but that their chiefs are made for them; as soon as they shall have been able to collect together, and to hear each other unanimously exclaim, We will not have this law, the custom is displeasing to us; there is then no alternative left, but either to submit or to punish, to be weak or to be tyrants; and from that time the authority of government being detested or despised, whatever measures they may take, they will have nothing to expect from the people but open infiuence or concealed hatred.

The first duty of a prudent administration is, therefore, to respect the prevailing opinions of a country; for opinions are the kind of property to which the people are more attached than even to that of their fortune. It may, indeed, endeavour to rectify them by knowledge, or alter them by persuasion, if they should be prejudicial to the strength of the state. But it is not allowable to contradict them without necessity; and there never was any to reject the system adopted by North America.

In fact, whether the several countries of the New World were authorized, as they wished to do, to send representatives to parliament, in order to deliberate with their fellow-citizens on the exigencies of the British empire; or whether they continued to examine within themselves what contribution it was convenient for them to grant; the treasury could not have experienced any embarrassment from either of these modes. In the first instance, the remonstrances of their deputies would have been lost in the multitude, and the provinces would have been legally charged with part of the burden intended for them to bear. In the second, the ministry disposing of the dignities, of the
...employsments, of the pensions, and even of the elec-
tions, would not have experienced more opposition to
their will in the other hemisphere, than they do in this.

But the maxims which were holden sacred in Amer-
ica had some other foundation beside prejudice. The
people relied upon the nature of their charters; they
relied still more firmly upon the right which every
English citizen hath, not to be taxed without his con-
sent, or that of his representatives. This right, which
ought to belong to all people, since it is founded on
the eternal code of reason, was traced to its origin as
far back as the reign of Edward I. Since that period,
the English never lost sight of it. In peace and in
war, under the dominion of ferocious kings, as well as
under that of weak monarchs, in times of slavery as
in periods of anarchy, they never ceased to claim it.
The English, under the Tudors, were seen to aban-
don their most valuable rights, and to deliver up their
defenceless heads to the stroke of the tyrant; but they
were never seen to renounce the right of taxing them-

selves. It was in defence of this right that they shed
torrents of blood, that they dethroned or punished
their kings. Finally, at the revolution of 1688, this
right was solemnly acknowledged by the famous act,
in which Liberty, with the same hand that she was
expelling a despotic king, was drawing the conditions
of the contract between the nation and the new sove-
reign they had just choosen. This prerogative of the
people, much more sacred, undoubtedly, than so ma-
ny imaginary rights which superstition hath endeav-
oured to sanctify in tyrants, was at once in England
the instrument and the bulwark of its liberty. The
nation thought and perceived that this was the only
dyke which could for ever put a stop to despotism;
that the moment which deprives a people of this pri-

vilege condemns them to oppression; and that the
funds, raised apparently for their safety, are employed
sooner or later to ruin them. The English, when they
founded their colonies, had carried these principles
beyond the seas, and the same ideas were transmitted to their posterity.

Alas! if in those countries even of Europe, where slavery seems for a long time to have taken up its residence in the midst of vices, of riches, and of arts; where the despotism of armies maintains the despotism of courts; where man, fettered from his cradle, and bound by the twofold bands of superstition and policy, hath never breathed the air of liberty; if, even in those countries, persons who have reflected once in their lives on the destiny of states, cannot avoid the adopting of these maxims, and envying the fortunate nation which hath contrived to make them the foundation and the basis of its constitution; how much more must the English, the children of America, be attached to them; they who have received this intelligence from their ancestors, and who know at what price they have purchased it? Even the soil they inhabit must keep up in them a sentiment favourable to these ideas. Dispersed over an immense continent, free as nature, which surrounds them, amidst the rocks, the mountains, the vast plains of their deserts, and on the skirts of those forests where every thing is still wild, and where nothing calls to mind neither the servitude nor the tyranny of man, they seem to receive from natural objects lesions of liberty and independence. Besides, these people, who are almost all of them devoted to agriculture, to commerce, and to useful labours, which elevate and strengthen the mind by giving simplicity to the manners, who have been hitherto as far removed from riches as from poverty, cannot yet be corrupted either by an excess of luxury or by a multiplicity of wants. It is this state more especially, that man who enjoys liberty can maintain it, and can show himself jealous of defending an hereditary right which seems to be the sure guarantee of all the other rights. Such was the revolution of the Americans.

Whether the British ministry were yet unacquainted with these dispositions, or whether they hoped that
their delegates would succeed in altering them, they however embraced the opportunity of a glorious peace to exact a forced contribution from the colonies. For let it be well observed, that a war, whether fortunate or unfortunate, serves always as a pretence to the usurpations of government, as if the views of the chiefs of the belligerent powers were less to conquer their enemies than to enslave their subjects. The year 1764 gave birth to the famous stamp act, which forbade the admission into the tribunals of any claim which had not been written upon paper stamped and sold for the benefit of the treasury.

The English provinces of the North of America were all incensed at this usurpation of their most valuable and most sacred rights. By unanimous consent, they refused to consume what was furnished them by the mother-country, till this illegal and oppressive bill was withdrawn. The women, whose weakness might have been feared, were the most eager in sacrificing what served for their ornament; and the men, animated by this example, gave up on their parts other enjoyments. Many cultivators quitted the plough, in order to accustom themselves to the work of manufactures; and the woollen, linen, and cotton, coarsely wrought, were bought up at the price that was previously given for the finest cloths and most beautiful stuffs.

This kind of combination surprised the government, and their anxiety was increased by the clamours of the merchants, who found no market for their goods. These discontents were supported by the enemies of the ministry; and the stamp act was repealed after two years of a commotion, which in other times would have kindled a civil war.

But the triumph of the colonies was of short duration. The parliament, which had retracted only with extreme reluctance, ordained in 1767, that the revenue which they had not been able to obtain by means of the stamp, should be collected by the glass, the lead, the plateboard, the colours, the figured paper, and the
tea, which were conveyed from England to America. The people of the northern continent were not less in. censed with this innovation than with the former. In vain was it represented to them, that no one could contest with Great Britain the power of settling upon her exports such duties as were suitable to her inter. rests; since she did not deprive her establishments be. yond the seas of the liberty of manufacturing them- selves the commodities which were subjected to the new taxes. This subterfuge appeared a mark of deri. fation to men, who, being merely cultivators, and com. pelled to have no communication except with the mo. ther-country, could neither procure for themselves by their own industry, nor by foreign connections, the ar. ticles that were taxed. Whether the tribute were paid in the Old or in the New World, they understood that the name made no alteration in the thing, and that their liberty would be no less attacked in this manner than it had been in the former, which had been repul sed with success. The colonists saw clearly that the government meant to deceive them, and they would not be imposed upon. These political sophisms appeared to them as they really are, the mark of ty. ranny.

Nations in general are more adapted to feel than to think. Most of them have never thought of analyzing the nature of the power which governs them. They obey without reflection, and because they are in the habit of obeying. The origin and object of the first national associations being unknown to them, every resistance to their will appears to them a crime. It is chiefly in those states where the principles of legislation are blended with those of religion, that this error was common. The habit of believing is favourable to the habit of suffering. Man doth not renounce with impunity one single object. It seems as if Nature aven. ged herself of him who ventures thus to degrade her. This servile disposition of the soul extends to every thing; it makes a duty of resignation as of meanness, and respecting every chain that binds it, trembles to
enter into an examination of the laws as well as of the tenets. In the same manner as one single extravagance in religious opinions is sufficient to induce minds that are once deceived to adopt numberless others, so the first usurpation of government opens the door to all the rest. He who believes the most believes also the least, and he who can exert the most power can exert also the least. It is by this double abuse of credulity and of authority, that all the absurdities in matters of religion and politics have been introduced in the world to crush mankind. Accordingly, the first signal of liberty among the nations hath excited them to shake off these two yokes at once; and the period in which the human mind began to discuss the abuses of the church and of the clergy is that when reason became at length sensible of the rights of the people, and when courage endeavoured to fix the first limits to despotism. The principles of toleration and of liberty established in the English colonies had made them a people very different from others. There it was known what the dignity of man was; and when it was violated by the British ministry, it necessarily followed, that a people, composed entirely of citizens, should rise against this attempt.

Three years elapsed, and none of the taxes which had so much offended the Americans were yet levied. This was something, but it was not all that was expected from men jealous of their prerogatives. They wanted a general and formal renunciation of what had been illegally ordained, and this satisfaction was granted to them in 1770. The tea only was excepted. The intent, indeed, of this reserve, was merely to palliate the disgrace of giving up entirely the superiority of the mother-country over its colonies; for this duty was not more exacted than the others had been.

The ministry, deceived by their delegates, certainly imagined that the dispositions of the people were altered in the New World, when in 1773 they ordered the tax on the tea to be levied.

At this news the indignation became general.
throughout North America. In some provinces, thanks were decreed to those navigators who had refused to take any of this article on board. In others, the merchants to whom it was addressed refused to receive it. In one place, whoever sold it was declared an enemy to his country; in another, the same mark of ignominy was bestowed upon those who should keep it in their warehouses. Several districts solemnly renounced the use of this liquor, and a greater number of them burnt all the tea they had remaining, which had hitherto been in such high estimation among them. The tea sent to this part of the globe was valued at five or six millions of livres [from 208,333l. 6s. 8d. to 250,000l.], and not a single chest of it was landed. Bolton was the chief scene of this insurrection. Its inhabitants destroyed in the harbor three cargoes of tea, which had arrived from Europe.

This great city had always appeared more attentive to their rights than the rest of America. The least attempt against their privileges was repulsed without discretion. This resistance, sometimes accompanied with troubles, had for some years past disturbed the government. The ministry, who had some motives of revenge to gratify, too hastily seized upon the circumstance of this blameable excess, and demanded of the parliament a severe punishment.

Moderate people wished that the guilty city should be condemned to furnish an indemnity proportioned to the damage done in its harbor, and which it deserved for not having punished this act of violence. This penalty was judged too slight; and on the 13th of March 1774, a bill was passed, which shut up the port of Bolton, and which forbade that any thing should be carried there.

The court of London congratulated itself upon this rigorous law, and doubted not but that it would bring the Bostonians to that spirit of servitude with which it had been hitherto attempted in vain to inspire them. If, contrary to every appearance, these bold men should persevere in their pretensions, their neighbours
would eagerly avail themselves of the prohibition thrown upon the principal port of the colonies. At the worst, the other colonies which had been for a long time jealous of that of Massachusets's Bay, would abandon it with indifference to its melancholy fate, and would collect the immense trade which these misfortunes would cause to flow in upon them. In this manner the union of the several settlements, which, in the opinion of the mother-country, had for some years past acquired too much confidence, would be broken. The expectations of the ministry were in general frustrated. An act of rigour sometimes strikes awe. The people who have murmured while the storm was only preparing at a distance, submit when it comes to fall upon them. It is then that they weigh the advantages and disadvantages of resistance, that they measure their strength with that of their oppressors; it is then that a panic terror seizes those which have everything to lose, and nothing to gain; that they raise their voices, that they intimidate, and that they bribe; that division is excited in the minds of men, and that society is divided between two factions which irritate each other, which sometimes take up arms and lay each other in the view of their tyrants, who behold with complacency and satisfaction the effusion of their blood. But tyrants scarcely find any accomplices, unless among people already corrupt. It is vice which gives them confederates among those whom they oppress. It is effeminacy which takes the alarm, and cannot venture to exchange its tranquillity for honourable dangers. It is the vile ambition of commanding which lends its assistance to despotism, and confounds to be a slave for the love of acquiring dominion, to give up a people in order to divide their spoils, and to renounce the fence of honour in order to obtain honours and titles. It is especially that indifferent and cold personality, the laity of the crimes of the people, the laity of the vices of governments; for it is government which always gives rise to them; it is government which, from principle, sacrifices a nation to a man, and
the happiness of a century and of posterity to the en-
joyment of a day and of a moment. All these vices,
which are the fruits of an opulent and voluptuous so-
ciety, of a society grown old and come to its last pe-
riod, do not belong to recent people engaged in the
toils of agriculture. The Americans remained united
among themselves. The carrying into execution a
bill which they called inhuman, barbarous, and de-
structive, served only to confirm them in the resolution
of supporting their rights with more unanimity and
steadiness.

The minds of men grew more and more exalted at
Boston. The cry of liberty was reinforced by that of
religion. The churches refounded with the most vio-
lent exhortations against England. It was undoubt-
edly an interesting spectacle for philosophy, to see that
in the temples and at the feet of the altars, where su-
perstition had so often blessed the chains of the people,
where the priests had so often flattered the tyrants,
that liberty should raise its voice to defend the privi-
leges of an oppressed nation; and if we believe that
the Deity condescends to cast an eye upon the unfor-
tunate contests of mankind, it preferred certainly to
see its sanctuary consecrated to this use, and to hear
hymns to liberty become part of the worship addressed
to it by its ministers. These discourses must have pro-
duced a great effect; and when a free people invokes
the aid of Heaven against oppression, they soon have
recourse to arms.

The other inhabitants of Massachusetts Bay disdain-
ed even the idea of taking the least advantage of the
disasters of the capital. They thought of nothing but
tightening the bands which connected them with the
Bostonians, and were inclined to bury themselves un-
der the ruins of their common country, rather than
suffer the least encroachment upon rights which they
had learned to cherish more than life.

All the provinces attached themselves to the caufe
of Boston, and their attachment increased in propor-
tion to the calamities and sufferings of that unfortunate
city. Being almost guilty of the same resistance which had been so severely punished, they were sensible that the vengeance of the mother-country against them was only delayed, and that all the grace which the most favoured of them can possibly expect will be to be the last object of its revenge.

These dispositions to a general insurrection were increased by the act against Boston, which was circulated throughout the continent upon paper edged with black, as an emblem of the mourning of liberty. Anxiety soon communicates from one house to another. The citizens assemble and converse in the places. All the presses teem with writings full of eloquence and vigour.

"The severities of the British parliament against Boston ought to make all the American provinces tremble. They have now only to choose between fire and the sword, between the horrors of death and the yoke of a servile and base obedience. The period of an important revolution is at length arrived, the fortunate or unfortunate success of which will for ever determine the regret or admiration of posterity."

"Shall we be free, or shall we be slaves? It is upon the solution of this great problem, that the destiny of three millions of men will depend for the present and for the future, the happiness or misery of their numberless descendants."

"Rouse yourselves up, therefore, O you Americans! for the regions you inhabit were never covered with such dreadful clouds: you are called rebels, because you will be taxed only by your representatives. Justify this claim by your courage, or seal the loss of it with your blood."

"It is no longer time to deliberate, when the hand of the oppressor is incessantly at work in forging chains for you; silence would be a crime, and inaction infamy. The preservation of the rights of the republic, that is the supreme law. He would be the lowest of slaves, who, in the danger which

I iiij
BOOK XIV

now threatens the liberty of America, would not

exert his utmost efforts to preserve it."

Such was the general disposition: but the most important object, and the most difficult matter to effect in the midst of the general tumult, was to bring about a calm, by means of which a harmony of inclinations might be produced, which might give dignity, strength, and confidence to the resolutions. It is this kind of harmony, which, from a number of loose and scattered parts, all of them easily broken, composes one complete whole, which it is impossible to subdue, unless one can succeed in dividing it either by strength or by policy. The necessity of this great union was perceived by the provinces of New Hampshire, of Massachusetts Bay, of Rhode Island, of Connecticut, of New York, of New Jersey, of the three counties of the Delaware, of Pennsylvania, of Maryland, of Virginia, and of the two Carolinas. These twelve colonies, to which Georgia hath since acceded, sent deputies to Philadelphia in the month of September 1774, who were appointed to defend their rights and their interests.

The disputes between the mother-country and its colonies acquired at this period a degree of importance which they had not had before. It was no more a few individuals who opposed a stubborn resistance to imperious masters. It was the struggle between one body of men and another, between the congress of America and the parliament of England, between one nation and another. The resolutions taken on each side inflamed the minds of men still more and more, and increased the animosity. Every hope of reconciliation was dissipated. The sword was drawn on both sides; Great Britain sent troops into the New World, and this other hemisphere prepared for its defence. Its citizens became soldiers. The materials for the conflagration are collected, and the fire will soon break out.

General Gage, who commanded the royal troops, sent a detachment from Boston on the night of the 18th of August 1775, with orders to destroy a magazine of arms and provisions collected by the Americans
at Concord. This detachment met with some militia at Lexington, whom they dispersed without much difficulty, continued their march with rapidity, and executed the orders they had received. But they had scarcely resumed the road to the capital, before they were affrighted in a space of fifteen miles by a furious multitude, whom they destroyed, and by whom they were also slain. The blood of Englishmen, so often spilt in England by the hands of Englishmen, was now spilt in America, and the civil war was begun.

More regular engagements were fought upon the same field of battle in the ensuing months. Warren was the victim of these destructive and unnatural actions. The congress did honour to his remains.

"He is not dead," said the orator; "this excellent citizen shall not die. His memory will be eternally present, eternally dear to all good men, to all lovers of their country. He hath displayed, in the limited career of a life of thirty-three years, the talents of a statesman, the virtues of a senator, and the soul of a hero.

"All you who are animated with the same interest, approach the bloody corpse of Warren. Bathe his honourable wounds with your tears; but do not remain too long over this inanimate body. Return to your habitations to inspire a detestation of the crime of tyranny. Let the hair of your children start upon their heads at this horrible representation; let their eyes sparkle, let their brows become threatening, and let their voices express their indignation; then you will give them arms, and your last wish will be, that they may either return conquerors, or perish like Warren."

The troubles with which Massachusetts Bay was agitated were extended to the other provinces. The transactions were not, indeed, bloody in them, because there were no British troops; but in all parts the Americans seized upon the forts, the arms, and the provisions; they expelled their chiefs and the other agents of government, and ill-treated the inhabitants
BOOK who appeared to favour the cause of the mother-country. Some enterprising men carried their boldness so far as to seize upon the works formerly erected by the French near lake Champlain, between New England and Canada, and even made an irruption into that vast region.

While private individuals, or separate districts, were so usefully serving the common cause, the congress was employed in the care of assembling an army, the command of which was given to George Washington, a native of Virginia, and known by a few successful actions in the preceding wars. The new general immediately flew to Massachusetts's Bay, drove the royal troops from one post to another, and compelled them to shut themselves up in Boston. Six thousand of his old soldiers, who had escaped the sword, sickness, and every other kind of distress, pressed either by hunger or by the enemy, embarked on the 24th of March 1776, with a precipitation which had all the appearance of flight. They went to seek an asylum in Nova Scotia, which, as well as Florida, had remained faithful to its former masters.

This success was the first step of English America towards the revolution. It began to be openly wished for, and the principles which justified it were universally diffused. These principles, which originated in Europe, and particularly in England, had been transplanted by philosophy into America. The knowledge of the mother-country was turned against itself; and it was said:

One must be very careful not to confound societies and government with each other. Let us investigate their origin, in order to distinguish them.

Man, thrown upon the globe as it were by chance, surrounded with all the evils of nature, obliged to defend and protect his life against the storms and hurricanes of the air, against the inundations of the waters, against the fires and the conflagrations of volcanos, against the intemperance of the zones, either torrid or frozen, against the barrenness of the earth, which re-
fuses to yield him any subsistence, or against its unfor-
tunate fertility, which produces poisons under his feet, against the teeth of ferocious animals, who dispute with him his abode and his prey, and, by combating him themselves, seem to intend to acquire the domi-
nion of the globe, of which he thinks himself the ma-
ster; man, in this state alone, and abandoned to him-
self, could do nothing for his own preservation. It was
therefore necessary that he should unite and associate
with his fellow-creatures, in order to make a common
clock of their strength and understanding. It is by this
union that he hath been able to triumph over so many
evils, that he hath fashioned the globe to his own use,
kept the rivers within their boundaries, subdued the
seas, ensured his subsistence, conquered one part of the
animals, by compelling them to serve him, and driven
away the rest to a distance from his empire, in the
midst of deserts or of forests, where their numbers di-
minish from one century to another. Men, united
among themselves, have carried into execution what
one man alone could never have accomplished; and
they all together concur in preserving their work.
Such is the origin, such are the advantages and the
end of society.

Government owes its rise to the necessity of pre-
venting and of repelling the injuries which the associ-
ates had to fear from each other. It is the centinel
who watches to prevent the common labours from be-
ing disturbed.

Society hath therefore arisen from the necessities of
mankind, and government owes its origin to their
vices. Society always tends to good; government
ought always to tend towards repressing evil. Society
is the first, and in its origin independent and free; go-

government hath been instituted for it, and is only its
instrument. The former has the right of command-
ing, the latter must obey. Society hath created pub-
lic strength, and government, which hath received it
from its hands, ought to consecrate it entirely to its
use. In a word, society is essentially good; govern-
BOOK XVIII.

HISTORY OF SETTLEMENTS AND TRADE

ment, as it is well known, may be, and is but too of
ten bad.

It hath been said that we were all born equals; but
that is not true. That we had all the same rights: I
do not know what rights are, where there is an ine-
quality of talents and of strength, and no guarantee
nor sanction. That Nature hath offered to us all the
same habitation and the same resources; that is not
true. That we were indiscriminately endowed with
the same means of defence; that is not true: nor do
I know in what sense it can be true that we enjoy the
same qualities of body and of mind.

There is an original inequality between men which
nothing can remedy. It must last for ever; and all
that can be obtained from the best legislation will not
be to destroy it, but to prevent its abuses.

But hath not Nature herself produced the seeds of
tyranny, by dealing with her children like a stepmo-
ther, and by creating some children weak, and other
strong? It is scarce possible to deny this, especially if
we go back to a period previous to all legislation,
when we shall see men as passionate and as unreason-
able as brutes.

What views then can the founders of nations and
the legislators have had? To obviate all the disad-
ventages of this detested principle, by a kind of artificial equa-
| lity, which should subject the members of a society,
| without exception, to one single impartial authority.
| It is a sword which is indiscriminately suspended over
every head; but this sword was only ideal. It was
| necessary that some hand, some natural being, should
| hold it.

The result of this hath been, that the history of ci-
vilized man is nothing more than the history of hi-
miserly. All the pages of it are stained with blood;
some with that of the oppressors, the rest with that of
the oppressed.

In this point of view, man appears more wicked and
more unfortunate than animals. The different species
of animals subsist at the expense of each other; but
the societies of men have never ceased to attack each other. There is no condition in the same society, which doth not either devour, or hath not itself devoured, whatever may have been, or whatever may be the form of government, or of artificial equality, which hath been opposed to the primitive or natural inequality.

But these forms of government, freely chosen by our forefathers, whatever sanction they may have received, either from oath, or from unanimous consent, or from permanency, are they to be considered as binding to their descendants? Certainly not: and it is impossible that you, Englishmen, who have successively undergone so many different revolutions in your political constitution; who have been driven from monarchy to tyranny, from tyranny to aristocracy, from aristocracy to democracy, and from democracy to anarchy; it is impossible, I say, that you can think differently from me, without accusing yourselves of rebellion and perjury.

We examine things as philosophers; and it is well known that our speculations have not occasioned civil wars. No subjects are more patient than we are. I shall therefore pursue my object without any apprehension for the consequences. If people be happy under their form of government, they will maintain it. If they be wretched, it will be neither your opinion nor mine, but the impossibility of suffering any more, or for any longer time, which will determine them to change. A salutary commotion, which the oppressor will call revolt, though it be no more than the legal exercise of an unalienable and natural right of the man who is oppressed, and even of him who is not oppressed.

Man has a will and a choice of his own; but he can neither have a will nor a choice for another: and it would be an extravagance to exercise his will and his choice for him who is not yet born, for him who will not exist for many centuries after. There is no individual who hath not a right to seek elsewhere a
better form of government, if he be dissatisfied with that of his own country. There is no society which hath not the same liberty of altering its own form of government, as its ancestors had to adopt it. Upon this point, societies are in the same state as in the first instant of their civilization. It would be a great evil if it were not so; and indeed in that case there could be no remedy against the greatest of all evils. Millions of men must have been condemned to endless misfortune. It will therefore be admitted, in conformity to my principles,

That there is no form of government, the prerogative of which is to be immutable.

That there is no political authority, created either yesterday or a thousand years ago, which cannot be abrogated, either ten years hence, or to-morrow.

Whoever thinks otherwise is a slave; he is the ido-later of the works of his own hands.

Whoever thinks otherwise is a madman, who devotes himself, as well as his family, his children, and his children's children, to everlasting misery, by granting to his ancestors the right of stipulating for him when he was not in being, and by arrogating to himself the right of stipulating for his descendants, who are not yet in being.

All authority in this world hath begun either by the consent of the subjects, or by the strength of the master. It may be legally put a stop to in either of the cases. There is nothing which favours tyranny against liberty.

The truth of these principles is the more essential, as every power tends by its nature to despotism, even in that nation which is the most jealous of its rights, even in England.

I have heard a Whig say, that as long as a bad sovereign, or at least a bad minister, could not be sent to Tyburn with as little formality, parade, tumult, and surprize, as the most obscure malefactor, the nation would never either have a proper idea, nor the full enjoyment of its rights, in a manner suitable to a peo-
ple who venture to think, and to call themselves free people. This man was perhaps a fanatic; but madmen sometimes utter words of profound fenis. Nevertheless, an administration which you yourselves own to be ignorant, corrupt, and audacious, shall imperiously precipitate you with impunity into the deep-est abys of misfortune.

The quantity of specie circulating among you is not very considerable. You are overburdened with paper-currency, under every denomination. All the gold of Europe, heaped up in your treasury, would be scarce sufficient to pay off your national debt. It is not known by what kind of incredible illusion this fictitious coin is kept up. The most trifling event may in a moment bring it into discredit. One single alarm is sufficient to induce a sudden bankruptcy. The dreadful consequences of this breach of faith are beyond our imagination. And this is the moment which hath been chosen to make you declare against your colonies, that is to say, to involve yourselves in an unjust, senseless, and ruinous war. What will become of you, when one important branch of your commerce shall be annihilated; when you shall have lost one third of your possessions; when you shall have massacred one or two millions of your fellow-citizens; when your strength shall be exhausted, your merchants ruined, your manufacturers reduced to perish for want; when your debt shall be increased, and your revenue diminished? Beware! the blood of the Americans will sooner or later fall upon your own heads. Its effusion will be revenged by your own hands; and the moment is at hand.

But, you say, they are rebels.—Why are they so? Because they will not be your slaves? A people who are subject to the will of another, who can dispose at pleasure of their government, of their laws, and of their commerce, who can tax them according to their own fancy, limit their industry, and fetter it by arbitrary prohibitions, are slaves, and their servitude is worse than that which they would experience under a ty-
because a tyrant may be got rid of, either by expulsion or by assassination. Both these acts have been done by you. But a nation can neither be put to death nor expelled. Liberty can be expected only from a rupture, the consequence of which must be the ruin of one or the other of the nations, and sometimes of both. A tyrant is a monster with only one head, which may be stricken off at a blow. A despotic nation is a Hydra with a thousand heads, which can only be smitten off by a thousand swords at once. The crime of the oppression exercised by a tyrant excites universal indignation against himself alone. The same crime, committed by a numerous society, spreads the horror and the shame of it amongst a multitude, which is never ashamed. It is the crime of every body and of no body; and the sentiment of misguided despair knows not upon what object to fix its resentment.

But they are our subjects.—Your subjects! not more than the inhabitants of the province of Wales are the subjects of the county of Lancaster. The authority of one nation over another can only be founded upon conquest, upon general consent, or upon proposed and accepted conditions. Conquest is no more binding than robbery; the consent of ancestors cannot compel descendants; and no conditions can be consistent with the sacrifice of liberty. Liberty cannot be bartered for any thing, because no equivalent can be given for it. This is the speech you have made to your tyrants, and we now address it to you in favour of your colonists.

The land which they occupy is ours.—Yours! It is thus you call it, because you have invaded it. But supposing it to be so, doth not the charter of concessions oblige you to treat the Americans as your countrymen? and do you comply with this obligation? But to what purpose are concessions and charters, which grant what one is not master of, and which consequently one hath no right of granting to a small number of feeble men, compelled by circumstances to receive as a gratuity what they have a natural right to?
Besides, have the descendants, who are now alive, been invited to accede to a compact, signed by their ancestors? The truth of this principle must be acknowledged, or the descendants of James must be recalled. What right was there to drive him away, which we had not equally to separate from you? say the Americans. And what answer can be made to them?

They are ungrateful; we are their founders; we have been their defenders; we have indebted ourselves for them. —For yourselves, you may say, as much, or more than for them. If you have defended them, it is in the same manner as you would have defended the sultan of Constantinople, if your ambition or your interest had required it. But have they not repaid this obligation, by delivering to you their productions, by exclusively receiving your merchandize, at the exorbitant price you have chosen to put upon it, by submitting to the prohibitions which thwarted their industry, and to the restrictions with which you have oppressed their property? Have they not affrighted you, and indebted themselves for you? Have they not taken up arms, and fought for you? Have they not acceded to your demands, when you have made them in a manner suitable to freemen? When have they ever refused you any thing, unless when presenting your bayonets to their breasts, you have said to them, Your treasure, or your life; die, or be our slaves. What! because you have been beneficent, have you the right to become oppressors? Will the nations also convert their expectations of gratitude into a barbarous pretence to disgrace and infilt those who have had the misfortune to receive their benefits? Individuals, perhaps, though it be not their duty, may in their benefactors bear with their tyrants. In them, undoubtedly, it is great; it is magnanimous, to confert to be unhappy, rather than be ungrateful. But the system of morality among nations is different. The public felicity is the first law, as it is the first duty. The primary obligation of these great bodies is towards themselves. They

Vol. VI.
owe, above all things, liberty and justice to those who compose them. Every child who is born in a state, every citizen who comes to breathe the air of a country which he hath chosen for himself, or which Nature hath given him, has a right to the greatest degree of happiness he can possibly enjoy. Every obligation which cannot be reconciled with that principle is void. Every contrary claim is an encroachment upon his rights. Of what concern is it to him, if his ancestor have been favoured, when he himself is destined to be the victim? By what right can we exact the payment of thisurious debt of benefits, which he hath not even experienced? No. To arrogate to one's self a similar claim, against a whole nation and its posterity, is to subvert all the ideas of order and policy; it is to betray all the laws of morality, while we invoke their countenance. What hath not England done for Hanover? But is Hanover subject to your command? All the republics of Greece were connected with each other by mutual services? Did any one of them exact, as a token of gratitude, the right of disposing of the administration of the republic that had received the obligation?

But our honour is compromised.—Say rather, the honour of your bad ministers, and not your own. In what conflicts the real honour of him who is in error? Is it to persist in it, or to acknowledge it? The man who returns to sentiments of justice hath no occasion to be ashamed. Englishmen, you have been too precipitate. Why did you not wait till riches had corrupted the Americans, as you are corrupted? Then they would have been as little concerned for their liberty as you for yours. Then, subdued by wealth, your arms would have been useless. But you have attacked them in an instant, when what they had to lose, liberty, could not be balanced by what they had to preserve.

But in later times they would have become still more numerous.—I acknowledge it. You have therefore only attempted the enslaving of a people, whom time would
have set free in spite of you. In twenty or thirty years, the remembrance of your atrocious deeds will be recent; and the fruit of them will be taken away from you: then nothing but shame and remorse will remain to you. There is a decree of nature which you cannot change; it is, that great bodies always give law to smaller ones. But if the Americans should then undertake against Great Britain what you have undertaken against them, would you not say to them exactly what they say to you at this instant? Wherefore should motives which affect you but little, coming from them, appear more solid when coming from you?

They will neither obey our parliament, nor adopt our constitution.—Have they made, or can they change them?

We obey them without having bad, either in past times, or without having at present any influence over them.—That is to say, that you are slaves, and that you cannot suffer freemen. Nevertheless, do not confound the position of the Americans with yours. You have representatives, and they have none; you have voices which speak for you, and no one stipulates for them. If the voices be bought and sold, this is an excellent reason for them to disclaim this advantage.

They would be independent of us.—Are not you so of them?

They will never be able to support themselves without us.—If that be the case, keep quiet; necessity will bring them back to you.

But what if we could not subsist without them?—This would be a great misfortune: but to cut their throats, in order to prevent it, is a singular expedient.

It is for their interest, it is for their good, that we are angry with them, as we are with children who behave improperly.—Their interest and their good! Who hath appointed you the judges of these two points which touch them so nearly, and which they ought to know better than you? If it should happen that a citizen should enter by force into the house of another, upon a pretence that he was a man of great understanding,
BOOK and that no one was more capable of maintaining good order and peace at his neighbour's house; would not his neighbour have a right to desire him to withdraw, and concern himself about his own affairs? But what shall we say if the affairs of this officious hypocrite were much in disorder? If he were nothing more than an ambitious man, who, under pretence of governing, wanted to usurp; if under the mask of benevolence he concealed only views full of injustice, such, for instance, as the endeavour to relieve his own difficulties at the expence of his fellow-citizens?

We are the mother-country.—What, are the most sacred names always to serve as veils to ambition and to interest? If you be the mother-country, fulfil the duties of it. Moreover, the colony is formed of different nations, among whom some will grant and others will refuse you this title. While all of them will say to you at once, there is a time when the authority of parents over their children is to cease, and this time is that when children can provide for themselves. What term have you fixed for our emancipation? Be honest, and confess you flattered yourselves that you should have kept us under perpetual tutelage. This tutelage however might be supportable, if it were not changed for us into an unbearable constraint; if our advantage were not incessantly sacrificed to yours; if we were not obliged to suffer a multitude of oppressions in detail from the governors, the judges, the financiers, and the military men whom you send to us; if most of them at their arrival in our climates did not bring with them degraded characters, ruined fortunes, rapacious hands; and the insole of subaltern tyrants, who, tired with obeying the laws in their own country, come to indemnify themselves in a New World, by exercising there a power which is too frequently arbitrary. You are the mother-country, but far from encouraging our progress, you stand in awe of it. You confine our industry, and you counteract our rising strength. Nature, in favouring us, disappoints your secret wishes.
or rather, it is your desire that she should remain in a Book state of eternal infancy, with respect to every thing that may be useful to us; and notwithstanding this, that we should still be robust slaves to serve you, and incessantly to supply your avidity with new fources of wealth. Is this being a mother? Is this being our country? Alas! in the forests that surround us, Nature hath bestowed a milder instinct on the wild beast, who, when he is become a mother, doth not at least devour those to whom she hath given birth.

If we agreed to all their pretensions, they would soon be happier than we are.—And why not? If you be corrupted, why should they be so? If you incline to slavery, must they also imitate your example? If you were their master, why should you not confer the property of another power to your sovereign? Why should you not make him your despot, as you have declared him by a solemn act the despot of Canada? Must they then have ratified this extravagant conception? and if they had ratified it, must they have obeyed the sovereign you would have given them? and must they have taken up arms against you in obedience to his orders? The king of England hath a negative power. No law can be enacted there without his consent. This power, the inconvenience of which you daily experience, why should the Americans grant it to him among themselves? Would it be to deprive him of it one day by taking up arms, as it will happen to you if your government should be improved? What advantage can you find in subjecting them to a vicious constitution?

Vicious or not, this constitution is ours, and it must be generally acknowledged and accepted by all who bear the English name; otherwise, each of our provinces governing itself in its own way, having its own laws, and pretending to independence, we should cease to form a national body, and should be nothing more than a collection of small insulat'd republics divided, incessantly at war with each other, and easily invaded by a common enemy. The
Supposing him to be near you, he is at a distance from the Americans. A privilege which may be attended with some inconvenience to you, is not the less a privilege. But, separated as they are from Great Britain, by immense seas, of what concern is it to you whether your colonies accept or reject your constitutions? What has this to do either for or against your strength, or for or against your security? That unity, of which you exaggerate the advantages, is also nothing more than a vain pretence. You urge your laws to them when they are oppressed by them, and you trample upon them yourselves when they appeal to them in their favour. You tax yourselves, and you want to tax them. When the least encroachment is attempted upon this privilege, you exclaim with rage, you take up arms, and you are ready to devote yourselves to death, and yet you put the poniard to the throat of your fellow-citizen to compel him to renounce it. Your ports are open to all nations, and you shut up those of the colonists from them. Your merchandise is conveyed to all parts where you choose to send it, and theirs is forced to be sent to you. You manufacture, and you will not suffer them to do the fame. They have hides and they have iron, and you compel them to deliver these hides and this iron to you in the rough state. What you get at a low price, they must purchase from you at the price which your rapaciousness exacted. You sacrifice them to your merchants; and because your East India Company was in danger, it was necessary that their losses should be repaired by the Americans. And yet you call them your fellow-citizens, and it is thus you invite them to accept your constitution. This unity, this league, which seems so necessary to you, is nothing more than the league of the foolish animals in the fable, among which you have referred to yourself the part of the lion.

Perhaps you have only suffered yourselves to be in-
duced to fill the New World with blood and ravages, merely from a false point of honour. We like to per-
suade ourselves, that so many enormities have not been the consequence of a project coolly concerted. You have been told, that the Americans were nothing more than a base herd of cowards, whom the least threat would induce with fear and consternation to comply with every thing you chose to exact. Instead of those pusillanimous men, who had been described to you, and whom you had been taught to expect, you met with brave people, true Englishmen, and fellow-
citizens worthy of you. Was this a reason for increaing your anger? What! have your ancestors ad-
mired the Dutch shaking off the Spanish yoke; and shall you be astonished that your descendants, your countrymen, your brethren, those who felt your blood circulating in their veins, should rather choose to spill it than submit to the yoke, and should prefer death to a life of slavery? A stranger, over whom you would assume the same pretensions, would have disarmed you; if laying bare his breast he had said, Bury your dagger here, or leave me free. And yet you murder your bro-
ther, and you murder him without remorse, because he is your brother! Englishmen! what can be more ignominious than the ferociousness of a man proud of his liberty, and encroaching upon that of another? Must we be taught to believe, that the greatest ene-
my of liberty is the man who enjoys it? Alas! we are but too much disposed to believe it. Enemies to kings, you have all their haughtiness. Enemies to the royal prerogative, you display it in all parts. You show yourselves tyrants everywhere. Tyrants of na-
tions and of your colonies; if you should prevail in this contest, it is because Heaven will have been inatten-
tive to the vows that are addressed to it from all regions of the earth.

Since the seas have not swallowed up your proud fa-
tellites, tell me what will become of them, if there should arise in the New World an eloquent man, who should promise eternal salvation to those who should
perish sword in hand, the martyrs of liberty. Americans, let your priests be incessantly seen in your pulpits, with crowns in their hands, and showing you the heavens opened. Priests of the New World, it is time to expiate the ancient fanaticism, which hath deluged and ravaged America, by a fanaticism more fortunate, the offspring of politics and of liberty. But you will not deceive your fellow-citizens. God, who is the first principle of justice and of order, abhors tyrants. God hath imprinted in the heart of man the sacred love of liberty, and will not suffer that servitude should degrade and disfigure the most beautiful of his works. If apotheosis be due to man, it is certainly to him who fights and dies for his country. Place his image in your churches, and put it near your altars. It will be the worship of the country. Compose a political and religious calendar, in which every day shall be marked with the name of some one of those heroes who shall have spilt his blood to make you free. Your posterity will read them one day with a holy respect; they will say, these are the names of those who have set half the world at liberty, and who, exerting themselves for our happiness before we expelled, have prevented that at our birth we should hear the rattling of chains over our cradles.

When the cause of the colonies was debated in the national assemblies, we have heard many excellent pleadings pronounced in their favour. But perhaps the following would have been the most proper to address to them:

"I will say nothing to you, Gentlemen, of the justice or injustice of your pretensions. I am not so much a stranger to public affairs, to be ignorant that this preliminary examination, which is sacred in all other circumstances of life, would be improper and ridiculous in this. I will not enter into what expectations you may have of success, nor will I examine whether you will prevail in this cause, although this subject might appear of some importance to you, and might probably engage your attention. Not
will I even compare the advantages of your situation if you should succeed, with the consequences that will follow if you should fail. But I will suppose at once, that you have reduced the colonies to the degree of servitude which you require. I only wish to be informed how you will maintain them in it. Will it be by a standing army? But this army, which will exhaust you of men and money, will it follow or not the increase of population? There are but two answers to be made to this question, and of these two answers one seems to me to be absurd, and the other brings you back to the situation in which you now are. I have reflected much upon the matter, and if I mistake not, I have discovered the only reasonable and sure measure you have to pursue. This is, as soon as you shall have made yourselves masters of them, to stop the progress of population, since it appears to you more advantageous, more honourable, and more proper, to rule over a small number of slaves, than to have a nation of freemen for your equals and friends.

"But you will ask me, how is the progress of population to be stopped? The expedient might perhaps disgust men of weak and pusillanimous minds; but fortunately there are none such in this august assembly. This expedient is to put to death, without mercy, the greatest part of these unworthy rebels, and to reduce the rest to the condition of negroes. The brave and generous Spartans, so celebrated in ancient and modern history, have set you the example. Like them, with their faces muffled up in their cloaks, let our fellow-citizens and faithful lords go out clandestinely in the night-time, and massacre the children of our Helots by the side of their fathers and on the breasts of their mothers, leaving only a sufficient number of them alive for the labours, and for our security."

Englishmen, you shudder at this horrid proposal, and you ask what measure might be adopted; either conquerors or conquered, this is what you have to
BOOK XVIII.

If the resentment excited by your barbarities can be calmed, if the Americans can shut their eyes up on the ravages that surround them, if when walking over the ruins of their cities reduced to ashes, and of their habitations destroyed, over the bones of their fellow-citizens scattered in the field; if while they breathe the scent of blood which your hands have spilt in all parts, it can be possible that they should forget the enormities of your despotism; if they can allow themselves to put the least trust in your discourses, and can persuade themselves that you have seriously renounced the injustice of your pretensions, begin by recalling the allies who are in your pay; restore liberty to their ports, which you now keep blocked up; let your vessels depart from their coasts; and if there be a wise citizen among you, let him take an olive branch in his hand, let him present himself to them and say:

"O you, our fellow-citizens and our old friends, allow us to use this title; we have indeed profaned it, but our repentance makes us worthy of resuming it, and we shall hereafter aspire to the glory of preserving it; we confess, in the presence of Heaven, and of this earth, which have been witnesses of it, that our pretensions have been unjust, and our proceedings barbarous. Forget them as we do. Build up your ramparts and your fortresses. Assemble yourselves again in your peaceable habitations. Let us wipe out from our memory even the last drop of blood that has been spilt. We admire the generous spirit which hath directed you. It is the same to which, in similar circumstances, we have owed our salvation. It is particularly by these signs that we know you to be our fellow-citizens and our brethren: your wish is liberty, and you shall be free. You shall be free in all the extent that we ourselves have attached to this sacred name. It is not from us that you hold this right; we can neither give it nor take it away from you. You have received it as we have, from nature, which the crime and the
sword of tyrants can fight against, but cannot de-
stroy. We pretend not to any kind of superiority
over you; the honour of aspiring to an equality is
sufficiently glorious for us. We are too well ac-
quainted with the inestimable advantage of govern-
ing ourselves, to be desirous hereafter of depriving
you of it.

"Masters and supreme arbitrators of your own le-
gislation, if in your states you can create a better
form of government than ours is, we congratulate
you previously upon it. Your happiness will inspire
us with no other sentiment than the desire of imi-
tating you. Form for yourselves constitutions adapt-
ed to your climate, to your soil, and to the New
World, which you are civilizing. Who can be bet-
ter acquainted with your own wants than yourselves?
Proud and virtuous souls, such as yours are, ought
not to obey any laws except those which they give
themselves. Every other yoke would be unworthy
of them. Regulate your taxes yourselves. We only
ask of you to conform to our custom in the levying
of the impost. We will present you with a state of
our wants, and you will determine yourselves the
just proportion between your supplies and your
riches.

"Moreover, exercise your own industry as we do
ours, and that without any restraint. Make the best
advantage of the benefits of Nature, and of the fer-
tile regions which you inhabit. Let the iron of your
mines, the fleeces of your flocks, the skins of the
wild animals wandering in your forests, be prepared
in your own manufactures, and acquire in your
hands an additional value. Let your ports be free.
Let your commodities, and the productions of your
arts, be conveyed to all parts of the world, from
whence you may also derive all those which you are
in want of. This is one of our privileges, let it also
be yours. The empire of the ocean, which we have
subdued by two centuries of grandeur and glory,
belongs to you as well as to us. We will be united
B O O K

by the ties of commerce. You will bring your pro-
ductions to us, which we will accept in preference
to those of all other people; and we hope that you
will prefer ours to those of foreign nations, without,
however, being restrained to it by any law, unless by
that of the common interest, and by the title of fel-
low-citizens and friends.

Let your ships and ours, decorated with the same
flag, cover the seas; and when these friendly vessels
shall meet in the midst of the deserts of the ocean,
let shouts of joy be heard on both sides. Let peace
be renewed, and let concord last for ever between
us. We understand at length, that the chain of re-
ciprocal benevolence is the only one that can con-
cnect empires at such a distance, and that every other
principle of union would be unjust and precarious.

According to this new plan of everlasting friend-
ship, let agriculture, industry, legislation, the arts;
and that first of all sciences, that of doing the great-
est good to states and to mankind, be improved
among us. Let the account of your happiness in-
vite around your dwellings all the unfortunate men
upon the face of the earth. Let tyrants of all coun-
tries, and all oppressors, whether political or reli-
gious, know, that there exists a place upon the earth
where one may escape from their chains; where hu-
manity disgraced hath raised its head again; where
the harvests grow for the poor; where the laws are
no more than the guarantee of happiness; where re-
ligion is free, and conscience hath ceased to be a
slave; where Nature, in a word, seems to will to
justify herself for having created man; and where
government, for so long a time guilty over all the
earth, at length makes ample reparation for its
crimes. Let the idea of such an asylum alarm the
despots, and serve as a restraint to them; for if the
happiness of mankind be a matter of indifference to
them, they are at least ambitious and avaricious, and
are therefore anxious to preserve both their power
and their riches.
"We ourselves, O! our fellow-citizens and our friends, we ourselves will profit by your example. If our constitution should be impaired; if public wealth should corrupt the court, and the court the nation; if our kings, to whom we have given so many terrible lessons, should at length forget them; if we, who were an august people, were threatened with becoming the meanest and vilest of all herds by selling ourselves; the fight of your virtues and of your laws might perhaps reanimate us. It would recal to our degraded minds both the value and the grandeur of liberty: and if this example should be ineffectual; if slavery, the consequence of venal corruption, should one day establish itself in that same country, which hath been deluged with blood in the cause of liberty, and where our fathers have seen scaffolds erected for tyrants; we will then abandon this ungrateful land devoted to despotism, and we will leave the monster to reign over a defert. You will then receive us as friends and brethren. You will partake with us that soil, that air, as free as the souls of its generous inhabitants; and thanks to your virtues, we shall find England and a country again.

"Such are, brave fellow-citizens, both our hopes and our wishes. Receive, therefore, our oaths as the pledges of so holy an alliance. Let us invoke, to render this treaty more solemn, let us invoke our common ancestors, who have all been animated with the spirit of liberty as you are, and who have not feared to die in its defence. Let us call to witness the memory of the illustrious founders of your colonies, that of your august legislators, of the philosopher Locke, who was the first man upon earth who made a code of toleration, and of the venerable Penn, who first founded a city of brothers. The souls of these great men, whose eyes are undoubtedly in this moment fixed upon us, are worthy to preside at a treaty which is to secure the peace of two worlds. Let us swear in their presence, and upon
those arms with which you have fought us, to re-
main ever united and faithful; and when we have
pronounced all together an oath of peace, then let
these same arms be taken up, and let them be con-
veyed into a sacred deposit, where fathers will show
them to every rising generation: and there let them
be kept faithfully from age to age, in order to be
one day turned against the first man, whether Eng-
lish or American, who shall dare to propose the
breaking off of this alliance, equally useful and
equally honourable to both nations."

At this discourse methinks I hear the cities, the
hamlets, the fields, and all the shores of North Ame-
rica, resound with acclamations, and repeating with
emotion the name of their English brethren, the name
of the mother-country. Joyful fireworks succeed to
the conflagrations of discord; and in the meanwhile,
the nations, jealous of your power, will remain silent
in astonishment and despair.

The parliament is going to assemble, and what have
we to expect? Will the voice of reason be heard there,
or will they persevere in their folly? Will they be the
defenders of the people, or the instrument of the ty-
ranny of ministers? Will their acts be the decrees of a
free nation, or edicts dictated by the court? I attend
at the debates. These revered places resound with ha-
rangues full of moderation and wisdom. Soft perora-
tion seems to flow from the lips of the most distingui-
shed orators. They draw tears from the audience. My
heart is elated with hope, when suddenly a voice, the
organ of despotism and of war, suspends this delightful
emotion.

"Englishmen," faith this furious declaimer, "can
you hesitate one moment? They are your rights,
your most important interests; it is the glory of
your name which must be defended. These great
benefits are not attacked by a foreign power, but
threatened by a domestic enemy. The danger is
the greater, the outrage more sensibly felt.
"Between two rival nations in arms for mutual
pretensions, policy may sometimes suspend the fight. Against rebellious subjects the greatest fault is delay. All moderation is weakness. The standard of rebellion was raised by boldness; let it be pulled down by force. Let the sword of justice fall upon those who have unheathed it. Let us lose no time: to stifle revolutions, there is a first moment which must be seized upon. Let us not leave to astonished minds the leisure to accustom themselves to their crime; to the chiefs, the time to confirm their power; nor to the people, that of learning to obey new masters. The people in a rebellion are almost always drawn away by some foreign impulse; neither their fury, nor their hatred, nor their attachment, belong to them. Their passions are given to them as their weapons. Let us display before their eyes the strength and majesty of the British empire. They will soon fall down at our feet; they will pass on, in an instant, from terror to remorse, and from remorse to obedience. If we must have recourse to the severity of arms, let there be no quarter. In civil war, mercy is the most fallible of all virtues. When once the sword is drawn, it should never be sheathed till submission be attained. Henceforward it is theirs to answer to heaven and to earth for their own misfortunes. Let us consider, that a temporary severity, exercised in these rebellious regions, must secure to us obedience and peace for ages to come.

"To suspend our exertions, and to disarm us, we are repeatedly told, that this country is peopled with our fellow-citizens, our friends, and our brothers. What, shall we invoke in their favour names which they have outraged, and ties which they have broken? These names, and these sacred ties, are the things that accuse them, and pronounce them guilty. Since when do those titles, so revered, impose duties only upon us? Since when have rebellious children the right of taking up arms against their mother, of depriving her of her inheritance, and of tearing her to pieces? They talk of liberty. I re-
spect the name as much as they do: but, is this lib-erty independence? Is it the right of subverting a legislation, established and founded for two centu ries past? Is it the right of usurping all our rights? They talk of liberty; and I talk of the supremacy and the sovereign power of England.

What, if they had any complaints to make, if they refused to bear with us a small portion of the burden which oppress us, and to share in our ex penses, as we make them share in our grandeur, had they no other way of doing this but by rebellion, but by arms? They are called our fellow-citizens, and our friends; but I behold in them nothing more than our persecutors, and the most cruel enemies of our country. Undoubtedly, we have had common ancestors; but these respectable forefathers I myself call upon with confidence. If their shades could resume their place here, their indignation would be equal to ours. With what resentment would they virtuous citizens hear, that those of their descendants who had settled beyond the seas, had no sooner felt their own strength, than they had made the guilty trial of it against their country; and that they have turned her own benefits against her? All of them, yes, all of them, even that pacific set into whom their founder instilled the duty of never sleeping their hands in blood; they who had respected the rights and the lives of savage people; they who, in the enthusiasm of humanity, have broken the fetters of their slaves; at present, equally faithless to their country and to their religion, take up arms for the purpose of carnage, and to use them against you. They treat all men as their brethren; and you alone, of all people, are excluded from this title. They have taught the world, that the savage American, and the Negroes of Africa, are henceforth less strangers to them than the citizens of England.

Arm yourselves, therefore; avenge your offended rights, avenge your greatnesfs betrayed. Display that power, which makes itself be feared in Europe,
B o o k  
XVIII.

England resolves to reduce her colonies by force.

in Africa, and in India; and which hath so often astoni
fled America itself: and since between a so-
vereign people, and the subject that rebels, there
can henceforth be no other treaty than that of force,
let force determine the matter. Preferve and retake
that universe which belongs to you, and which in-
gratitude and boldness would deprive you of."

The sophisms of a vehement orator, supported by
the influence of the crown, and by national pride, ex-
tinguished in most of the representatives of the people
the desire of a pacific arrangement. The new resolu-
tions are similar to the former. Every thing in them
even bears, in a more decisive manner, the stamp of
ferociounfes and despotism. Armies are raised, and
fleets are equipped. The generals and the admirals
fail towards the New World, with destructive and fan-
guinary orders and plans. Nothing but unreferred
submission can preserve or put a stop to the ravages or-
dained against the colonies.

Till this memorable period, the Americans had con-
 fused themselves to a resistance authorized by the En-
 glish laws themselves. They had shewn no other am-
bition, but that of being maintained in the very lim-
ited rights which they had always enjoyed. Their
chiefs, even, who might be supposed to have more ex-
tensive views, had not yet ventured to speak to the
people of any thing more than an advantageous ac-
 commodation. By going further, they would have
been apprehensive of losing the confidence of the peo-
ple, attached by habit to an empire under the protec-
tion of which they had prospered. The report of the
great preparations that were making for war in the Old
Hemisphere, either to enslave or to reduce the New
one to ashes, extinguished what remains there might
be of affecion for the original government. It now
remained only to inspire the minds of men with ener-
y. This effect was produced by a work entitled Com-
mon Sense. We shall here give an account of the
ground-work of this doctrine, without confining our-
selves precisely to the order the writer hath adopted.

Vol. VI.
Never, says the author of this celebrated work, never did an interest of greater importance engage the attention of the nations. It is not the concern of a city, or of a province; it is that of an immense continent, and of a great part of the globe. It is not the concern of a day, it is that of ages. The present period will determine the fate of a long futurity; and many hundred years after the cessation of our existence, the fun, in giving light to this hemisphere, will shine either upon our shame or our glory. We have for a long time talked of reconciliation and peace; but every thing is changed. As soon as arms are taken up, as soon as the first drop of blood is spilt, the time for debate is past. One day hath given rife to a revolution. One day hath transported us into a new age.

Men of timorous minds, and who judge of the future by the past, think we are in want of the protection of England. She may be useful to a rising colony; she is become dangerous to a nation completely formed. Infancy stands in need of support, but youth must walk free, and with the elevation that is suitable to it. Between one nation and another, as between man and man, he who can have the power and the right to protect me, may also have the power and the will to do me an injury. I give up the protector, in order that I may not have a matter to fear.

In Europe, the people are too closely pressed together to admit this part of the globe to enjoy constant peace. The interests of courts and of nations are always clashing with each other. As the friends of England, we are obliged to have all her enemies. The dowry which this alliance will bring to America is perpetual war. Let us, therefore, separate. Neutrality, trade, and peace; such are the foundations of our grandeur.

The authority of Great Britain must sooner or later have an end. This is the operation of nature, of necessity, and of time. The English government, therefore, can only give us a temporary constitution; and we shall only bequeath to our posterity an American
state, burdened with diffusions and debts. If we be desirous of securing our happiness, let us separate. If we be fathers, and if we love our children, let us separate. Laws and liberty, such is the inheritance we owe them.

England is at too great a distance from us to govern us. What, shall we always cross two thousand leagues to demand the protection of laws, to claim justice, to justify ourselves of imaginary crimes, and meanly to solicit the court and the ministry of a foreign climate? Must we wait whole years for every answer, supposing it were not even too often injustice that we were obliged to go in search of across the ocean? No; for a great state, the centre and the seat of power must necessarily be in the state itself. Nothing but the despotism of the East can possibly have accustomed the people thus to receive laws from distant masters, or from baahaws, who are the representatives of invisible tyrants. But remember, that the more the distance increases, the heavier is the weight of despotism; and that the people, then deprived of almost all the benefits of government, have none but the misfortunes and vices of it.

Nature hath not created a world, in order to subject it to the inhabitants of an island in another hemisphere. Nature hath established laws of equilibrium, which she follows in all parts, in the heavens as on the earth. By the rule of quantity and of distance, America can belong only to itself.

There is no government without a mutual confidence between him who commands and him who obeys; otherwise all is over, the communication is interrupted, and cannot possibly be renewed. England hath shown too evidently that she wanted to command us as slaves; America, that she was equally sensible of her rights and her strength. Each of them hath betrayed its secret; and from that moment no treaty can take place. It would be signed by hatred and mistrust; hatred which cannot forgive, and mistrust, which in its nature is irreconcilable.

L ii
Would you know what would be the consequence of an accommodation? Your ruin. You stand in need of laws, and will not obtain them. Who is to give them to you? The English nation? But she is jealous of your increase. The king? He is your enemy. Yourselves, in your assemblies? Do you not recollect, that every legislation is subject to the negative right of the monarch who wishes to subdue you? This right would be a terrible one, incessantly militating against you. Should you make demands, they will be eluded; should you form plans of grandeur and commerce, they would become an object of alarm for the mother-country. Your government would be nothing more than a clandestine war, such as that of an enemy who wishes to destroy without fighting; it would be, in political economy, a slow and concealed afflammation, which gives rise to languor, which prolongs and entertains weakness, and which, by a destructive art, keeps the body equally suspended between life and death. If you should submit to England, such will be your fate.

We have a right to take up arms. Our rights are necessity, a just defence; our misfortunes, those of our children, the enormities committed against us. Our rights are our august title of nation. The sword must decide between us. The tribunal of war is henceforth the only tribunal that exists for us. If we must fight, let it at least be for a cause that is worthy, and which will reward us for the lavishment of our riches and our blood. What! shall we expose ourselves to see our cities destroyed, our countries ravaged, our families put to the sword, merely to obtain an honourable accommodation; that is to say, to entreat for new chains, and to cement ourselves the edifice of our slavery? What! shall it be by the light of conflagrations; shall it be over the graves of our fathers, of our children, and of our wives, that we shall sign a treaty with our oppressors? And will they, covered over with our blood, condescend to forgive us? Alas! we should then be nothing more than a vile object of astonish-
ment to Europe, of indignation to America, and of contempt even to our enemies. If we can obey, we have had no right to contend. Liberty alone can absolve us. Liberty, and entire liberty, is the only aim worthy of our efforts and of our perils. What do I say? It belongs to us from this moment. It is in the bloody plains of Lexington that our claims are registered; it is there that England hath torn in pieces that contract which united us to her. Yes, at the instant when England fired the first shot against us, Nature herself proclaimed us free and independent.

Let us avail ourselves of the benefits we receive from our enemies. The youth of nations is the age the most favourable to their independence. It is the period of energy and vigour. Our minds are not yet surrounded with that parade of luxury which serves as a hostage to tyranny. Our limbs are not yet enervated by the arts of effeminacy. There is none of that nobility bearing sway among us, which, even by its constitution, is allied to kings; which is no further attached to liberty, than when it can make it the means of oppression; that nobility, eager of rights and titles, for whom, in times of revolution and crisis, the people are nothing more than an instrument, and for whom the supreme power is a corrupter always at hand.

Your colonies are formed of plain and courageous, laborious and proud men; men who are at once the proprietors and the cultivators of their lands. Liberty is the first of their wants. Rustic labours have previously inured them to war. Public enthusiasm will bring forth talents unknown. It is in revolutions that the minds of men are enlarged, that heroes make their appearance, and take their post. Recal Holland to your memory, and the multitude of extraordinary men to whom the contest for her liberty gave birth: such is your example. Recollect her success: such is your preface.

Let our first measure be to form a constitution that may unite us. The moment is come. Later than this,
it would be abandoned to an uncertain futurity, and to the caprices of chance. The more we acquire men and riches, the more barriers will arise between us. How shall we then conciliate so many interests and so many provinces? For a union of this kind, it is necessary that every people should be sensible at once of the weakness and strength of the whole. Great calamities or great apprehensions must prevail. Then it is, that among nations, as among individuals, those vigorous and rooted friendships take place, which reciprocally bind the souls and the interest of men. Then it is, that one single spirit universally prevailing, forms the genius of states; and that all the scattered forces become, by being collected, one sole and terrible force. Thanks to our persecutors, we are now at that period; and if we have courage, it will be a fortunate one for us. Few nations have seized the favourable moment for the formation of their government. If this moment should once escape, it never returns; and men are consequently punished with ages of anarchy and slavery. Let not a similar fault prepare similar regrets for us, which would be ineffectual.

Let us therefore seize upon the moment which is the only one for us. It is in our power to form the finest constitution that ever existed among men. You have read in your sacred writings the history of mankind buried under a general deluge of the globe. One single family survived, and was commissioned by the Supreme Being to renew the earth. We are that family. Despotism hath overwhelmed every thing; and we can renew the world a second time.

At this instant, we are going to determine the fate of a race of men more numerous, perhaps, than all the people of Europe taken together. Shall we wait till we become the prey of the conqueror, and till the hopes of the universal shall be frustrated? Let us suppose, that all the future generations of the world have at this moment their eyes fixed upon us, and are asking us for liberty. We are going to settle their def-
tiny. If we betray them, they will one day walk over our graves with their chains, and perhaps load us with imprecations.

Remember a work that hath appeared among us, and the motto of which was, Union or Death.

Let us therefore unite, and begin by declaring our Independence. That alone can efface the title of rebellious subjects, which our insolent oppressors dare to belch upon us. That alone can make us rise to that dignity that is our due, ensure us allies among the powers, and imprint respect even on our enemies; and if we treat with them, that alone can give us the right of treating with that right and majesty which belongs to a nation.

But I will repeat it: Let us lose no time. Our uncertainty occasions our weakness. Let us dare to be free, and we are so. When we are ready to get over this step, we start back. We all look at each other with anxious curiosity. It seems as if we were astonished at our boldness, and frightened at our courage. But it is no longer time to calculate. In great affairs, and where there is but one great measure to adopt, too much circumspection ceases to be prudence. Whatever is extreme demands an extreme resolution. Then the most enterprising steps are the most prudent; and the excess of boldness becomes even the means and the warrant of success.

Such was the basis of the sentiments and ideas diffused in this work. They confirmed in their principles those bold men, who for a long time past had asked to be entirely detached from the mother-country. The timid citizens, who had hitherto hesitated, at length determined on this great separation. The wish for independence had a sufficient number of partisans, to enable the general congress to declare it on the 4th of July 1776.

O that I had received from nature the genius and eloquence of the celebrated orators of Athens and Rome! With what sublimity, with what enthusiasm should I not speak of those generous men, who, by
their patience, their wisdom, and their courage, have erected this grand edifice. Hancock, Franklin, and the two Adamses, were the principal persons in this interesting scene; but they were not the only ones, posterity will be acquainted with them all. Their celebrated names will be transmitted to it by a more fortunate pen than mine. The marble and the bronze will exhibit them to the remotest ages. At sight of them, the friend of liberty will feel his eyes filled with pleasing tears, and his heart will bound with joy. Under the bust of one of them has been written, he took from heaven its thunder, and from tyrants their sceptre. They will all partake with him the last words of this encomium.

Heroic region! mine advanced age will not allow me to visit thee! I shall never be present amidst the respectable persons who compose your Areopagus. I shall never assist at the deliberations of your congreff. I shall die without having seen the residence of toleration, of morality, and of sound laws; of virtue, and of liberty. A free and sacred land will not cover my ashes; but I could have wished it: and my last words shall be vows addressed to Heaven for your prosperity. Although America was assured that her conduct would meet with universal approbation, yet she thought it her duty to lay before the nations the motives of it. She published her manifesto *, in which we read; the history of the English nation, and of its king, will offer to posterity, in speaking of them and of us, nothing but a heap of outrages and usurpations, all equally tending to the establishment of absolute tyranny in these provinces.

This history will say, that its monarch hath refused to give his consent to laws which were the most salutary and the most necessary for the public good. That he hath transferred the assemblies to inconvenient places, at a distance from the records, in order to bring the deputies more easily into his views.

* The English reader will easily perceive that this account is not taken literally from the original manifesto published by the Americans.
IN THE EAST AND WEST INDIES.

That he hath several times dissolved the chamber of the representatives, because the rights of the people were frenuously defended there.

That after the dissolution, the states have been left too long without representatives, and were consequently exposed to the inconveniences resulting from the want of an assembly.

That he hath endeavoured to put a stop to population, by making it difficult for a foreigner to be naturalized, and by requiring too much for the lands of which he granted the property.

That he hath put the judges too much under his dependence, by enacting that they should hold their offices and their salaries from him alone.

That he hath created new places, and filled those regions with a multitude of agents, who devoured our substance, and disturbed our tranquility.

That in time of full peace he hath kept up considerable forces in the midst of us, without the consent of the legislative power.

That he hath rendered the military power independent of, and even superior to, the civil law.

That he hath settled with corrupt men to lodge armed soldiers in our houses, and to shelter them from punishment for the murders which they might commit in America; to destroy our trade in all the parts of the globe; to impose taxes on us without our consent; to deprive us in several cases of our trials by juries; to transport us beyond seas, that we might be brought to trial there; to take away our characters, suppress our best laws, and alter the basis and the form of our government; to suspend our own legislation, in order to give us other laws.

That he hath himself abdicated his government over the provinces of America, by declaring that we had forfeited his protection, and by waging war against us.

That he hath caused our coasts to be ravaged, our ports to be destroyed, and our people to be massacred.
That he hath compelled our fellow-citizens, taken prisoners at sea, to bear arms against their country, to become the assassins of their friends and their brethren, or to perish themselves by those beloved hands.

That he hath fomented intestine divisions amongst us, and endeavoured to excite against our peaceful inhabitants barbarous savages, accustomed to massacre, without distinction of rank, of sex, or of age, every person they met with.

That at this time mercenary and foreign armies have arrived on our shores, who were intended to consummate the work of desolation and of death.

And that a prince, whose character was thus marked by all the features of tyranny, was not fit to govern a free people.

A proceeding which dissolved the ties formed by consanguinity, by religion, and by habit, ought to have been supported by a great unanimity, and by prudent and vigorous measures. The united states of America gave themselves a confederate constitution, which added all the exterior strength of the monarchy to all the interior advantages of a republican government.

Each province had an assembly formed by the representatives of the different districts, and who were entrusted with the legislative power. The executive power was vested in the president. It was his right and his duty to hear the complaints of all the citizens, to convene them when circumstances required it, to provide for the equipment and subsistence of the troops, and to concert the operations with their chiefs. He was placed at the head of a secret committee, whose business it was to keep up a constant intercourse with the general congress. The time of his administration is limited to two years, but the laws allowed it to be prolonged.

The provinces were not obliged to give an account of their administration to the great council of the nation, although it was composed of the deputies of all
the colonies. The superiority of the general congress over each particular congress was limited to what concerned policy and war.

But some people have judged that the institution of this body was not so well planned as the legislation of the provinces. It should seem, indeed, that confederate states, who emerge from the condition of subjects to rise to independence, cannot without danger entrust their delegates with an unlimited power of making peace or war. For if these were either faithless or not much enlightened, they might again subject the whole state to the same yoke from which it attempts to free itself. It seems that in the instant of a revolution, the public wishes cannot be too much known, nor too literally explained. It is undoubtedly necessary, say they, that all the measures, all the operations which concur to the common attack or defence, should be decided by the common representatives of the body of the state; but the continuation of the war, and the conditions of peace, ought to be debated in each province; and the deliberations should be transmitted to the congress by the deputies, who should submit the opinion of their provinces to the majority of votes. Lastly, it is added, that if it be right in established governments for the people to confide in the wisdom of the senate, it is necessary in a state where the constitution is forming, where the people, still uncertain of their fate, require their liberty sword in hand, that all the citizens should continually attend at the councils in the army, and in the public places, and that they should always keep a watchful eye over the representatives to whom they have entrusted their destiny.

Though these principles be generally true, it may however be answered, that it was difficult perhaps to apply them to the new republic formed by the Americans. The case is not with them as with the confederate republics we see in Europe, I mean Holland and Switzerland, which only occupy a territory of small extent, and where it is an easy matter to establish a rapid communication between the several provinces. The
same thing may be said of the confederacies of ancient Greece. These states were situated at a small distance from each other, almost entirely confined within the limits of the Peloponnesus, or within the circuit of a narrow Archipelago. But the united states of America, dispersed over an immense continent, occupying in the New World a space of near fifteen degrees, separated by deserts, mountains, gulfs, and by a vast extent of coasts, cannot enjoy so speedy a communication. If congress were not empowered to decide upon political interests without the particular deliberations of each province; if upon every occasion of the least importance, and every unforeseen event, it were necessary for the representatives to receive new orders, and as it were a new power, this body would remain in a state of inactivity. The distances to be traversed, together with the length and the multiplicity of the debates, might be too frequently prejudicial to the general good.

Besides, it is never in the infancy of a constitution, and in the midst of the great commotions for liberty, that we need apprehend that a body of representatives should betray, either from corruption or weakness, the interests with which they are entrusted. The general spirit will rather be inflamed and exalted in such a body. There it is that the genius of the nation resides in all its vigour. Chosen by the esteem of their fellow-citizens, chosen at a time when every public function is dangerous, and every vote an honour; placed at the head of those who will eternally compose this celebrated Areopagus, and on that account naturally induced to consider public liberty as the work of their own hands, they must be possessed with the enthusiasm of founders, whose pride it is to engrave for future centuries their names upon the frontispiece of the august monument which is eroding. The apprehensions which the favourers of the contrary system might have upon this account, appear therefore to be ill-founded.

I will go further still. It might happen that a peo-
ple who fight for their liberty, fatigued with a long
and painful struggle, and more affected with the dan-
gers of the moment than with the idea of their fu-
ture happiness, might feel their courage damped, and
might one day, perhaps, be tempted to prefer de-
pendence and peace to a tempestuous independence,
which would expose them to dangers and blood-
shed. It is then that it would be advantageous to
those people to have deprived themselves of the pow-
er of making peace with their oppressors, and to have
detected that power in the hands of a senate which
they had chosen to be the organ of their will at a
time when that will was free, haughty and courage-
ous. It seems as if they had told their senate at the
time of their institution, we raise the standard of war
against our tyrants; if our arms should grow weary
of the fight, if we should ever be capable of degrad-
ing ourselves so far as to sue for repose, support us
against our weaknesses: do not attend to wishes un-
worthy of ourselves, which we previously disavow;
and do not pronounce the name of peace till our
chains shall be entirely broken.

Accordingly, if we consult the history of republics,
we shall find that the multitude have almost always the
impetuosity and the ardour of the first moment; but
that it is only in a small number of men chosen and
fit to serve as chiefs, in whom reside those constant
and vigorous resolutions which proceed with a firm
and certain step towards a great aim, and which are
never altered, but obstinately struggle against cala-
mities, fortune, and mankind.

However this may be, and whatever side we may
take in this political discussion, the Americans had
not yet formed their system of government, when in
the month of March, Hopkins was carrying off from
the English islands of Providence a very numerous
artillery, and a great quantity of warlike stores; when
at the beginning of May, Carleton drove away from
Canada the Provincials who were employed in reduc-
ing Quebec, in order to finish the conquest of that
great possession; when in June, Clinton and Parker were so vigorously driven back upon the coasts of South America. The declaration of independence was followed by greater scenes.

Howe had succeeded the feeble Gage. It was even the new general who had evacuated Boston. Received in Halifax on the second of April, he quitted it the tenth of June to go to Staten Island, where he was successively joined by the land and sea forces which he expected; and on the 28th of August he landed without opposition upon Long Island, under the protection of a fleet commanded by the admiral his brother. The Americans did not display much more vigour in the inland countries than upon the coasts. After a trifling resistance and considerable losses they took refuge on the continent, with a facility which a conqueror, who had known how to improve his advantages, would never have given them.

The new republicans forsaking the city of New York with still greater facility than they had evacuated Long Island, and they had retired to Kingsbridge, where everything seemed disposed for an obstinate resistance.

Had the English followed up their first success with that activity which the circumstances required, the new levies which were opposed to them would infallibly have been dispersed or obliged to lay down their arms. Six weeks were allowed them to recover themselves, and they did not abandon their intrenchments till the night of the 2d of November, when they were convinced, by the motions which were made under their eyes, that their camp was going to be attacked.

Washington their chief did not choose to trust the fate of his country to an action which might have been, and which must naturally have been, decisive against the great interests he was entrusted with. He knew that delays are always favourable to the inhabitants of a country and fatal to strangers. This conviction determined him to fall back upon the Jerseys with the
intention of protracting the war. Favoured by the winter, by the knowledge of the country, by the nature of the territory, which deprived discipline of part of its advantages, he might flatter himself that he should be able to cover the greatest part of this fertile province, and to keep the enemy at a distance from Pennsylvania. All of a sudden he found his colours forlorn by soldiers, who were engaged for no more than six or even three months, and from an army of five-and-twenty thousand men, he scarcely kept together two thousand five hundred, with whom he found himself very fortunate to escape beyond the Delaware.

Without losing a moment the royal troops ought to have crossed the river in pursuit of this small number of fugitives, and to have completed the dispersion of them. If the five thousand men destined for the conquest of Rhode Island had gone up the river upon the ships they were on board of, the junction of the two corps would have been made without opposition in Philadelphia itself, and the new republic would have been extinguished in the famous and interesting city which had given it birth.

The English general was perhaps cenured at that time for having been too timorous and too circumspect in the operations of the field. It is however certain, that he was rash in the distribution of his winter-quarters. He settled them as if there had not been a single individual in America, who either had the power or the inclination to molest them.

This presumption emboldened the militia of Pennsylvania, of Maryland, and of Virginia, who had united for their common safety. The 25th of December they crossed the Delaware, and fell unawares upon Trentown, which was occupied by fifteen hundred of the twelve thousand Hessians who had been so safely sold to Great Britain by their avaricious master. This corps was either massacred, taken, or entirely dispersed. A week after, three English regiments were also driven out of Princes Town, but not without having
BOOK shown more courage than the foreign troops in their pay. These unexpected events reduced the enemies of America in Jersey to the posts of Amboy and of Brunswick; and they were even much harassed there during the remainder of the bad season. The effect of great passions and great dangers is frequently to afflict the soul, and to plunge it in a kind of stupor which deprives it of the use of its powers. By degrees it comes to itself and recovers. All its faculties, suspended for a moment, exert themselves with greater energy. It strains all its springs, and its strength becomes equal to its situation. In a great multitude some individuals first experience this effect, and it is quickly communicated to all. This revolution had been accomplished in the confederate states, and armed men issued forth from all quarters of them.

The campaign of 1777 was opened very late. The English army despairing of making a road to Pennsylvania through the Jerseys, embarked at length on the 23d of July, and arrived by Chesapeak Bay, in a country which their generals might be censured for not having invaded the preceding year. Their march was not interrupted till they came to Brandenwine, where they attacked and defeated the Americans on the 11th of September, and arrived on the 30th at Philadelphia, which had been abandoned by congress on the 25th, and by a great number of the inhabitants some days sooner or later.

This conquest was attended with no consequences. The conquerors beheld nothing but hatred and devastation around them. Confined in a very circumscribed space, they met with insurmountable obstacles in extending themselves upon an uncultivated territory. Their gold even did not furnish them with resources from the neighbouring districts, and they could only acquire their subsistence from across the seas. Wearyed with a confinement which had lasted nine months, they determined to regain New York by the Jerseys; and this long and dangerous retreat was accomplished under the command of Clinton, who had succeeded
Howe, with less loss than they would have suffered from a more experienced enemy.

While the English were languishing in Pennsylvania a vast scene was opening in the more northern countries of America. In the month of May 1776, Carleton had driven away the provincials from Canada, and destroyed in October the ships of war which had been constructed upon lake Champlain. This success carried Burgoyne to Ticonderoga, in the month of July of the ensuing year. At his approach, the garrison of four thousand men abandoned this important post with the loss of their artillery, ammunition, and rear guard.

The English general was naturally presumptuous, and his boldness was increased by the evident signs of weakness. He had conceived the design of uniting the troops of Canada with those of New York by the shores of Hudson’s Bay. This project was great and daring. Had it succeeded it would have divided South America into two parts, and perhaps have ended the war. But in order to make it succeed, it was necessary that while one army was going down the river another should be coming up it. This plan having failed, Burgoyne ought to have perceived from the first that his enterprise was chimerical. It became more so every march. His communications became more distant and his provisions were diminishing. The courage of the Americans being revived, they assembled and closed him on all sides. At length this unfortunate army found itself surrounded on the 13th October at Saratoga, and the nations heard with astonishment, that six thousand of the best disciplined troops of the Old Hemisphere, had laid down their arms before the husbandmen of the New Hemisphere, under the conduct of the fortunate Gates. Those who recollected that the Swedes of Charles XII. who had till then been invincible, had capitulated to the Russians, who were still in a state of barbarism, did not censure the English troops, and only blamed the imprudence of their general.

Vol. VI.
This event, so decisive in the opinion of our politicians, was attended with no greater consequences than had resulted from actions less favourable to the American arms. After three years spent in battles, devastation, and massacres, affairs were much in the same situation as they were a fortnight after the commencement of hostilities. Let us endeavour to investigate the cause of this strange singularity.

England, accustomed to stormy times in her own country, did not at first perceive all the dangerous tendency of the tempest which was rising in her distant possessions. Her troops had been a long time insulted at Boston. An authority independent of her own had been formed in Massachusetts’s Bay; the other colonies were preparing to follow that example before administration had seriously attended to those great objects. When they were laid before parliament they excited much clamours in both houses, and there was no end to the debates. The senate of the nation at length determined, that the country which rebelled against its decrees should be compelled by force to submit to them. But this violent resolution was carried into execution with that delay which is but too common in free states.

England was generally of opinion, that defenceless coasts and countries, which were entirely laid open, could not long resist her fleets and her armies. It did not appear to her, that this expedition would continue long enough to give the peaceful cultivators of America time to instruct themselves in the art of war. She did not take into consideration the climate, the rivers, the defiles, the woods, the morasses, the want of subsistence increasing in proportion as one advanced in the inland countries, together with an infinite number of other natural obstacles which would impede any rapid progress in a country three-fourths of which were uncultivated, and which ought to be considered as a recent one.

The successes were still more retarded by the influence of moral causes.
Great Britain is the region of parties. Her kings have most generally been convinced of the necessity of abandoning the direction of affairs to the prevailing faction, by which they were commonly conducted with intelligence and vigour, because the principal agents who composed it were animated with one common interest. At that time, to the public spirit which prevails more in England than in any European government, was added the strength of faction, and that spirit of party which is perhaps the first spring of a republic, and which so powerfully agitates the soul, because it is always the effect of some passion. George III. in order to free himself from this long tutelage, composed his council of members unconnected with each other. This innovation was not attended with great inconveniences, as long as events moved on in their ordinary circle. But when the American war had complicated a machine which was already too intricate, it was perceived that it had no longer that power and that union so necessary to accomplish great things. The wheels, too much divided, wanted, as it were, one common impulsion and a centre of motion. Their progression was alternately tardy and precipitate. The administration resembled too much that of an ordinary monarchy, when the principle of action doth not come from the head of an active and intelligent monarch, who himself collects under his own management all the springs of government. There was no longer any harmony in the enterprises, nor was there any more in the execution of them.

A ministry without harmony and without concord was exposed to the attacks incessantly renewed of an adverse body of men united and compacted together. Their resolutions, whatever they might be, were opposed with ridicule and with argument. They were censured for having acted with violence against citizens at a distance; and they would have been equally censured, had they treated them with more circumspection. Even those who in parliament exclaimed the most vehemently against the treatment the Americans
had met with, those who encouraged them the most to resistance, those who perhaps sent them secret succours, were as much averse from their independence, as the minister whom they were incessantly endeavouring to degrade or to render odious. If the opposition had succeeded in disquieting the prince of his confidants, or had prevailed upon him to sacrifice them on account of the clamours of the nation, the project of conquering America would still have been purged; but with more dignity, with more strength and with measures perhaps better adapted. But as the reduction of the provinces was not to be accomplished by them, they chose rather that this immense part of the British empire should be separated from it, than that it should remain attached to it by any other means than theirs.

The generals did not repair, by their activity, the errors of these contradictions, and of the delays which were the consequence of them. They granted too long repose to the soldiers; they waited in deliberation the time which they should have employed in action; they marched up to new raised troops with as much precaution as they would have taken against veterans. The English, who are so impetuous in their factions, display on all other occasions a calm and cool character. They require violent passions to agitate them. When this stimulus is wanting, they calculate all their motions. Then they conduct themselves according to the tenor of their character, which in general, except in the arts of imagination and taste, is universally mechanical and prudent. In war, their valour never loses sight of military principles, and leaves little to chance. They scarce ever leave upon their flanks, or in their rear, any thing that can give them uneasiness. This system hath its advantages, especially in a narrow and confined country, in a country thick set with fortresses or military posts. But, in the present circumstances, and on the vast continent of America, against a people to whom one should not have allowed time to fortify themselves, nor to inure themselves to war.
the perfection of the art would perhaps have been, to lay it entirely aside; to substitute to it an impetuous and rapid march, and that boldness which at once astonishes, strikes, and overthrows. It was in the first instances especially, that it would have been proper to impress the Americans, not with the terror of ravages, which irritate rather than they frighten a people armed for their liberty; but with that which arises from the superiority of talents and of arms, and which a warlike people of the Old World ought naturally to have carried into the New one. The confidence of victory would soon have been victory itself. But by too much circumspection, by too servile an attachment to principles and to rules, commanders of little skill failed in rendering that service to their country which he expected, and had a right to expect from them.

The troops, on the other hand, did not press their officers to lead them on to action. They arrived from a country, where the cause which had obliged them to cross so many seas excited no concern. It was, in the eyes of the people, an effervescence which would have no consequences. They confounded the debates which it occasioned in parliament, with other debates, which were often of little importance. It was not talked of; and if any person happened to mention it, they appeared to be no more interested in it, than in that kind of news which, in great cities, employs the lounging hours of every day. The indifference of the nation had communicated itself to those who were to defend their rights. Perhaps even they were apprehensive of gaining too decisive an advantage over fellow-citizens, who had only taken up arms to prevent slavery. In all the monarchies of Europe, the soldier is only the instrument of despotism, and his sentiments are analogous. He thinks he belongs to the throne, and not to his country; and a hundred thousand men in arms are nothing more than one hundred thousand disciplined and terrible slaves. The habit even of exercising the empire of force, to which every thing
gives way, contributes to extinguish in them all idea of liberty. Finally, the discipline, and military sub-
ordination, which, at the command of one single man, puts thousands in motion; which doth not suffer the soldier either to see or to ask questions; and which, on the first signal, makes it a rule to kill or to die, tends completely to change in them those sentiments into principles, and makes them as it were the moral syl-
tem of their condition. It is not the same in England. The influence of the constitution is so powerful, that it extends even to the troops. A man there is a citi-
zen before he is a soldier. Public opinion agreeing with the constitution, honours one of these titles, and thinks little of the other. Accordingly, we see from the history of the revolutions that have happened in this turbulent island, that the English soldier, though enlisted for life, preserves a passion for political liberty, the idea of which cannot be easily conceived in our regions of slavery.

How is it possible that the ardour which was want-
ing to the British troops should have animated the Hessians, the Brunswickers, and the other Germans, ranged under the same standards, and all of them equally dissatisfied with the sovereigns who had sold them, dissatisfied with the prince who had purchased them, dissatisfied with the nation that paid them, and dissatisfied with their comrades, who defiled them as mercenaries? Besides, they had also in the enemy’s camp, brothers whom they were afraid of destroying, and by whose hands they would not have wished to be wounded.

The spirit of the British armies was also changed, in consequence of a revolution which had taken place in the manners of the nation for about fifteen or eighteen years past. The successes of the late war; the exten-
sion commerce had received after the peace; the great acquisitions made in the East Indies; all these means of wealth had accumulated uninterruptedly prodigious riches in Great Britain. These treasures kindled the desire of fresh enjoyments. The great went in search
of this art in foreign countries, especially in France, and brought with them the poison of it into their own country. From the men of high rank, it soon diffused itself among all orders of men. To a haughty, simple, and reserved character, succeeded the taste for parade, dissipation, and gallantry. The travellers who had formerly visited this island, so celebrated, thought themselves under another sky. The contagion had even gained the troops; they carried into the New Hemisphere that passion they had contracted in the Old one, for play, the inclination for all the conveniences of life, and for high living. In quitting the coasts, they should have renounced all the superfluities to which they were attached; and that taste for luxury, that ardour, so much the more violent as it was recent, did not encourage them to follow into the inland parts, men who were always ready to fall back upon them. Ye new politicians, who advance with so much confidence, that the manners have no kind of influence upon the destiny of states; that for them the measure of their grandeur is that of their riches; that the luxury of peace, and the voluptuous pursuits of the citizen, cannot weaken the effect of those great machines which are called armies, and the sensible and terrible impulse of which European discipline hath brought to so great perfection: you who, to support your opinion, turn your eyes away from the ashes of Carthage and the ruins of Rome, suspend at least your judgment at the account I am giving you, and acknowledge that there may perhaps be opportunities of success, which luxury prevents us from availing ourselves of. Acknowledge that for troops even that are brave, it has been often the first source of victory, that they had no wants. It is too easy a matter, perhaps, to have nothing but death to face. Nations corrupted by wealth have a more difficult trial to undergo; that of supporting the privation of their pleasures.

Let us add to all these reasons, that the instruments of war do not often arrive across the seas in the proper seasons for action. Let us add, that the councils of
George III. had too much influence over military operations, which were to be carried on at so great a distance from them; and we shall then comprehend most of the obstacles which impeded the success of the ruinous efforts of the mother-country against the liberty of the colonies.

But wherefore did not America herself repulse from her shores the Europeans who were bringing death or slavery to her?

This New World was defended by regular troops, which at first had been enlisted only for three or six months, and afterwards for three years, or even for all the time hostilities might last. It was defended by citizens, who only took the field when their particular province was either invaded or threatened. Neither the standing army, nor the militia assembled for a time, breathed the military spirit. They were planters, merchants, lawyers, exercised only in the arts of peace, and led on to danger by commanders as little versed as their subalterns in the very complicated science of military actions. In this state of things, what hope was there of their acting with advantage against men grown old in discipline, trained to evolutions, skilled in tactics, and abundantly provided with all the instruments necessary for a brisk attack, and for an obstinate resistance?

Enthusiasm alone could have surmounted such difficulties. But did it really exist more in the colonies than in the mother country?

The general opinion in England was, that the parliament had essentially the right of taxing all the regions which constituted a part of the British empire. At the commencement of the troubles, there were not perhaps a hundred individuals who would have called this authority in question. Nevertheless, the refusals of the Americans to acknowledge it, did not set the minds of men against them. There was no hatred entertained against them, even after they had taken up arms to support their pretensions. As the labours in the inland parts of the kingdom were not affected, and
as the thunder was only heard at a distance, every one attended peaceably to his own affairs, or devoted himself quietly to his pleasures. All of them expected, without impatience, the end of a scene, the termination of which did not indeed appear uncertain to them. The ferment must at first have broken out with more violence in the New than in the Old Hemisphere. Hath ever the odious name of tyranny, or the pleasing word of independence, been pronounced to the nations, without raising emotions in them? But was this ardour kept up? If the imaginations of men had been maintained in their first state of commotion, would it not have been the business of a rising authority to attend to the suppression of the excess of it? But, far from having boldness to restrain it, it was cowardice they had to guard against. They punished desertion with death, and stained the standard of liberty with affrontations. They refused to exchange prisoners, for fear of increasing in the troops their inclination to surrender at the first summons. They were reduced to the necessity of creating tribunals, appointed to prosecute their generals or their lieutenants who should abandon too lightly the posts committed to their trust. It is true, an old man of fourscore years of age, whom they wanted to send back to his home, exclaimed, My death may be useful; I shall cover with my body a younger man than I am. It is true that Putnam said to a loyalist who was his prisoner, Return to your commander; and if he should ask you how many troops I have, tell him I have enough; that if even he should beat them, there will remain enough; and that he will experience, in the end, that I shall have enough for him, and for the tyrants whom he serves. These sentiments were heroic, but rare; and they became less common every day.

The intoxication was never general, and indeed could only be temporary. Of all the causes of energy which have produced so many revolutions on the globe, none existed in the North of America. No outrage had been committed either against religion or
the laws. The blood of martyrs and of citizens had not flowed upon the scaffolds. The morals had received no insult. The manners and the customs, none of those objects to which the people are so much attached, had been delivered up to ridicule. Arbitrary power had not dragged any inhabitant from the midst of his family and his friends, to plunge him into the horrors of a prison. Public order had not been subverted. The principles of administration had not been altered; and the maxims of government had remained always the same. The only circumstance was to know, whether the mother-country had or had not the right, directly or indirectly, of laying a slight tax on the colonies; for the accumulated grievances mentioned in the manifesto arose only from this first grievance. This question, which is almost a metaphysical one, was scarce proper to raise an insurrection among the multitude, or at least to interest them strongly in a quarrel, for which they saw their lands deprived of the affluences necessary to fertilize them, their harvests ravaged, and their fields covered with the dead bodies of their relations, or stained with their own blood. To these calamities, which were occasioned by the royal troops on the coast, others were soon added, still more insupportable, in the inland parts of the country.

Whenever the restlessness of the courts of London and Versailles had disturbed North America, those two powers had always drawn into their sanguinary contests the wandering inhabitants of this part of the New Hemisphere. Informed by experience how much weight these hordes of savages could throw into the scale, the English and the colonists resolved equally to employ them to their mutual destruction.

Carleton first endeavoured to put arms into the hands of these barbarians in Canada. They answered his applications with saying, "This is a dispute between a father and his children; it does not become us to interfere in this domestic quarrel."—"But if the rebels should come to attack this province, would you not assist us in repelling them?"—
Since the peace, the hatchet of war is buried forty fathom deep."—"You could certainly find it, if you were to dig for it."—"The handle is rotten, and we could make no use of it."

The United States were not more successful. "We have heard of the differences that have arisen between Old and New England," said the tribe of the Oneidas to their deputies. "We will never take part in contests of so atrocious a nature. A war between brothers is a thing new and unknown in these regions. Our traditions have not left us any instance of this kind. Extinguish your extravagant hatred; and may a more serene sky dispel the dark cloud that surrounds you."

The Maiphis alone seemed to interest themselves in the fate of the Americans. "Here are sixteen shillings for you," said these good savages. "It is all we are worth. We intended to buy some rum with it; but we will drink water. We will go to the chase; and if we should kill any animals, we will sell their skins, and bring you the money."

But in process of time, the very active emissaries of Great Britain succeeded in bringing over to her side several of the original nations. Her interests were preferred to those of her enemies, because the distance had not allowed her subjects to commit the same outrages against the savages as they had received from their proud neighbours, and because she was both able and inclined to pay more liberally for the services she might receive from them. Under her colours these allies, whose ferocious character knew no restraint, did infinitely more mischief to the colonists settled near the mountains, than fuch of their fellow-citizens who had the good fortune to be settled near the borders of the ocean received from the royal troops.

These calamities fell only upon a more or less considerable number of the Americans; but they were soon all of them afflicted with an internal misfortune.

The metals, which cover the face of the whole globe, and represent all the objects of commerce, were
never abundant in this part of the New World. The small quantity that was found there even disappeared at the first breaking out of hostilities. To these signs of universal convention were substituted others peculiar to these districts. Paper supplied the want of money. To give some kind of dignity to this new pledge, it was surrounded with emblems calculated to recall continually to the minds of the people the greatness of their enterprise, the inestimable value of liberty, and the necessity of a perseverance superior to all misfortunes. The artifice did not succeed; and these ideal riches were rejected. The more did necessity oblige them to be multiplied, the more did their discredit increase. The congress was offended with the insult done to their coin; and they declared traitors to their country all those who should not receive it as they would have received gold.

Did not the congress then know, that authority cannot more be exerted over the mind than over opinion? Were they not sensible, that, in the present crisis, every reasonable citizen would be apprehensive of risking his fortune? Did they not perceive, that, at the origin of the republic, they indulged themselves in acts of despotism unknown in countries that are even formed to servitude? Could they conceal from themselves that they punished a want of confidence with the same punishment which would scarce have been merited for revolt and treason? The congress perceived all this, but had no choice of means. Their contemptible and rejected paper was actually thirty times below its original value, when they fabricated more of it. On the 13th September 1779, there was circulating among the public to the amount of 799,744,000 livres [33,322,666l. 13s. 4d.] of it. The state was then indebted 188,670,525 livres [7,861,271l. 17s. 6d.], exclusive of the debts peculiar to each province.

The people were not indemnified for a calamity which might be called domestic, by a free intercourse with all the other parts of the globe. Great Britain had intercepted their navigation with the West Indies,
and with all the latitudes which were covered with their ships. They then declared to the world, "It is the English name which hath rendered us odious; we solemnly abjure it. All men are our brethren. We are the friends of every nation. All flags may appear upon our coasts, and frequent our ports, without fear of infamy." But this invitation, apparently so alluring, was not complied with. The states that were really commercial being apprised that North America had been obliged to contract debts at the period even of its greatest prosperity, judiciously imagined, that, in its present distress, it would be able to pay very little for what was brought to it. The French alone dared to brave the inconveniences of this new connection. But by the enlightened vigilance of Admiral Howe, most of the ships which they fitted out were taken before they arrived to the place of their destination, and the rest at their departure from the American shores. Of several hundred ships sent out from France, no more than twenty-five or thirty returned; and even these were of little or no benefit to their owners.

A number of privations, added to so many calamities, might have made the Americans regret their former tranquillity, and inclined them to a reconciliation with England. In vain were the people bound by the faith of oaths, and by the influence of religion, to the new government. In vain had it been endeavoured to convince them of the impossibility of negotiating safely with a mother-country, in which one parliament could subvert what had been regulated by another. In vain had they been threatened with the external resentment of an affronted and vindictive enemy. It was possible that these distant apprehensions might not counterbalance the weight of the present calamities.

Such was the opinion of the British ministry, when they sent public agents into the New World, who were authorised to offer any terms short of independence to those very Americans, from whom, two years
before, an unlimited submission had been required.

There is some probability that this plan of conciliation might have been successful some months before. But at the period when the court of London sent to propose it, it was haughtily rejected, because this step appeared only to be the effect of fear and weakness. The people were already re-animated; the congress, the generals, the troops, the intelligent or bold men who in every colony had assumed the authority, all, in a word, had recovered their former spirit. This was the effect of a treaty of friendship and commerce between the United States and the court of Versailles, which was signed on the 6th of February 1778.

Had the English ministry reflected, they would have comprehended that the same delirium which caused them to attack their colonies, should have compelled them instantly to declare war against France. The circumspection which ought always to attend a new reign then prevailed in the councils of this crown. Their finances were then in that state of confusion into which they had been plunged by twenty years of feverance in folly. The ruined state of their navy then raised anxiety in the breast of every citizen. Spain, already harassed with her extravagant expedition against Algiers, was then surrounded with difficulties which would have prevented her from being able to assist her allies. England might, without rashness, have flattered herself with success against the most powerful of her enemies, and might have intimidated America by victories obtained in its neighbourhood. The importance it was of to this crown, to deprive its rebellious subjects of the only support they were certain of, would have diminished the indignation excited by the violation of the most solemn treaties.

George III. saw nothing of all this. The clandestine succours which the court of Versailles used to send to the provinces in arms for the defence of their rights did not open his eyes. The dock-yards of this power were filled with ship-builders, its arsenals were flocking with artillery, and there remained no more room
in its magazines for fresh naval stores. Its harbours presented the most menacing aspect, and yet this strange infatuation still continued. To rouse the court of St. James's from its lethargy, it was necessary that Lewis XVI. should cause it to be signified to them on the 14th March, that he had acknowledged the independence of the United States.

This declaration was a declaration of war. It was impossible that a nation, more accustomed to give than to take an affront, should patiently suffer that its subjects should be released from their oath of allegiance, and be raised with splendour to the rank of sovereign powers. All Europe foresaw that two nations, which had been rivals for so many centuries, were going to stain with blood the waters of the ocean, and engage again in that terrible conflict in which public prosperity can never compensate private distress. Those in whom ambition had not extinguished every sentiment of benevolence towards their fellow-creatures, previously deplored the calamities which were ready to fall upon the human race in both hemispheres.

The bloody scene, however, was not yet begun, and this delay inspired some credulous persons with the hopes that peace would continue. It was not known that a fleet had failed from Toulon with directions to attack the English in the North of America. It was not known that there were orders sent from London to drive away the French out of the East Indies. Without being initiated in these mysteries of perfidy, which an insidious policy hath made to be considered as great strokes of state, men who were really enlightened judged that hostilities were unavoidable, and even near at hand on our own ocean. This foreseen event was brought about by an engagement between two frigates on the 17th June 1778.

Here our task becomes more and more difficult. Our sole aim is to be useful and true. Far from us be that spirit of party which fascinates and disgraces those who lead mankind, or who aspire to instruct them. Our wishes will be for our country, and we
shall pay homage to justice. In whatever place, and under whatever form, virtue shall present herself to us, we shall honour her. The distinction of society and of states cannot estrange us from her, and the just and magnanimous man will everywhere be our fellow-citizen. If in the different events which we review we have the courage to blame what appears to us to deserve it, we do not seek the melancholy and idle satisfaction of dealing out indiscriminate censure. But we address ourselves to the nations and to posterity. It is our duty faithfully to transmit to them whatever may influence the public felicity. It is our duty to give them the history of the faults that are committed in order that they may be instructed to avoid them. Should we dare to betray this noble duty, we should perhaps flatter the present generation, which is fleeting, and paffeth away; but justice and truth, which are eternal, would denounce us to future generations, which would read us with contempt, and would never pronounce our name without disdain. In this long career we have undertaken, we will be just to those who shall exit, as we have been to those who are no more. If among men in power there be any who are offended with this liberty, we will not be afraid to say to them, that we are only the organs of a supreme tribunal, which is at length erected by reason upon an immovable foundation. Every government in Europe must henceforth dread its decrees. The public opinion, which becomes more and more enlightened, and which is neither stopped nor intimidated by any thing, is perpetually attentive to nations and to courts. It penetrates into cabinets where policy is shut up: there it judges the depositaries of power, their passions, and their weakness, and, by the empire of genius and knowledge, raises itself above the governors of mankind, either to direct or to restrain them. Woe to those who either disdain this tribunal, or set it at defiance! This apparent boldness arises only from inability. Woe to those whose talents are insufficient to bear its examination! Let them do themselves justice,
let them lay down a burden too heavy for their feeble hands. They will at least no longer compromise them.

France began the war with invaluable advantages. The place, the time, the circumstances, every thing she had chosen. It was not till after having made preparations at leisure, till after having brought her forces to that degree which was proper, that she shewed herself upon the field of battle. She had only to combat an enemy humbled, weakened, and discouraged by domestic disensions. The favour of the other nations was on her side against those imperious matters, or, as it was said, against those tyrants of the seas.

The events seemed favourable to the wishes of all Europe. The French officers, who had former humiliations to efface, exerted themselves in brilliant actions, the remembrance of which will last for a long time. A skilful theory and an undaunted courage supplied any deficiency there might be on the point of experience. In all the private engagements they came off with glory, and most of them terminated to their advantage. The British fleet was exposed to still greater dangers than the separate ships were. It was so ill treated, that its total or partial destruction was apprehended, if the fleet which had reduced it to this deplorable state off Ushant had not determined, from timid orders, from odious intrigues, from the weakness of the admirals, or from all these motives combined, to quit the sea and re-enter first into port.

In the intoxication of this success, perhaps unexpected, France seemed to lose sight of her most important interests. Her principal object should have been to intercept the trade of her enemies, to deprive them of the double strength they derived from their sailors and from their riches, and thus to sap the two foundations of English greatness. Nothing was more easy to accomplish by a power long prepared for hostilities, than to intercept the trading navy, entirely off its guard, and attended with very feeble convoys.

Vol. VI.
But this was neglected, and the immense riches which Great Britain expected from all parts of the globe, entered quietly into her harbours, even without the least loss.

The trade of France, on the contrary, was harassed in both hemispheres, and intercepted everywhere. Her colonies beheld the subsistence which they were expecting, with all the anxiety of want, carried off from their own coast; and the mother-country found itself deprived of fourscore or a hundred millions [from 3,333,333l. 6s. 8d. to 4,166,666l. 13s. 4d.] almost within her own view. These misfortunes certainly arose from some cause, which we will endeavour to investigate.

The French navy had for a long time been unfortunate, and its numerous calamities were attributed to the defect of its constitution. Several attempts were made either to modify or to alter the regulations; but these innovations, whether good or bad, were always rejected with more or less visible disdain. At length the admirals dictated themselves in 1776, an ordinance, which, by making them absolute masters of the harbours, of the arsenals, of the docks, and of the magazines, destroyed that mutual superintendence which Lewis XIV. had thought proper to establish between the officers of the navy and those of administration. From that time there was no more order, no more responsibility, no more economy in the ports; every thing there fell into confusion and disorder.

The new plan had still a more fatal influence. Till that period the ministry had directed their naval operations in a manner suitable to their political plans. This authority was transferred, without being perceived, perhaps to those who were to carry these operations into execution; and they imperceptibly acquired the tint of their prejudices, which led them to believe that it was not by heavy and laborious efforts of the ships of the nation, or by remaining for a length of time on difficult cruises, in order to surmount or destroy the vessels of the enemy, that a reputation was to be
attained. This double duty was therefore either entirely neglected, or very ill fulfilled, on account of the general opinion prevalent at Brest, that such a service had nothing noble in it, and did not lead to any kind of glory.

It must be owned, that this prejudice is a very singular one, and entirely contrary to all the laws of society. What can have been the intention of the states in instituting this military force defined to traverse the seas? Was it only to procure rank to those who commanded or served in it? To give them an opportunity to exert a valour useless to any but themselves? To stain another element with blood, with carnage, and sea-fights? Certainly not. The warlike fleets are upon the ocean, what fortresses and ramparts are for the citizens of towns, and what national armies are for the provinces exposed to the ravages of the enemy. There are some kinds of property attached to a foil; others are created and transported by commerce, and are, as it were, wandering upon the ocean. These two species of property required defenders. Warriors, this is your duty. What should we say, if the land forces refused to protect the inhabitants of the cities, or the husbandman of the field against the enemy, or to extinguish the conflagration which threatens the harvest? Officers of the navy, you think yourselves degraded in protecting and conveying the merchantmen. But if commerce be deprived of protectors, what will become of the riches of the state, part of which you undoubtedly expect as a reward for your services? What will become, for yourselves, of the revenues of your lands, which can only be made fruitful by trade, and by the circulation of wealth? You think yourselves degraded. What! degraded in rendering yourselves useful to your fellow-citizens? What are then all the orders of the state, to whom government hath intrusted some portion of the public strength, but the protectors and the defenders of the citizen and his fortune? Your post is upon the seas, as that of the magistrate is upon the tribunals, that of the land officer and of the soldier.
in the camps, that of the monarch upon the throne, where he is only placed upon a more elevated situation, in order that his prospect may be extended to a greater distance, and that he may behold at one view all those who require his protection or his defence. You aspire to glory. Learn that glory is everywhere to be obtained by serving the state. The ancient Romans were likewise undoubtedly attached to glory, and yet the honour of having preserved one single citizen in Rome was preferred to that of having destroyed a multitude of enemies. Do you not perceive, that in saving the trading ships you save the wealth of the state? Yes, your valour is brilliant; it is known to all Europe, as well as to your own country; but what is it to your fellow-citizens that it hath been displayed on a splendid occasion, that it hath taken one of the enemy's ships, or covered the waves of the ocean with wrecks and ruins, if you suffer all the vessels which conveyed the riches of your country to be either taken or destroyed; if, in the very port to which you return victorious, a multitude of defolated families deplore the subversion of their fortune? You will not hear the exclamations of victory on your arrival. All will be silent, and plunged in consternation; and your exploits will serve no other purpose but to swell the accounts of the courts, and to fill those public papers which, being invented to amuse idlenes, give glory only for a day, when that glory is not engraved in the hearts of the citizens by the remembrance of some real service done to the country.

The maxims adopted at Portsmouth were very different. There the dignity of commerce was felt and respected. It was considered as a duty, as well as an honour, to defend it; and events decided, which of the two navies had the properest ideas of their functions.

Great Britain had just experienced some very humiliating adversities in the New World, and it was threatened with greater disasters by a still more powerful enemy in the Old one. This alarming situation filled the
minds of all men with mistrust and uncertainty. The
national riches came home safe, and their enormous
mass was increased by those of the rival power; public
credit was instantly revived; expectations were renew-
ed; and this people, who with satisfaction were look-
ed upon as overcome, recovered and sustained their
usual pride.

On the other hand, the French ports were filled
with lamentations. A degrading and ruinous inactivi-
ty succeeded to that activity which gave them splen-
dour and riches. The indignation of the merchants
communicated itself to the whole nation. The first
moments of success are the moments of intoxication,
which seem either to conceal or to justify the faults
committed. But misfortune gives greater severity to
opinion. The nation then attends more closely to
those by whom they are governed, and demands from
them, with arrogant freedom, an account of the power
and authority that is intrusted to them. The councils
of Lewis XVI. were accused of derogating from the
majesty of the first power on the globe, by disavowing,
in the face of the universe, the succour which they
were incessantly sending clandestinely to the Ameri-
cans. They were accused of having, either by a mi-
nisterial intrigue, or by the influence of some obscure
agents, engaged the state in a ruinous war, at a time
when they ought to have been employed in repairing
the springs of government, in remedying the tedious
disorders of a reign, the latter half of which had been
mean, feeble, divided between depredations and shame,
between the baseness of vice and the convulsions of
despotism. They were accused of having provoked a
rupture by an insidious policy, to have enveloped their
meaning in speeches unworthy of France, and to have
employed, with regard to England, the language of a
timidous boldness, which seemed to deny the projects
that were formed, and the sentiments they had in their
hearts; a language which can only degrade the person
who makes use of it, without being able to deceive
him to whom it is addressed; and which dishonours,
while the dishonour it brings along with it can neither be useful to the ministry nor to the state. How much more noble would it have been to have paid with all the frankness of dignity: "Englishmen, you have abused your victory. This is the moment to be just, or else it will be that of revenge. Europe is tired of bearing with tyrants. She at length resumes her rights. Henceforth choose either equality or war." It is thus that Richelieu would have spoken; that Richelieu, whom every citizen ought indeed to detest, because he was a sanguinary assassin, and that in order to become a despot, he put all his enemies to death with the ax of the executioner; but the nation and the state must revere him as a minister, because he was the first who apprized France of her dignity, and ascribed to her in Europe the rank which belonged to her power. It is thus that Lewis XIV. would have spoken to them, who during forty years showed himself worthy of the age he lived in, whose very faults were always mixed with grandeur, and who, even in a state of dejection and misfortune, never degraded himself or his people. A great character is required to govern a great nation. More especially, there must be none of those spirits that are cold and indifferent from levity, for whom absolute authority is no more than an amusement, who leave great interests to the effects of chance, and who are more employed in preserving power than in making use of it. It is further asked, why men who had all the power of the state in their hands, and who had only to command in order to be obeyed, have suffered themselves to be forestalled in all the seas by an enemy whose constitution necessarily produces delays? Why did they put themselves, by an inconsiderate treaty, into the shackles of congress, which might itself have been kept dependent by plentiful and regular subsidies? Lastly, why did not they secure the revolution, by keeping constantly upon the northern coasts of the New World a squadron to protect the colonies, and at the same time to make our alliance be respected? But Europe, whose eyes are
fixed upon us, beholds a great design, and no concerted measures; it beholds in our arsenals and in our ports immense preparations, and no execution; it beholds formidable fleets, and this equipment rendered almost useless; it beholds boldness and valour in individuals, effeminacy and irresolution in commanders; every thing which announces on one hand the awful power of a great people, and on the other every thing which announces the weakness and delay which arise from character and from the nature of the views.

It is by this striking contrast between our projects and our measures, between our means and the spirit which animates them, that the English genius, astonished for a moment, hath recovered its vigour; and it is a problem which Europe cannot solve, whether, in declaring for America, we have not ourselves raised the strength of England.

Such are the complaints which are heard on all sides, and which we are not afraid of collecting here, and of laying before the eyes of authority, if it should deign to listen to or to read them.

Lastly, philosophy, whose first sentiment is the desire of seeing all governments equitable, and all people happy, in examining this alliance of a monarchy with a people who defend their liberty, endeavours to discover the motive of it. It perceives too clearly that the happiness of mankind hath no concern in it. It imagines, that, if the court of Verailles had been determined by the love of justice, they would have mentioned in the first article of the convention with America, that \textit{all people who are oppressed have a right to rise against their oppressors}. But this maxim, which constitutes one of the laws of England, which a king of Hungary, upon ascending the throne, ventured to make one of the constituent principles of the state, and which Trajan, one of the greatest princes who ever ruled over the earth, adopted, when in presence of the Roman peopled assembled, he said to the first officer of the empire: \textit{I give you up my sword to defend me while I shall be just, and to fight against me and to}
punish me if I should become a tyrant. This maxim is too foreign to our feeble and corrupt governments, where it is the duty of the people to suffer, and where the oppressed man should be apprehensive of feeling his misfortune, for fear he should be punished for it as a crime.

But it is particularly against Spain that the most bitter complaints are directed. She is censured for her blindness, her irresolution, her delays, sometimes even for her want of fidelity; but all these accusations are groundless.

Some politicians imagined, when they beheld France engaging without necessity in a naval war, that this crown thought itself sufficiently powerful to separate the dominion of Great Britain, without sharing with an ally the honour of this important revolution. We will not examine whether the spirit which prevailed in the cabinet of Verfailles authorised this conjecture. It is now known, that this crown, which since the beginning of the troubles had given secret assistance to the Americans, watched the propitious moment for declaring openly in their favour. The event of Saratoga appeared to furnish the most favourable opportunity to propose to his Catholic majesty to join in the common cause. Whether this prince then thought that the liberty of the United States was contrary to his interests; whether the resolution appeared to him to be precipitate, or whether, in a word, other political objects required his whole attention, he refused to accede to this proposal. His character prevented any further solicitations. Since those first attempts he was so little troubled about this great affair, that it was without giving him any previous notice, that the court of Verfailles caused it to be signified to that of St. James’s, that they had acknowledged the independence of the confederate provinces.

In the meanwhile the land and sea-forces which Spain had employed in the Brazils against the Portuguese were returned. The rich fleet she expected from Mexico had entered into her ports. The trea-
lutes which were coming to her from Peru and from
her other possessions were in safety. This power was
free from any anxiety, and mistress of her own opera-
tions, when she aspired to the glory of introducing
peace into both hemispheres. Her mediation was ac-
cepted, both by France, whose boldness had not been
followed by those happy consequences she had expec-
ed from it, and by England, who might be apprehen-
sive of having a new adversary to contend with.
Charles III. supported with dignity the magnani-
mous part he had undertaken. He declared that arms
should be laid aside; that each of the belligerent pow-
ers should be maintained in the possessions they might
occupy at the period of the convention; that a con-
gress should be formed, in which the several preten-
sions should be discussed; and that no new attack
should be commenced without the previous notice of
a twelvemonth.
This monarch was aware that this arrangement
would give to Great Britain the felicity of reconcili-
ation with her colonies, or at least would make them
purchase by great advantages for her trade the sacri-
fice of the ports which she occupied in the midst of
them. Nor was he ignorant of his offending the dig-
nity of the king his nephew, who had engaged to
maintain the United States in the entire possession of
their territories. But he would be just; and without
setting aside all personal considerations it is impossible
to be so.
This plan of conciliation was displeasing to the court
of Verailles; and the only hope they had was, that
it would be rejected at London, as indeed it was.
England could not resolve to acknowledge the Amer-
cans ipso facto independent, although they were not
invited to the conferences that were going to be op-
ened; although France was not allowed to negotiate
for them; although their interests were only to be
supported by a mediator, who was not attached to
them by any treaty, and who, perhaps, in secret, did
not wish them to prosper, and although her refusal threatened her with an additional enemy.

It is in such a situation, when pride elevates the soul above the suggestions of fear, that nothing appears formidable, except the shame of receiving the law; and that there is no hesitation in choosing between ruin and dishonour: it is then that the greatness of a nation displays itself. I acknowledge, however, that men, accustomed to judge of the event, consider great and perilous revolutions as acts of heroism or of folly, according to the good or ill success that hath attended them. If, therefore, I should be asked, what name will be given a few years hence to the firmness which the English showed on this occasion? I shall answer, that I know not: as to that which they deserve I know very well. I know that the annals of the world rarely present to us the august and majestic spectacle, of a nation which prefers giving up of its duration to the loss of its glory.

No sooner had the British ministry explained themselves, than the court of Madrid took the part of that of Verfailles, and consequently that of the Americans, in the contest. Spain had then sixty-three vessels of the line, and fix more upon the stocks. France had fourscore and eight upon the docks. The United States had but twelve frigates, but a great number of privateers.

To so many forces united, England had only ninety-five ships of the line to oppose, and three-and-twenty upon the stocks. The other sixteen which were seen in her ports were unfit for service, and they had been converted to the purpose of ships for receiving prisoners, or into hospital ships. Thus inferior in the instruments of war, this power was still more so in the means of employing them upon service. Her domestic discontents contributed still more to render ineffectual the resources she had remaining. It is the nature of governments that are truly free, to be agitated in times of peace. It is by these intestine commotions that the
minds of men preserve their energy, and the perpetual remembrance of the rights of the nation. But in time of war it is necessary that every ferment should cease, that hatred should be extinguished, and that interests should be blended, and made subservient to each other. It happened quite otherwise in the British islands; for the disturbances in them had never been more violent. Opposite claims were never supported on any occasion with less moderation. The general good was insincerely disregarded by all factions. Those houses, in which the most important questions had formerly been discussed, with eloquence, strength, and dignity, refounded only with the clamours of rage, grofs insults, and altercations as prejudicial as they were indecent. The few persons who might be called citizens loudly exclaimed for a new Pitt, a minister, who like him had neither relations nor friends; but this extraordinary man did not appear. And indeed it was generally believed that this nation would fall, notwithstanding the haughtiness of their character, notwithstanding the experience of their admirals, notwithstanding the boldness of their seamen, and notwithstanding the energy which a free people must acquire in the disturbances they experience.

But the sway of chance is very extensive. Who knows in favour of which party the elements will declare themselves? A gust of wind snatches away victory, or gives it. A cannon shot disconcerts a whole army by the death of the general. Signals are either not well understood, or not obeyed. Experience, courage, and skill, are counteracted by ignorance, by jealousy, by treason, and by the certainty of impunity. A fog arising, covers both the enemies, and either separates or confounds them. A calm and a storm are equally favourable or disadvantageous. The forces are divided by the unequal celerity of the ships. The opportunity is lost, either by pusillanimity, which postpones, or by rashness, which hastes an engagement. Plans may have been formed with prudence, but they may remain without effect, by the want of harmony
An inconsiderate command from court may decide the misfortune of a day. The disgrace or death of a minister alters the projects. Is it possible that a close union can long subsist between confederates of such opposite characters, as the French, who are passionate, disdainful, and volatile; the Spaniards, who are slow, haughty, jealous, and cold; and the Americans, who have constantly their looks turned towards the mother-country, and who would rejoice at the disasters of their allies, if they were compatible with their own independence? Will it be long before these nations, whether they act separately or in concert, reciprocally accuse, complain, and are at variance with each other? Will not their greatest hope be, that repeated strokes of adversity would only at last plunge them again into the humiliating state from whence they wished to emerge, and confirm the dominion of the seas to Great Britain; while one or two considerable defeats would for ever remove this ambitious people from the rank of the first power of this hemisphere?

Who can therefore decide; who can even foresee what will be the event? France and Spain united have the most powerful means in their favour; England hath the art of managing her own: France and Spain have their treasures, England hath a great national credit. On one hand are the multitude of men, and the number of troops; on the other, the superiority in the art of conducting ships, and of subduing the sea in engagements. Here there is impetuosity and valour; there valour and experience. On one hand, the activity which absolute monarchy may give to the measures; on the other, the vigour and the energy of liberty. One party is stimulated by resentment for losses, and by a long-continued series of outrages they have to avenge; the other, by the recollection of a recent glory, and by their having the sovereignty of America, as well as that of the ocean, to preserve. The two allied nations have the advantage which is derived from the union of two immense pow-
ers; but at the same time the inconvenience which results from this very union, by the difficulty even of preserving harmony and concord, either in the plans or in the disposal of their forces. England is abandoned to herself; but having nothing but her own forces to direct, she hath the advantage of unity in her designs; of a more certain, and perhaps more speedy combination of ideas. She can with greater facility regulate at one view her plans of attack and defence.

In order to have an exact idea of things, one ought also to examine the different energy which may be communicated to the rival nations by a war, which on one side is no more in several respects than a war of kings and ministers; and on the other, a really national war, in which the greatest interests of England are concerned, a commerce, which constitutes her riches; an empire, and a glory, which compose her greatness.

Finally, if we consider the spirit of the French nation, in contrast with that of the nation she is at war with, it will be found that the ardour of the French is perhaps equally ready to be excited and to be extinguished; that their hopes are very sanguine at the beginning, and that they despair of every thing as soon as they are stopped by any obstacle; that by their character they require the enthusiasm of success, in order to obtain fresh advantages. The English, on the contrary, less presumptuous at first, notwithstanding their natural boldness, know how to struggle courageously, to be elevated in proportion to the increase of danger, and to acquire steadiness by disgrace: like the sturdy oak, to which Horace compares the Romans, which, though cut by the ax and mutilated by iron, revives under the strokes which it receives, and acquires new vigour even from its wounds.

History informs us, moreover, that few leagues have ever divided the spoils of the nation against which they had been formed. Athens triumphant over Persia; Rome saved from Annibal; in modern times,
Venice, preserved from the famous league of Campbray; and even in our days, Prussia, which by the genius of one single man hath held out against all Europe; all these examples authorize us to suspend our judgment respecting the issue of the present war.

But, let us suppose that the house of Bourbon shall have obtained all the advantages they may flatter themselves with, what conduct ought they to pursue?

France is, in every point of view, the empire the most strongly constituted of any one the remembrance of which is preserved in the annals of the world. Spain, though not to be compared with her, is like herself a state of great weight, and her means of prosperity are increasing daily. The principal care of the house of Bourbon, then, should be, to induce their neighbours to overlook the advantages which they derive from nature or from art, or which they have acquired by events. If they should endeavour to increase their superiority, the alarm would become general, and people would think themselves threatened with universal slavery. It is perhaps rather extraordinary, that the nations have not thwarted her projects against England. This supineness must have been occasioned by the resentment which the injustice and the haughtinefs of that superb island have excited in all parts. But hatred is suspended when interest is concerned. It is possible, Europe may judge the weakening of Great Britain in the New and in the Old Hemisphere to be contrary to her own security; and that, after having enjoyed the spectacle of the humiliations and the dangers of that proud and tyrannical power, she may at length take up arms in her defence. Should this happen, the courts of Versailles and Madrid would find themselves disappointed in the hopes which they had conceived, of acquiring a decided preponderance upon the globe. These considerations should determine them to urge on the attacks, and not to leave time to a provident, or perhaps only a jealous policy, to make fresh plans. Let
them especially stop in time, and let not an immoderate desire of lowering their common enemy blind them with regard to their true interests.

The United States have openly discovered the project of drawing all North America into their confederation. Several steps, and particularly that of soliciting Canada to rebellion, must have induced an opinion that it was likewise the desire of France. Spain may be suspected of having equally adopted this idea.

The conduct of the provinces which have shaken off the yoke of Great Britain is simple, and such as one would expect. But would not their allies be deficient in foresight, if they had really the same system? The New Hemisphere must one day be detached from the Old. This great evulsion is prepared in Europe by the ferment and by the clash of opinions; by the overthrow of our rights, which constituted our courage; by the luxury of our courts, and the misery of our country places; by the everlasting hatred there is between effeminate men who possess every thing, and robust, and even virtuous men, who have nothing to lose but their lives. It is prepared in America, by the increase of population, of cultures, of industry, and of knowledge. Every thing is tending towards this separation, both the progress of evil in one world, and the progress of good in another.

But can it be suitable to France and Spain, whose possessions in the New Hemisphere are an inexhaustible source of wealth, can it be suitable to them to hasten this division? Yet this is what would happen, if the whole northern part of those regions were subject to the same laws, or connected by one common interest.

Scarcely would the liberty of this vast continent be confirmed, than it would become the asylum of all the intriguing, fœtidious, branded, or ruined men, who are seen amongst us. Neither agriculture, the arts, nor commerce, would be the resource of refugees of this character. A less laborious and more turbulent life would be necessary for them. This turn of mind, equally averse from labour and rest, would be dispo-
ed to conquests; and a passion which is so seducing would readily subdue the first colonists, diverted from their ancient labours by a long war. The new people would have finished their preparations for invasion before the report of them could have reached our climates. They would choose their enemies, their field of battle, and the moment of victory. Their attack would always fall upon defenceless seas, or upon coasts taken by surprise. In a short time the southern provinces would become the prey of the northern ones, and would compensate, by the richness of their productions, for the mediocrity of those of the latter. Perhaps even the possessions of our absolute monarchies would endeavour to enter into the confederation of free people, or would detach themselves from Europe, to belong only to themselves.

The measures which the courts of Madrid and Versailles ought to pursue, if they are at liberty to choose, is to leave subsisting in the northern part of America two powers which shall watch over, restrain, and balance each other. Then ages will elapse before England, and the republics formed at her expense will be united. This reciprocal mistrust will prevent them from undertaking any thing at a distance; and the establishment of other nations in the New World will enjoy that state of tranquillity which hitherto hath been so much disturbed.

It is even probable that this order of things would be most suitable to the confederate provinces. Their respective limits have not been regulated. A great jealousy prevails between the countries of the North and those of the South. Political principles vary from one river to another. Great animosities are observed to subsist between the citizens of a town and the members of a family. Each of them will be desirous of removing from themselves the oppressive burden of the public expences and debts. An infinite number of seeds of division are universally brooding in the heart of the United States. When once all dangers were removed, how would it be possible to prevent the
breaking out of so many discontents? How would it be possible to keep attached to the same centre so many deluded and exasperated minds? Let the real friends of America reflect upon this, and they will find, that the only way to prevent disturbances among the people, would be to leave upon their frontiers a powerful rival, always disposed to avail itself of their differences.

Peace and security are necessary for monarchies; agitation and a formidable enemy for republics. Rome stood in need of Carthage: and he who destroyed the liberty of the Romans was neither Scylla nor Cæsar; it was the first Cato, when his narrow and stern fyltem of politics deprived Rome of a rival, by kindling in the senate those flames which reduced Carthage to ashes. Venice herself, perhaps, would have lost her government and her laws four hundred years ago, if she had not had at her gates, and almost under her walls, powerful neighbours, who might become her enemies or her masters.

But according to this fyltem, to what degree of felicity, splendour, and strength, can the confederate provinces attain in process of time?

In this place, to form a proper judgment, let us begin by setting aside that interest which all men, slaves not excepted, have taken in the generous efforts of a nation, which exposed itself to all calamities in order to be free. The name of liberty is so alluring, that all those who fight for it are sure of obtaining our secret wishes in their favour. Their cause is that of the whole human race, and becomes our own. We avenge ourselves of our oppressors, by venting at least freely our hatred against foreign oppressors. At the noise of these chains that are breaking, it seems to us that ours are going to become lighter; and for a few moments we think we breathe a purer air, when we learn that the universal reckons some tyrants lefs. Besides, these great revolutions of liberty are lessons to despots. They warn them not to reckon upon too
long a continuance of the people's patience, and upon
eternal impunity. So, where society and the laws a-
venge themselves of the crimes of individuals, the good
man hopes that the punishment of the guilty may pre-
vent the commission of fresh crimes. Terror sometimes
supplies the place of justice with regard to the robber,
and of conscience with regard to the assassin. Such
is the source of the great concern we take in every
war for liberty. Such hath been that with which the
Americans have inspired us. Our imaginations have
been heated in their favour. We have taken a part
in their victories and their defeats. The spirit of jus-
tice, which delights in compensating former calamities
by future happiness, is pleased with the idea, that this
part of the New World cannot fail to become one of
the most flourishing countries on the globe. It is even
supposed that Europe may one day find her masters in
her children. Let us venture to refit the torrent of
opinion, and that of public enthusiasm. Let us not
suffer ourselves to be misled by imagination, which
embellishes every thing, and by sentiment, which de-
lights in forming illusions, and which realizes every
hope. It is our duty to combat all prejudices, even
those which are most consonant to the wishes of our
hearts. Above all things, it behoves us to be true,
and not to betray that pure and upright conscience
which presides over our writings, and dictates our
judgments. At this moment, perhaps, we shall not
be believed; but a bold conjecture, which is confirm-
ed at the end of several centuries, does more honour
to the historian, than a long series of facts, the truth
of which cannot be contested: and I do not write for
my cotemporaries alone, who will only survive me a
small number of years. When a few more revolu-
tions of the sun are past, both they and I shall be
no more. But I deliver up my ideas to posterity and
to time. It is theirs to judge me.

The space occupied by the thirteen republics, be-
tween the mountains and the sea, is no more than
sixty-seven sea leagues; but their extent upon the book coast, in a direct line, is three hundred and forty-five, from the river of Sancta Crux to that of Savannah.

The lands in that region are almost generally bad, or at least indifferent.

Scarce any thing but maize grows in the four most northern colonies. The only resource of the inhabitants is fishing, the annual produce of which doth not amount to more than 6,000,000 of livres [250,000l.].

Corn is the principal support of the provinces of New York, the Jereys, and Pennsylania. But the soil hath degenerated so rapidly, that an acre, which formerly yielded sixty bushels of wheat, very seldom produces even twenty at present.

Though the lands of Maryland and of Virginia be much superior to all the rest, yet they cannot be deemed extremely fertile. The ancient plantations yield no more than one-third of the tobacco which was formerly gathered. It is not possible to make any new ones; and the planters have been reduced to the necessity of turning their labours towards other objects.

North Carolina produces some grain, but of so inferior a quality, as to be sold in all markets twenty-five or thirty per cent. cheaper than the others.

The soil of South Carolina and of Georgia is perfectly even, as far as fifty miles from the ocean. The excessive rains which fall there not finding any outlet, form numerous morasses, where rice is cultivated to the great detriment of the freemen and of the slaves employed in this culture. In the intervening spaces between these large bodies of water so frequently met with, an inferior kind of indigo grows, which must be transplanted every year. In the elevated part of the country nothing is to be found except barren sands and frightful rocks, intersected at great distances by pasture grounds of the nature of rushes.

The English government, convinced that North America would never enrich them by its natural productions, employed the powerful incentive of gratuities, in order to produce in that part of the New

O ij
World flax, vines, and filk. The poornes of the soil disconcerted the first of these views, the defect of the climate prevented the success of the second, and the want of hands did not permit the third to be pursued. The society established in London for the encouragement of arts was not more fortunate than administration. Their benefactions did not bring forth any of the objects which they had proposed to the activity and industry of those countries.

Great Britain was obliged to be contented with selling every year to the countries we are speaking of to the amount of about 50,000,000 livres [2,083,333l. 6s. 8d.] of merchandise. Those by whom they were consumed delivered to her exclusively their indigoes, their iron, their tobacco, and their peltries. They also delivered to her all the money and rough materials which they had received from the rest of the globe in exchange for their grain, their fish, their rice, and their salt provisions.

The balance, however, was always so unfavourable to them, that, at the beginning of the troubles, the colonies were indebted one hundred and twenty, or one hundred and thirty millions of livres [from 5,000,000l. to 5,416,666l. 13s. 4d.] to the mother-country; and they had no specie in circulation.

Notwithstanding these disadvantages, there had been successively formed in the midst of the thirteen provinces a population of two millions nine hundred eighty-one thousand six hundred and seventy-eight persons, including four hundred thousand Negroes. New inhabitants were constantly driven there by oppression and intolerance. The unfortunate have been deprived of this refuge by war; but peace will restore it to them again; and they will resort there in greater numbers than ever. Those who shall go there with plans of cultivation, will not have all the satisfaction they may expect, because they will find all the good, and even the indifferent lands occupied, and that scarce any thing remains to offer them, except barren lands, unwholesome morasses, or steep mountains.
The emigrations will be more favourable to manufacturers and to artists, though perhaps they will gain nothing by changing their country and their climate. It cannot be determined without rashness what will one day be the population of the United States. This calculation, generally very difficult, becomes impracticable in a region where the lands degenerate very rapidly, and where reproduction is not in proportion to the labours and expences bestowed upon them. It will be a considerable thing, if ten millions of men can ever find a certain subsistence in those provinces, and even then the exports will be reduced to little or nothing; but internalindustry will supply the place of foreignindustry. The country will nearly be able to supply its own wants, provided the inhabitants know how to be happy by economy and in mediocrity.

People of North America, let the example of all the nations which have preceded you, and especially that of the mother-country, serve as a lesson to you. Dread the influence of gold, which, with luxury, introduces corruption of manners and contempt of the laws. Dread too unequal a repartition of riches, which indicates a small number of wealthy citizens, and a multitude of citizens plunged in misery; from whence arises the insolence of the former, and the degradation of the latter. Keep yourselves free from the spirit of conquest. The tranquillity of an empire diminishes in proportion as it extends itself. Have arms to defend yourselves, but not to attack. Search for affluence and health in labour; for prosperity, in the cultivation of the lands, and in the manufactures of industry; for strength, in good manners and in virtue. Encourage the prosperity of the arts and sciences, which distinguishes the civilized man from the savage. Attend, above all things, to the education of your children. Be convinced, that from public schools come forth enlightened magistrates, valiant and well-informed officers, good fathers, good husbands, good brothers, good friends, and honest men. Wherever depravity of manners is observed among the youth, the nation is...
upon its decline. Let liberty have a firm and unalterable basis in the wisdom of your constitutions, and let it be the everlasting cement which connects your provinces together. Establish no legal preference between the modes of divine worship. Superstition is everywhere innocent, where it is neither protected nor persecuted; and may your duration, if possible, be long as that of the world!

May this wish be accomplished, and console the present expiring race with the hopes that a better will succeed to it! But waving the consideration of future times, let us take a view of the result of three memorable ages. Having seen in the beginning of this work the state of misery and ignorance in which Europe was plunged in the infancy of America, let us examine to what state the conquest of the New World hath led and advanced those that made it. This was the design of a book undertaken with the hopes of being useful; if the end be answered, the author will have discharged his duty to the age he lives in, and to society.

---

BOOK XIX.

We are advancing in a career, upon which we should not have entered without knowing the extent and the difficulties of it, and which we should several times have quitted, had we not been supported by motives which always make us forget the disproportion between our powers and the experiment. In the event of a conflagration, we sometimes attempt and accomplish things which would depress our courage, were it not stimulated by the danger, and which astonish it when the danger is over. After a battle, either won or lost, a military man said at the sight of a mountain which he had climbed up in order to reach the enemy: Who would ever have done that, if there had not been a musket-shot to receive? I was certainly animated with the same sentiment when I began this work, and it must undoubtedly animate me still since I continue.
We have first described the state of Europe before the discovery of the East and West Indies.

After this we have pursued the uncertain, tyrannical, and sanguinary progress of the settlements formed in these distant regions.

It now remains to unfold the influence which the intercourse established with the New World has had upon the opinions, government, industry, arts, manners, and happiness of the Old. Let us begin by religion.

Had man uninterruptedly enjoyed complete felicity, had the earth satisfied itself all the variety of his wants, it may be presumed that much time would have elapsed before the sentiment of admiration and gratitude would have turned towards the Gods, the attention of that being naturally ungrateful. But a barren soil did not answer to his labours. The torrents raged the fields which he had cultivated. A burning sky destroyed his harvests. He experienced famine; he became acquainted with disease; and he endeavoured to find out the cause of his misery.

To explain the mystery of his existence, of his happiness, and of his misfortune, he invented different systems equally absurd. He peopled the universe with good and evil spirits; and such was the origin of Polytheism, the most ancient and the most universal of all religions. From Polytheism arose Manicheism, the vestiges of which will last perpetually, whatever may be the progress of reason. Manicheism simplified, engendered Deism; and in the midst of this diversity of opinions there arose a class of men mediators between Heaven and earth.

Then the regions of the earth were covered with altars; in one place the hymn of joy refounded, while in another were heard the complaints of pain; then recourse was had to prayer and to sacrifice, the two natural modes of obtaining favour, and of deprecating anger. The harvest was offered up; the lamb, the goat, and the bull, were slain; and the holy sod was even stained with the blood of man.

O iii
In the meanwhile the good man was often seen in adversity, while the wicked, and even the impious man prospered; and then the doctrine of immortality was suggested. The souls, freed from the body, either circulated among the different beings of nature, or went into another world to receive the reward of their virtues, or the punishment of their crimes. But it is a problematical circumstance, whether man became better on this account. It is certain, however, that from the infant of his birth to that of his death, he was tormented with the fear of invisible powers, and reduced to a much more wretched state than that which he had before enjoyed.

Most legislators have availed themselves of this propensity of the mind, to govern the people, and still more to enslave them. Some have asserted, that they held from Heaven the right of commanding; and thus was theocracy or sacred despotism established, the most cruel and the most immoral of all legislations; that in which man, proud, malevolent, interested and vicious with impunity, commands man from God; that in which there is nothing just or unjust, but what is either agreeable or displeasing to him, or that Supreme Being with whom he communicates, and whom he causes to speak according to his passions, in which it is a crime to examine his orders, and impiety to oppose them; in which contradictory revelations are substitut ed to reason and conscience, which are reduced to silence by prodigies or by enormous crimes; in which the nations, in a word, cannot have any ideas concerning the rights of man, respecting what is good and what is evil, because they search for the foundation of their privileges and of their duties, only in sacred writings, the interpretation of which is denied to them.

If this kind of government had a more sublime origin in Palefline, still it was not more exempt than anywhere else from the calamities which necessarily arise from it.

Christianity succeeded the Jewish institution. The subjection that Rome, mistress of the world, was under
to the most savage tyrants; the dreadful miseries, which the luxury of a court and the maintenance of armies had occasioned throughout this vast empire under the reigns of the Nero's; the successive irruptions of the barbarians, who dismembered this great body; the loss of provinces, either by revolt or invasion; all these natural evils had already prepared the minds of men for a new religion, and the changes in politics must necessarily have induced an innovation in the form of worship. In Paganism, which had existed for so many ages, there remained only the fables to which it owed its origin, the folly or the vices of its gods, the avarice of its priests, and the infamy and licentious conduct of the kings who supported them. Then the people, despairing to obtain relief from their tyrants upon earth, had recourse to Heaven for protection.

Christianity appeared, and afforded them comfort, at the same time that it taught them to suffer with patience. While the tyranny and licentiousness of princes tended to the destruction of paganism as well as to that of the empire, the subjects, who had been oppressed and spoiled, and who had embraced the new doctrines, were completing its ruin by the examples they gave of those virtues, which always accompany the zeal of new-made profyletes. But a religion that arose in the midst of public calamity must necessarily give its preachers a considerable influence over the unhappy persons who took refuge in it. Thus the power of the clergy commenced, as it were, with the gospel.

From the remains of Pagan superstitions and philosophic fables, a code of rites and tenets was formed, which the simplicity of the primitive Christians sanctified with real and affecting piety; but which at the same time left the seeds of debates and controversies, from whence arose a variety of passions disguised under, and dignified with, the name of zeal. These diversions produced schools, doctors, a tribunal, and a hierarchy. Christianity had begun to be preached by a set of fishermen, destitute of every knowledge but that of the gospel; it was entirely established by bi-
shops who formed the church. After this it gained ground by degrees, till at length it attracted the notice of the emperors. Some of these tolerated Christianity, either from motives of contempt or humanity; others persecuted it. Persecution hastened its progress, for which toleration had paved the way. Connivance and proscription, clemency and rigour, were all equally advantageous to it. The sense of freedom, so natural to the human mind, induced many persons to embrace it in its infancy, as it has made others reject it since it has been established. This spirit of independence, rather adapted to truth than to novelty, would necessarily have induced a multitude of persons of all ranks to become converts to Christianity, if even the characters it bore had not been calculated to inspire veneration and respect.

Paganism, unmasked by philosophy, and brought into discrediet by the fathers of the church, with a sufficient number of temples, but with priests who were not rich, funk from day to day, and gave way to the new form of worship. This penetrated into the hearts of the women by devotion, which is so naturally allied to tenderness, and into the minds of children, who are fond of prodigies, and even of the most rigid morality. Thus it was introduced into courts, where every thing which can become a passion is certain of finding accefs. A prince, who bathed in the blood of his family, had, as it were, fallen asleep in the arms of impurity; a prince, who had great crimes and great weaknesses to expiate, embraced Christianity, which forgave him every thing on account of his zeal, and to which he gave up every thing, in order to be freed from his remorse.

Constantine, instead of uniting the priesthood to the crown, when he was converted to Christianity, as they had been united in the persons of the Pagan emperors, granted to the clergy such a share of wealth and authority, and afforded them so many means of future aggrandizement, that these blind concessions produced an ecclesiastical despotism entirely new.
Profound ignorance was the most certain support of this ascendancy over the minds of men. The pontiffs of Rome diffused this ignorance, by oppoing every kind of Pagan erudition. If from time to time some efforts were made to dispel this obscurity, they were extinguished by capital punishments.

While the popes were undeceiving the minds of men respecting their authority, even by the abuse they made of it, knowledge was passing on from the East to the West. As soon as the master-pieces of antiquity had revived the taste for useful study, reason recovered some of the rights which it had lost. The history of the church was investigated, and the false pretensions of the court of Rome were discovered. Part of Europe shook off the yoke. A monk set almost all Germany, and almost the whole North, free from it; a priest, some provinces of France; and a king, all England, for the sake of a woman. If other sovereigns firmly maintained the Catholic religion throughout their possessions, it was, perhaps, because it was more favourable to that blind and passive obedience which they require from their people, and which the papish clergy have always preached for their own interests.

In the meanwhile, the desire, on one hand, of preserving the pontifical authority, and the wish of destroying it on the other, have produced two opposite systems. The Catholic divines have undertaken, and even successfully, to prove that the holy books are not of themselves the touchstone of orthodoxy. They have demonstrated, that, since the first preaching of the gospel to our times, the scriptures, differently understood, had given rise to the most opposite, the most extravagant, and the most impious opinions; and that with this divine word, the most contradictory tenets may have been maintained, as long as inward sentiment hath been the only interpreter of the revelation.

The writers of the reformed religion have shewn the absurdity of believing, that one man alone was constantly inspired from Heaven, upon a throne, or in
BOOK a chair, in which the most monstrous vices have been committed; where dissolusion was seated by the side of inspiration; where adultery and concubinage profaned the idols who were invested with the character and with the name of sanctity; where the spirit of falsehood and of artifice dictated the pretended oracles of truth. They have demonstrated, that the church, assembled in council, and composed of intriguing prelates, under the emperors of the primitive church, of ignorant and debauched ones, in the times of barbarism and of ambition, and of ostentatious ones in the ages of schism; that such a church could not be more enlightened by supernatural inspiration than the vicar of Jesus himself; that the Spirit of God did not more visibly communicate itself to two hundred fathers of the council, than to the holy father himself, who was often the most profligate of men; that Germans and Spaniards without learning, French without morals, and Italians without any virtue, were not so well qualified for the spirit of revelation, as a simple flock of peasants, who sincerely seek after God by prayer and by labour. In a word, if they have not been able to support their new system in the eyes of reason, they have at least entirely destroyed that of the ancient church.

In the midst of these ruins, philosophy hath arisen, and said: If the text of the scripture be not sufficiently clear, precise, and authentic, to be the sole and infallible rule of doctrine and of worship; if the tradition of the church, from its first institution to the times of Luther and Calvin, hath been corrupted with the manners of priests, and of its followers; if the councils have doubted, varied, and decided contradictory in their assemblies; if it be unworthy of the Divinity to communicate its spirit and its word to one single man, debauched in his youth, reduced to imbecility in his old age, subject, in a word, to the passions, the errors, and the infirmities of man: then, say they, there is no firm and stable support for the infallibility of the Chri-
tian faith; consequently, that religion is not of divine in-
stitution, and God hath not intended that it should be et-
ernal.

This dilemma is very embarrassing. As long as the sen-
e of the scriptures shall remain open to the contest it hath ever experienced, and that tradition shall be as
problematical as it hath appeared to be, from the im-
menis labours of the clergy of different communions,
Christianity can have no support but from the civil au-
thority, and the power of the magistrate. The proper
force of religion, which subdues the mind, and restrains
the conscience by conviction, will be wanting to it.

Accordingly, these disputes have gradually led the
nations which had shaken off the yoke of an authority,
considered till then as infallible, farther than it had
been foreseen. They have almost generally rejected,
from the ancient mode of worship, what was contrary
to their reason, and have only preserved a Christianity
disengaged from all mysteries. Revelation itself hath
been abandoned in these regions, though at a later pe-
riod, by some men more bold, or who thought them-
selves more enlightened than the multitude. A man-
ner of thinking, so proud and independent, hath ex-
tended itself, in process of time, to those states which
had remained subject to Rome. As in these countries
knowledge had made less progress, and opinions had
been more confined, licentiousness in them hath been
carried to its utmost extent. Atheism, the system ei-
ther of a discontented and gloomy spirit, which sees
nothing but confusion in nature, or of a wicked man
who dreads future vengeance, or of a set of philoso-
phers neither gloomy nor wicked, who vainly imagine
they find in the properties of eternal matter a sufficient
cause for all the phenomena which excite our admira-
tion.

By an impulse founded on the nature of religions
themselves, Catholicism tends incessantly to Prote-
stantism, Protestantism to Socinianism, Socinianism to
Deism, and Deism to Scepticism. Incredulity is be-
come too general, to allow us to hope, with any de-
gree of foundation, that the ancient tenets can regain the ascendant which they enjoyed during so many centuries. Let them be always freely followed, by such of their sectators who are attached to them from conscience, by all those who find matter of consolation in them, and by all whom they incite to perform the duties of a citizen: but let all sects, the principles of which are not contrary to public order, find in general the same indulgence. It would be confident with the dignity, as well as with the wisdom of all governments, to have the same moral code of religion, from which it should not be allowed to deviate, and to give the rest up to discussions, in which the tranquillity of the world was not concerned. This would be the surest way of extinguishing, insensibly, the fanaticism of the clergy and the enthusiasm of the people.

It is partly to the discovery of the New World that we shall owe that religious toleration which ought to be, and certainly will be, introduced in the Old. Persecution would only hasten the downfall of the religions that are now established. Industry and the means of information have now prevailed among the nations, and gained an influence that must restore a certain equilibrium in the moral and civil order of society: the human mind is undeceived with regard to its former superstitions. If we do not avail ourselves of the present time to re-establish the empire of reason, it must necessarily be given up to new superstitions.

Every thing has concurred, for these two last centuries, to extinguish that furious zeal which ravaged the globe. The depredations of the Spaniards throughout America have shown the world to what excess fanaticism may be carried. In establishing their religion by fire and sword through exhausted and depopulated countries, they have rendered it odious in Europe; and their cruelties have contributed to separate a greater number of Catholics from the church of Rome, than they have gained converts to Christianity among the Indians. The concourse of persons
of all sects in North America has necessarily diffused the spirit of toleration into distant countries, and put a stop to religious wars in our climates. The sending of missionaries has delivered us from those turbulent men, who might have inflamed our country, and who are gone to carry the firebrands and swords of the gospel beyond the seas. Navigation and long voyages have insensibly detached a great number of the people from the absurd ideas which superstition inspires. The variety of religious worships, and the difference of nations, has accustomed the most vulgar minds to a sort of indifference for the object that had the greatest influence over their imaginations. Trade carried on between persons of the most opposite sects, has lessened that religious hatred which was the cause of their divisions. It has been found that morality and integrity were not inconsistent with any opinions whatever, and that irregularity of manners and avarice were equally prevalent everywhere; and hence it has been concluded that the manners of men have been regulated by the difference of climate and of government, and by social and national interest.

Since an intercourse has been established between the two hemispheres of this world, our thoughts have been less engaged about that other world, which was the hope of the few and the torment of the many. The diversity and multiplicity of objects industriously presented to the mind and to the senses, have divided the attachments of men, and weakened the force of every sentiment. The characters of men have been softened, and the spirit of fanaticism, as well as that of chivalry, must necessarily have been extinguished, together with all those striking extravagancies which have prevailed among people who were indolent and averse from labour. The same causes that have produced this revolution in the manners, have yet had a more sudden influence on the nature of government.

Society naturally results from population, and government is a part of the social state. From considering the few wants men have, in proportion to the
resources nature affords them, the little assistance and happiness they find in a civilized state, in comparison of the pains and evils they are exposed to in it; their desire of independence and liberty, common to them with all other living beings; together with various other reasons deduced from the constitutions of human nature; from considering all these circumstances, it has been doubted whether the social state was so natural to mankind as it has generally been thought.

Insulated men have generally been compared to separate springs. If in the state of nature, without legislation, without government, without chiefs, without magistrates, without tribunals, and without laws, one of these springs should clash with another, either the latter broke the former, or was broken by it, or they were both of them broken. But when, by collecting and arranging these springs, one of those enormous machines, called societies, had been formed, in which, being stretched one against the other, they act and react with all the violence of their particular energy, a real state of war was artificially created, and that of war diversified by an innumerable multitude of interests and opinions. The confusion was still infinitely greater, when two, three, four, or five of these terrible machines came to shock each other at the same time. It was then, that in the space of a few hours, more springs were broken and destroyed, than would have been in the course of twenty centuries, either before or without this sublime institution. Thus it is that the first founders of nations are satirized, under the supposition of an ideal and chimerical savage state. Men were never insulated in the manner here described. They bore within themselves a germ of sociability, which was incessantly tending to unfold itself. Had they been inclined to separate, they could not have done it; and supposing they could, they ought not; the defects of their association being compensated by greater advantages.

The weaknesses and long continuance of the infant state of man; the nakedness of his body, which has
no natural covering like that of other animals; the tendency of his mind to perfection, the necessary consequence of the length of his life; the fondness of a mother for her child, which is increased by cares and fatigues, who, after she has carried it in the womb for nine months,uckles and bears it in her arms for whole years; the reciprocal attachment arising from this habitual connection between two beings who relieve and care for each other; the numerous signs of intercourse in an organization, which, beside the accents of the voice, common to so many animals, adds also the language of the fingers, and of gestures peculiar to the human race; natural events, which in a hundred different ways may bring together, or re-unite wandering and free individuals; accidents and unforeseen wants, which oblige them to meet for the purposes of hunting, fishing, or even of defence; in a word, the example of so many creatures that live collected together in great numbers, such as amphibious animals and sea monsters, flights of cranes and other birds, even insects that are found in columns and swarms: all these facts and reasons seem to prove, that men are by nature formed for society, and that they are the sooner disposed to enter into it, because they cannot multiply greatly under the torrid zone, unless they be collected into wandering or sedentary tribes; nor can they diffuse themselves much under the other zones, without associating with their fellow-creatures, for the prey and the spoils which the necessities of food and clothing require.

From the necessity of association, arises that of establishing laws relative to the social state; that is to say, of forming, by a combination of all common and particular instincts, one general plan, that shall maintain the collective body, and the majority of individuals. For if nature directs man to his fellow-creature, it is undoubtedly by a consequence of that universal attraction which tends to the preservation and reproduction of the species. All the propensities which man brings with him into society, and all the impressions...
he receives in it, ought to be subordinate to this first impulse. To live and to propagate being the destination of every living species, it should seem that society, if it be one of the first principles of man, should concur in afflicting this double end of nature; and that instinct which leads him to the social state should necessarily direct all moral and political laws, so as that they should be more durable, and contribute more to the happiness of the majority of mankind. If, however, we consider merely the effect, we should think that the principal or supreme law of all society has been, to support the ruling power. Whence can arise this singular contrast between the end and the means; between the laws of nature and those of politics?

This is a question to which it is difficult to give a proper answer, without forming to one's self just notions of nature, and of the succession of the several governments; and history scarce affords us any assistance respecting this great object. All the foundations of the society at present are lost in the ruins of some catastrophe, some natural revolution. In all parts we see men driven away by subterraneous fires or by war, by inundations or by devouring insects, by want or famine; and joining again in some uninhabited corner of the world, or dispersing and spreading themselves over places already peopled. Police always arises from plunder, and order from anarchy; but in order to obtain some conclusion which shall be satisfactory to reason, these momentary shocks must not be attended to, and nations must be considered in a stationary and tranquil state, in which the singularities of government may appear without control.

It hath been said that there are two worlds, the natural and the moral. The more extensive the mind shall become, and the more experience it shall acquire, the more shall we be convinced that there is but one, viz. the natural world, which leads every thing, when it is not opposed by fortuitous causes, without which we should constantly have observed the same concatenation in those moral events which strike us with most
astonishment, such as the origin of religious ideas, the progress of the human mind, the discovery of truths, the source and the succession of errors, the beginning and the end of prejudices, the formation of societies, and the periodical order of the several governments.

All civilized people have been savages; and all savages, left to their natural impulse, were destined to become civilized. A family was the first society, and the first government was the patriarchal, founded upon attachment, obedience, and respect. The family is extended and divided; opposite interests excite wars between brothers, who disavow each other. One people takes up arms against another. The vanquished become the slaves of the conquerors, who share among themselves their plains, their children, and their wives. The country is governed by a chief, by his lieutenants, and by his soldiers, who represent the free part of the nation, while all the rest is subjected to the atrociousness and to the humiliations of servitude. In this state of anarchy, blinded with jealousy and ferociousness, peace is soon disturbed. These restless men march against and exterminate each other. In process of time there remains only a monarch, or a despot under the monarch. There is a shadow of justice; legislation makes some progress; ideas of property are unfolded; and the name of slave is changed into that of subject. Under the supreme will of a despot, nothing prevails but terror, meanness, flat-tery, stupidity, and superstition. This intolerable situation ceases, either by the assassination of the tyrant, or by the dissolution of the empire; and democracy is raised upon its ruins. It is then, for the first time, that the sacred name of one's country is heard. It is then that man, bent down to earth, raises his head, and appears in his dignity. Then the annals of the nation are filled with heroic deeds. Then there are fathers, mothers, children, friends, fellow-citizens, public and domestic virtues. Then the empire of the laws is established, foars to its extreme
height, the sciences arise, and useful labours are no longer deranged.

Unfortunately, this state of happiness is only temporary. In all parts, revolutions in government succeed each other with a rapidity scarce to be followed. There are few countries which have not experienced them all; and there is not any one which, in process of time, will not fulfill this periodical motion. They will all, more or less frequently, follow a regular circle of misfortunes and prosperities, of liberty and slavery, of morals and corruption, of knowledge and ignorance, of splendour and weakness; they will all go through the several points of this fatal horizon. The law of nature, which requires that all societies should gravitate towards despotism and dissolution, that empires should arise and be annihilated, will not be suspended for any one of them. While, like the needle which indicates the constant direction of the winds, they are either advancing or going back, let us see by what means Europe is arrived to that state of civilization in which it now exists.

Waving any further account of the Jewish government, unless just to observe, that this singular nation hath maintained its character, under all the vicissitudes of its destiny; that the Jews, conquered, subdued, dispersed, hated, and despised, have still remained attached to their nation; that they have carried their annals, and their country with them, into all climates; that whatever region they inhabit, they live in expectation of a deliverer, and die with their looks fixed upon their ancient temple; let us pass on to the states of Greece.

These were founded by robbers, who destroyed a few monsters, and a great number of men, in order to become kings. It was there, that during a short space of time, at least if we date from the heroic ages, and in a narrow circuit, we have a review of all the species of governments, of aristocracy, of democracy, of monarchy, of despotism, and of anarchy, which was only suspended, without being extinguished, by the ap-
proach of the common enemy. There it was that the imminent danger of slavery gave birth and stability to patriotism, which leads in its train the origin of all great talents; sublime instance of all vices, and of all virtues; an infinite number of schools of wisdom, in the midst of debauchery; and some models in the fine arts, which in all ages art will always imitate, but will never equal. The Greeks were a frivolous, pleafant, lying, and ungrateful people; they were the only original people that have excelled, or perhaps will ever exist, upon the face of the earth.

Rome, it is said, was founded by people who escaped from the flames of Troy, or was only a retreat for some banditti from Greece and Italy: but from this scum of the human race arose a nation of heroes, the scourge of all nations, the devourers of themselves; a people more astonishing than admirable, great by their qualities, and worthy of execration by the use they made of them in the times of the republic; the basest and most corrupt people under their emperors; a people, of whom one of the most virtuous men of his age used to say: If the kings be ferocious animals, who devour nations, what kind of beast must the Roman people be, who devour kings?

War, which, from all the great nations of Europe together, had formed only the Roman empire, made these very Romans, who were so numerous, become barbarians again. As the dispositions and manners of the conquering people are generally impressed upon the conquered, those who had been enlightened with the knowledge of Rome at the period when it was distinguished by its learning, now sank again into the darkness of stupid and ferocious Scythians. During ages of ignorance, when superior strength always gave the law, and chance or hunger had compelled the people of the north to invade the southern countries, the continual ebb and flow of emigrations prevented laws from being settled in any place. As soon as a multitude of small nations had destroyed a large one, many chiefs or tyrants divided each vast monarchy into feve-
Book XIX.

The people, who gained no advantage by the government of one, or of several men, were always oppressed and trampled upon from these dismemberings of the feudal anarchy. Petty wars were continually kept up between neighbouring towns, instead of those great wars that now prevail between nations.

In the meanwhile, a continual ferment led the nations to establish themselves into some regular and consistent form of government. Kings were desirous of raising themselves upon the ruins of those individuals, or of those powerful bodies of men, by whom the commotions were kept up; and to effect this, they had recourse to the assistance of the people. They were civilized, polished, and more rational laws were given them.

Slavery had oppressed their natural vigour, property restored it, and commerce, which prevailed after the discovery of the New World, increased all their powers, by exciting universal emulation.

These changes were attended with a revolution of another kind. The monarchs had not been capable of aggrandizing their power without diminishing that of the clergy, without favouring religious opinions, or endeavouring to bring them into disrepute. Innovators, who ventured to attack the church, were supported by the throne. From that time, the human understanding was strengthened by exerting itself against the phantoms of imagination, and recovering the path of nature and of reason, discovered the true principles of government. Luther and Columbus appeared; the whole universe trembled; and all Europe was in commotion: but this storm left its horizon clear for ages to come. The former awakened the understandings of men, the latter excited their activity. Since they have laid open all the avenues of industry and freedom, most of the European nations have attended with some success to the correction or improvement of legislation, upon which the felicity of mankind entirely depends. But this spirit of information hath not yet reached the Turks.
The Turks were not known in Asia till the beginning of the thirteenth century; at which time the Tartars, of whom they were a tribe, made frequent excursions upon the territories of the eastern empire, as the Goths had formerly done in the western provinces. It was in 1300 that Ottoman was declared sultan by his nation, who, living till then upon plunder, or selling their service to some Asiatic prince, had not yet thought of forming an independent empire. Ottoman became the chief among these barbarians, as a savage distinguished by his bravery becomes a chief among his equals; for the Turks at that time were only a horde fixed in the neighbourhood of a people who were half civilized.

Under this prince and his successors, the Ottoman power was daily making fresh progress; nothing rested it. Princes brought up in the midst of camps, and born captains, armies accustomed to victory by continual wars, and better disciplined than those of the Christians, repaired the defects of a bad government.

Constantinople, taken by Mohammed in 1453, became the capital of their empire; and the princes of Europe, plunged in ignorance and barbarism, could only have opposed an ineffectual dyke to this overflowing torrent, if the first successors of Mohammed, at the head of a nation which still preferred the manners, the genius, and the discipline of its founders, had not been obliged to interrupt their expeditions in Poland, in Hungary, or upon the domains of the republic of Venice, in order to go sometimes into Asia, sometimes into Africa, either against rebellious subjects or turbulent neighbours. Their fortune began to fall off as soon as their forces were divided. Successes less rapid and less brilliant occasioned their armies to lose that confidence which was the soul of their exploits. The rest of the empire, crushed under the most rigorous despotism, had not attained to any degree of splendour. It had acquired no real strength from conquests, because it had not known how to take advan-
tage of them by prudent regulations. Destroying in order to preserve, the conquerors had acquired nothing. They reigned only over provinces laid waste, and over the wrecks of the powers whom they had ruined.

While a deceitful prosperity was preparing the fall of the Ottoman empire, a contrary revolution was taking place in Christendom. The minds of men were beginning to be enlightened. Principles less extravagant were introducing themselves into Poland. Feudal government, the fertile source of so many calamities, and which had lasted for so long a time, gave way in several states to a more regular form of government. In other states it was gradually altered, either by laws or by new customs, with which some fortunate circumstances obliged it to comply. At length a power was formed in the neighbourhood of the Turks capable of resisting them: I mean the accession of Ferdinand to the throne of Hungary. This prince, master of the possessions of the House of Austria in Germany, was besides certain, from his Imperial crown, of powerful succours against the common enemy.

A military government tends to despotism; and reciprocally in every despotick government, the military man disposes sooner or later of the sovereign authority. The prince, freed from all kind of law which might restrain his power, doth not fail of abusing it, and soon commands over none but slaves, who take no kind of concern about his fate. He who oppresseth finds no defender, because he deserveth none. His grandeur is without foundation. His own fears are awakened from the same motives by which he hath excited terror in others. The use he makes of the militia against his subjects, teaches this very militia what they can do against himself. They try their strength, they mutiny, and they revolt. The want of power in the prince makes them insolent. They acquire a spirit of sedition, and it is then that they decide of the fate of their master and of his ministers.

Soliman, informed by the internal commotions which
had agitated the empire under the reigns of Bajazet II. and Selim II. of the dangers which threatened himself and his successors, thought that he could adopt no better expedient than to enact a law which deprived the princes of his house both of the command of the armies and of the government of the provinces. It was by burying in the obscurity idleness of a harem those to whom their birth gave any pretensions to the empire, that he flattered himself he should remove from the Janizaries every pretence of sedition; but he was deceived. This bad policy served only to increase the mischief of an evil that was perhaps still greater. His successors, corrupted by an effeminate education, bore without authority the sword which had founded and had extended the empire. Ignorant princes, who had frequented none but women, and conversed with none but eunuchs, were invested with an unlimited authority, the most unparalleled abuse of which completed the hatred and misery of their subjects, and plunged them in an absolute dependence on the Janizaries, became more avaricious and more untractable than ever. If sometimes, by chance, a sovereign was raised to the throne, who was worthy of occupying it, he was driven from it by ministers, enemies of a master who was able to restrain and examine their power, and penetrate into their conduct.

Though the Grand Seignior possessed vast domains, though the situation of his empire ought to interest him in the disputes of the Christian princes, he hath scarce any influence in the general system of Europe. This is the effect of the ignorance prevailing among the ministry of the Porte, of their prejudices, of the unvaribleness of their principles, of the other vices which flow from despotism, and which will perpetuate their bad policy; for tyrants dread nothing so much as novelty. They imagine that all is right; and in fact nothing advances more rapidly towards perfection than despotism. The best princes leave always a great deal of good to be done by their successors,
while the first despot scarce ever leaves any evil for a second to do. Besides, how should a Grand Seignior, funk in the voluptuousness of a seraglio, suspect that the administration of his dominions is detestable? How is it possible he should not admire the wonderful exactness of the springs, the prodigious harmony of the principles, and of the means which all concur to produce that single and super-excellent end, his most unlimited power, and the most profound servitude of his subjects? None of them are warned by the fate of so many of their predecessors, who have been either flayed or strangled.

The sultans have never changed their principles. The scimitar, at Constantinople, is still the interpreter of the Koran. Though the Grand Seignior may not be seen coming in and going out of the seraglio, like the tyrant of Morocco, with a bloody head in his hand, yet a numerous cohort of satellites is engaged to execute these horrid murders. The people sometimes massacred by their ruler, at other times assassinate the executioner in their turn; but, satisfied with this temporary vengeance, they think not of providing for their future safety, or for the happiness of their posterity. Eastern nations will not be at the trouble of guarding the public safety by laws, which it is a laborious task to form, to settle, and to preserve. If their tyrants carry their oppressions or cruelties too far, the head of the vizir is demanded, that of the despot is stricken off, and thus public tranquillity is restored. This remonstrance, which should be the privilege of the whole nation, is only that of the Janizaries. Even the most powerful men in the kingdom have not the least idea of the right of nations. As personal safety in Turkey belongs only to people of a mean and abject condition, the chief families pride themselves in the very danger they are exposed to from the government. A Bashaw will tell you, that a man of his rank is not destined, like an obscure person, to finish his days quietly in his bed. One may frequently see widows,
whole husbands have been just strangled, exulting that they have been destroyed in a manner suitable to their rank.

It is to this pitch of extravagance that men are led, when tyranny is consecrated by religious ideas, which sooner or later it must be. When men cease to take pride in their chains in the eyes of the deity, they look upon them with contempt, and soon proceed to break them. If the apotheosis of the tyrants of Rome had not been a farce, Tiberius would not have been stoned, nor would the murders committed by Nero have been avenged. Oppression, authorized by Heaven, inspires such a contempt for life, that it induces the slave to take pride even in his abject state. He is vain of being become in the eyes of his master a being of sufficient importance, that he should not disdain to put him to death. What difference is there between man and man? A Roman will kill himself for fear of owing his life to his equal; and the Mussulman will glory in the sentence of death pronounced against him by his master. Imagination, which can measure the distance of the earth from the firmament, cannot comprehend this. But what is still more surprising is, that the affectionation of a despot, so profoundly revered, far from exciting horror, doth not make the least impression. The man who would have joyfully offered him his own head a few minutes before, beholds without emotion his master's stricken off by the scimitar. His indifference seems to say, that, whether the tyrant be dead or alive, he cannot fail of the honour of being strangled under his successor.

The Russians and the Danes do not entertain the same prejudices, though subject to a power equally arbitrary; because these two nations have the advantage of a more tolerable administration, and of some written laws. They can venture to think, or even to say, that their government is limited; but have never been able to persuade any enlightened man of the truth of their assertion. While the sovereign makes and annuls the laws, extends or restrains them; and permits or suspends
the execution of them at pleasure; while his passion are the only rule of his conduct; while he is the only the central being to whom every thing tends; while nothing is either just or unjust but what he makes for; while his caprice is the law, and his favour the standard of public esteem; if this be not despotism, what other kind of government can it possibly be?

In such a state of degradation, what are men? Enslaved as they are, they can scarce venture to look up to Heaven. They are insensible of their chains, as well as of the shame that attends them. The power of their minds, extinguished in the bonds of slaver, have not sufficient energy to discover the rights insparable from their existence. It may be a matter of doubt whether these slaves be not as culpable as their tyrants, and whether the spirit of liberty may not have greater reason to complain of the arrogance of those who invade her rights, than of the weakness of those who know not how to defend them.

It hath, however, been frequently asserted, that the most happy form of government would be that of a just and enlightened despotic prince. The absurdity of this is evident; for it might easily happen that the will of this absolute monarch might be in direct opposition to the will of his subjets. In that case, notwithstanding all his justice and all his abilities, he would deserve censure to deprive them of their rights, even though it were for their own benefit. No man whatsoever is entitled to treat his fellow-creatures like to many beasts. Beasts may be forced to exchange a bad pasture for a better; but to use such compulsion with men, would be an act of tyranny. If they should say that they are very well where they are, or even if they should agree in allowing that their situation is a bad one, but that they choose to stay in it, we may endeavour to enlighten them, to undeceive them, and to bring them to juister notions by the means of persuasion, but never by those of compulsion. The befit of princes, who should even have done good against the general consent of his people, would be culpable,
if it were only because he had gone beyond his right. He would be culpable not only for the time, but even with regard to posterity; for though he might be just and enlightened, yet his successor, without inheriting either his abilities or his virtues, will certainly inherit his authority, of which the nation will become the victim. A first despot, just, steady, and enlightened, is a great calamity; a second despot, just, steady, and enlightened, would be a still greater one; but a third, who should succeed with all these great qualities, would be the most terrible scourge with which a nation could be afflicted. It is possible to emerge from a state of slavery into which we may have been plunged by violence, but never from that into which we have been led by time and justice. If the lethargy of the people be the forerunner of the loss of their liberty, what lethargy can be more mild, more profound, and more pernicious, than that which hath lasted during three reigns, and which hath been kept up by acts of kindness?

Let not therefore these pretended masters of the people be allowed even to do good against the general consent. Let it be considered, that the condition of those rulers is exactly the same as that of the cacique, who being asked, Whether he had any slaves? answered: Slaves! I know but one slave in all my district, and that is myself.

It is of so much importance to prevent the establishment of arbitrary power, and the calamities which are the infallible consequences of it, that it is impossible for the despot himself to remedy these great evils. Should he have been upon the throne for half a century; should his administration have been entirely tranquil; should he have had the most extensive knowledge; and should his zeal for the happiness of the people not have been one moment slackened; still nothing would be done. The enfranchisement, or, what is the same thing under another name, the civilization of an empire, is a long and difficult work. Before a nation hath been confirmed, by habit, in a durable attach-
ment for this new order of things; a prince, either from inability, indolence, prejudice, or jealousy, from a pre-
dilection for ancient customs, or from a spirit of tyrann-
ny, may annihilate all the good accomplished in the
course of two or three reigns; or may suffer it to be in-
effectual. All monuments therefore attest, that the
civilization of states hath been more the effect of cir-
cumstances, than of the wisdom of sovereigns. All
nations have changed from barbarism to a state of ci-
vilization; and from a civilized state to barbarism, till
some unforeseen causes have brought them to that le-
vel which they never perfectly maintain.

We may, perhaps, be allowed to doubt, whether all
these causes concur with the efforts which are at pre-
fent making towards the civilization of Ruflia.

Is the climate of this region very favourable to ci-
vilization, and to population, which is sometimes the
cause and sometimes the effect of them? Doth not
the coldness of the climate require the preservation of
the large forests, and, consequently, must not immense
spaces remain uninhabited? As an excessive length
of winter suspends the labours for the space of seven
or eight months of the year, doth not the nation, dur-
ing this time of lethargy, devote itself to gaming, to
wine, to debauchery, and to an immoderate use of spi-
ritous liquors? Can good manners be introduced,
notwithstanding the climate? and is it possible to civi-
Iize a barbarous people without manners?

Doth not the immense extent of the empire, which
embraces all kinds of climates, from the coldest to the
hottest, oppose a powerful obstacle to the legislator?
Could one and the same code suit so many different
regions? and is not the necessity of having several
codes the same thing as the impossibility of having on-
ly one? Can any means be conceived of subjecting
to one same rule people who do not understand each
other, who speak seventeen or eighteen different lan-
guages, and who preferve, from times immemorial, cus-
toms and superstitions to which they are more attached
than to their existence?
As authority weakens, in proportion as the subjects are distant from the centre of dominion, is it possible to be obeyed at a thousand miles distance from the spot from whence the commands are issued? Should any body tell me that the matter is possible by the influence of government, I shall only reply by the speech of one of these indiscreet delegates, who revealed what puffed in the mind of all the others: God is very high; the emperor is at a great distance; and I am master here.

As the empire is divided into two classes of men, that of the masters and that of the slaves, how can such opposite interests be conciliated? Tyrants will never freely consent to the extinction of servitude; and in order to bring them to this, it would be necessary to ruin or to exterminate them. But supposing this obstacle removed, how is it possible to raise from the degraded state of slavery, to the sentiment and to the dignity of liberty, people who are so entirely strangers to it, as to be either helpless or ferocious, whenever they are released from their fetters? These difficulties will certainly suggest the idea of creating a third order in the state; but by what means is this to be accomplished; and supposing the means discovered, how many ages would it require to obtain any feasible effect from them?

In expectation of the formation of this third class of men, which might, perhaps, be accelerated by colonies invited from the free countries of Europe, it would be necessary that an entire security should be established, both with respect to persons and to property; and could such a security be established in a country where the tribunals are occupied by the lords alone; where these species of magistrates reciprocally favour each other; where there can be no prosecution against them, or against their creatures, from which either the natives or the foreigners can expect that the injuries they have received should be redressed; and where venality pronounces the sentence in every kind of contest? We shall ask, whether there can be any civili-
zation without justice, and whether it be possible to establish justice in such an empire?

The towns are distributed over an immense territory. There are no roads, and those which might be constructed would be soon spoiled by the climate. Accordingly, desolation is universal, when a damp winter puts a stop to every communication. Let us travel over all the countries of the earth, and wherever we shall find no facility of trading from a city to a town, and from a village to a hamlet, we may pronounce the people to be barbarians; and we shall only be deceived respecting the degree of barbarism. In this state of things, the greatest happiness that could happen to a country of an enormous extent would be to be divided by some great revolution, and to be divided into several petty sovereignties, contiguous to each other, where the order introduced into some of them would be diffused through the rest. If it be very difficult to govern properly a large civilized empire, must it not be more so to civilize a vast and barbarous empire?

Toleration, it is true, subsists at Peterburgh, and almost in an unlimited degree. Judaism alone is excluded, because it hath been thought that its sects were either too crafty, or too deceitful in trade, to expose to their snares a people who had not experience enough to preserve themselves from them. This toleration in the capital would be a great step towards civilization, if in the rest of the empire the people did not remain immersed in the most gross superstitions; and if these superstitions were not fomented by a numerous clergy, plunged in debauchery and ignorance, without being the less revered. How can a state be civilized without the interference of priests, who are necessarily prejudicial, if not useful?

The high opinion that, according to the example of the Chinese, the Russians have of themselves, is another obstacle to reformation. They truly consider themselves as the most sensible people upon the earth, and are confirmed in this absurd vanity by those among
them who have visited the rest of Europe. These tra-
vellers bring back, or feign to bring back, into their
country, the prejudice of their own superiority, and
enrich it only with the vices which they have acquired
in the divers regions where chance hath conducted
them. Accordingly, a foreign observer, who had gone
over the greatest part of the empire, used to say, that
the Russian was rotten before he had been ripe.

We might extend ourselves more upon the difficul-
ties which nature and customs obstinately oppose to
the civilization of Russia. Let us examine the means
which have been contrived to succeed in it.

Catherine hath undoubtedly been very well con-
vinced, that liberty was the only source of public hap-
piness: and yet, hath she really abdicated despotic au-
thority? In reading attentively her instructions to the
deputies of the empire, apparently intrusted with the
formation of the laws, is anything more found in
them than the desire of altering denominations, and of
being called monarch, instead of autocratrix? or call-
ing her people subjects, instead of slaves? Will the
Russians, blind as they are, take the name, instead of
the thing, for any length of time? and will their cha-
racter be elevated, by this farce, to that great degree
of energy with which it was proposed to inspire them?

A sovereign, however great his genius may be, sel-
dom makes alterations of any consequence by himself,
and still more unfrequently gives them any degree of
stability. He stands in need of assistance, and Russia
can offer no other than that of fighting. Its soldiers
are hardy, sober, indefatigable. Slavery, which hath
inspired them with a contempt of life, hath united with
superstition, which hath inspired them with contempt
of death. They are persuaded, that, whatever crimes
they may have committed, their soul will ascend to
heaven from the field of battle. But military men, if
they defend the provinces, do not civilize them. In
vain do we seek for statesmen about the person of Ca-
therine. What she hath done of herself may be ato-

Vol. VI.
Book XIX.

This prince's hath founded houses, in which young people of both sexes are brought up with the sentiment of liberty. This will undoubtedly produce a different race from the present. But are these establishments founded upon a solid basis? Are they sustained by themselves, or by the succours which are incessantly lavished upon them? If the present reign hath seen the origin of them, will not the succeeding reign see them annihilated? Are they very agreeable to the great, who perceive the destination of them? Will not the climate, which disperses of every thing, prevail at length over good principles? Will corruption spare those young people who are lost in the immensity of the empire, and who are afflicted on all sides by bad morals?

There are a great number of academies of all kinds in the capital; and if these be filled by foreigners, will not these establishments be useless and ruinous, in a country where the learned are not understood, and where there is no employment for artists? In order that talents and knowledge might thrive, it would be necessary, that, being offspring of the soil, they should be the effect of a superabundant population. When will this population arrive to the proper degree of increase, in a country where the slave, to confide himself for the wretchedness of his condition, may indeed produce as many children as he can, but will care very little about preserving them?

All those who are admitted and brought up in the hospital recently established for foundlings, are for ever emancipated from slavery. Their descendants will not submit to the yoke again; and as in Spain there are old or new Christians, so in Russia there will be old and new freemen. But the effect of this innovation can only be proportioned to its continuance: and can we reckon upon the duration of any establishment, in a country where the succession to the empire is not yet
Inviolably confirmed, and where the inconstancy which is natural to an enslaved people brings on frequent and sudden revolutions? If the authors of these conspiracies do not form a body, as in Turkey, if they be a set of insulated individuals, they are soon assembled together, by a secret ferment and by a common hatred.

During the last war, a fund was created for the use of all the members of the empire, even of slaves. By this idea of sound and deep policy, the government acquired a capital, of which it stood in great need; and it sheltered, as much as possible, the vassals from the vexations of their tyrants. It is in the nature of things, that the confidence with which this paper money hath been received should change, and be annulled. It doth not belong to a despot to obtain credit; and if some singular events have procured it to him, it is a necessary consequence, that succeeding events will make him lose it.

Such are the difficulties which have appeared to us to counteract the civilization of the Russian empire. If Catherine II. should succeed in surmounting them, we shall have made the most magnificent eulogium of her courage and her genius; and perhaps the best apology, if she should fail in this great design.

Sweden is situated between Russia and Denmark. Let us examine the history of its constitution, and endeavour, if possible, to find out the nature of it.

Nations that are poor are almost necessarily warlike; because their very poverty, the burden of which they constantly feel, inspires them sooner or later with a desire of freeing themselves from it; and this desire, in process of time, becomes the general spirit of the nation, and the spring of the government.

It only requires a succession of sovereigns, fortunate in war, to change suddenly the government of such a country, from the state of a mild monarchy, to that of the most absolute despotism. The monarch, proud of his triumph, thinks he will be suffered to do whatever he chooses, begins to acknowledge no law but his will; and his soldiers, whom he hath led so often to
victory, ready to serve him in all things, and against all men, become, by their attachment to the prince, the terror of their fellow-citizens. The people, on the other hand, dare not refuse the chains, when offered to them by him, who, to the authority of his rank, joins that which he holds from their admiration and gratitude.

The yoke imposed by a monarch who has conquered the enemies of the state is certainly burdensome; but the subjects dare not shake it off. It even grows heavier under successors, who have not the same claim to the indulgence of the people. Whenever any considerable reverse of fortune takes place, the despot will be left to their mercy. Then the people, irritated by their long sufferings, seldom fail to avail themselves of the opportunity of recovering their rights. But as they have neither views nor plans, they quickly pass from slavery to anarchy. In the midst of this general confusion, one exclamation only is heard, and that is, Liberty. But, as they know not how to secure to themselves this inestimable benefit, the nation becomes immediately divided into various factions, which are guided by different interests.

If there be one among these factions that despair of prevailing over the others, that faction separates itself from the rest, unmindful of the general good; and being more anxious to prejudice its rivals than to serve its country, it sides with the sovereign. From that moment there are but two parties in the state, distinguished by two different names, which, whatever they be, never mean any thing more than royalists and anti-royalists. This is the period of great commotions and conspiracies.

The neighbouring powers then act the same part they have ever acted at all times, and in all countries, upon similar occasions. They foment jealousies between the people and their prince; they suggest to the subjects every possible method of debasing, degrading, and annihilating the sovereignty; they corrupt even those who are nearest the throne; they occasion
some form of administration to be adopted, prejudicial to the whole body of the nation, which it impoverishes under pretence of exerting itself for their liberty, and injurious to the sovereign, whose prerogative it reduces to nothing.

The monarch then meets with as many authorities opposed to his, as there are ranks in the state. His will is then nothing without their concurrence. Assemblies must then be Holden, proposals made, and affairs of the least importance debated. Tutors are affiliated to him, as to a pupil in his non-age; and those tutors are persons whom he may always expect to find ill-intentioned towards him.

But what is then the state of the nation? The neighbouring powers have now, by their influence, thrown everything into confusion; they have overthrown the state, or seduced all the members of it by bribery or intrigues. There is now but one party in the kingdom, and that is the party which espouses the interest of the foreign powers. The members of the factions are all dissemblers. Attachment to the king is an hypocrisy, and aversion for monarchy another. They are two different masks to conceal ambition and avarice. The whole nation is now entirely composed of infamous and venal men.

It is not difficult to conceive what must happen after this. The foreign powers that had corrupted the nation must be deceived in their expectations. They did not perceive that they carried matters too far; that, perhaps, they acted a part quite contrary to that which a deeper policy would have suggested; that they were destroying the power of the nation, while they meant only to restrain that of the sovereign, which might one day exert itself with all its force, and meet with no resistance capable of checking it; and that this unexpected effect might be brought about in an instant, and by one man.

That instant is come; that man hath appeared; and all these base creatures of adverse powers have prostrated themselves before him. He told these men, who
thought themselves all-powerful, that they were no-
thing. He told them, I am your master; and they
declared unanimously that he was. He told them,
these are the conditions to which I would have you
submit; and they answered, we agree to them. Scarce
one dissenting voice was heard among them. It is im-
possible for any man to know what will be the con-
quence of this revolution. If the king will avail him-
sel of these circumstances, Sweden will never have
been governed by a more absolute monarch. If he be
prudent; if he understand that an unlimited sovereign
can have no subjects, because he can have no persons
under him possessed of property; and that authority
can only be exerted over those who have some kind of
property; the nation may, perhaps, recover its origi-
nal character. Whatever may be his designs or his
inclinations, Sweden cannot possibly be more unhap-
py than she was before.

Poland, which has none but slaves within, and there-
fore deserves to meet with none but oppressors without,
still preserves, however, the shadow and the name of
liberty. This kingdom is, at present, no better than
all the European states were ten centuries ago, subject
to a powerful aristocracy, which elects a king, in order
to make him subservient to its will. Each nobleman,
by virtue of his feudal tenure, which he preserves with
his sword, as his ancestors acquired it, holds a personal
and hereditary authority over his vassals. The feudal
government prevails there in all the force of its primi-
tive institution. It is an empire composed of as many
states as there are lands. All the laws are settled there,
and all resolutions taken, not by the majority, but by
the unanimity of the suffrages. Upon false notions of
right and perfection, it has been supposed that a law
was only just when it was adopted by unanimous con-
sent; because it has undoubtedly been thought, that
what was right would both be perceived and put in
practice by all; two things that are impossible in a na-
tional assembly. But can we even ascribe such pure
intentions to a set of tyrants? For this constitution,
which boasts the title of a republic, and profanes it, is only a league of petty tyrants against the people. In this country, every one has the power to restrain, and no one the power to act. Here the will of each individual may be in opposition to the general one; and here only a fool, a wicked man, and a madman, is sure to prevail over a whole nation.

In this state of anarchy, there is a perpetual struggle between the great and the monarch. The former torment the chief of the state by their avidity, their ambition, and their misfortune; they irritate him against liberty, and compel him to have recourse to intrigue. The prince, on his part, divides in order to command, seduces in order to defend himself, and opposes artifice to artifice in order to maintain himself. The factions are inflamed, discord throws every thing into confusion, and the provinces are delivered up to fire, to sword, and to devastation. If the confederacy should prevail, he who should have governed the nation is expelled from the throne, or reduced to the most ignominious dependence. If it should be subdued, the sovereign reigns only over carcases. Whatever may happen, the fate of the multitude experiences no fortunate revolution. Such of these unhappy people who have escaped from famine and carnage, continue to bear the chains with which they were crushed.

If we go over these vast regions, what shall we see in them? The regal dignity, with the title of a republic; the pomp of the throne, with the inability of infusing obedience; the extravagant love of independence, with all the meanness of slavery; liberty, with cupidity; laws, with anarchy; the most excessive luxury, with the greatest indigence; a fertile soil, with fallow lands; a taste for all the arts, without any one of them. Such are the enormous contrasts Poland will exhibit.

It will be found exposed to every danger. The weakest of its enemies may enter with impunity, and without precaution, upon its territory, levy contributions, destroy the towns, ravage the country places.
and massacre or carry off the inhabitants. Destitute of troops, of fortresses, of artillery, of ammunition, of money, of generals, and totally ignorant of military principles, what defence could it think of making? With a sufficient population, with sufficient genius and resources to appear of some consequence, Poland is become the opprobrium and the sport of nations.

If turbulent and enterprising neighbours had not yet invaded its possessions; if they had been satisfied with laying it waste, with dictating to it, and with giving it kings; it is because they were continually mistrustful of each other, but particular circumstances have united them. It was referred for our days to see this state torn in pieces by three powerful rivals, who have appropriated to themselves those provinces that were most suitable to them, while no power of Europe hath exerted itself to prevent this invasion. It is in the midst of the security of peace, without rights, without pretensions, without grievances, and without a shadow of justice, that the revolution hath been accomplished by the terrible principle of force, which is, unfortunately, the best argument of kings. How great Poniatowski would have appeared, if, when he saw the preparations for this division, he had presented himself in the midst of the diet, and there abdicating the marks of his dignity, had proudly said to his nobles assembled, "It is your choice that hath raised me to the throne. If you repent of it, I resign the royal dignity. The crown which you have placed upon my head, let it devolve to any one whom you shall think more worthy of it than me: name him, and I will withdraw. But if you persist in your former oaths, let us fight together to save our country, or let us perish along with it." I appeal to the dividing powers, whether so generous a step would not have faved Poland from ruin, and its prince from the disgrace of having been its last sovereign. But fate hath determined the matter otherwise. May this crime of ambition turn out to the advantage of mankind; and by prudently recurring to the sound principles of good
policy, may the usurpers break the chains of the most laborious part of their new subjects! These people, become less unhappy, will be more intelligent, more active, more affectionate, and more faithful.

In a monarchy, the forces and wills of every individual are at the disposal of one single man; in the government of Germany, each separate state constitutes a body. This is, perhaps, the nation that resembles most what it formerly was. The ancient Germans, divided into colonies by immense forests, had no occasion for a very refined legislation. But in proportion as their descendants have multiplied and come nearer each other, art has kept up in this country what nature had established, the separation of the people and their political union. The small states that compose this confederate republic preserve the character of the first families. Each particular government is not always parental, or the rulers of the nations are not always mild and humane. But still reason and liberty, which unite the chiefs to each other, soften the severity of their dispositions and the rigour of their authority: a prince in Germany cannot be a tyrant with the same security as in large monarchies.

The Germans, who are rather warriors than a warlike people, because they are rather proficients in the art of war than addicted to it from inclination, have been conquered but once; and it was Charlemagne who conquered, but could not reduce them to subjection. They obeyed the man, who, by talents superior to the age he lived in, had subdued and enlightened its barbarism; but they shook off the yoke of his successors. They preferred, however, the title of emperor to their chief; but it was merely a name, since, in fact, the power resided almost entirely in the barons who possessed the lands. The people, who in all countries have unfortunately always been enslaved, spoiled, and kept in a state of misery and ignorance, each the effect of the other, reaped no advantage from the legislation. This subverted that social equality which does not tend to reduce all conditions and estates to
the same degree, but to a more general diffusion of property; and upon its ruins was formed the feudal government, the characteristic of which is anarchy. Every nobleman lived in a total independence, and each people under the most absolute tyranny. This was the unavoidable consequence of a government where the crown was elective. In those states where it was hereditary, the people had at least a bulwark and a permanent refuge against oppression. The regal authority could not extend itself, without alleviating for some time the fate of the vassals, by diminishing the power of the nobles.

But in Germany, where the nobles took advantage of each interregnum to invade and to restrain the rights of the Imperial power, the government could not but degenerate. Superior force decided every dispute between those who could appeal to the sword. Countries and people were only the caufes or the objects of war between the proprietors. Crimes were the support of injustice. Rapine, murder, and conflagrations, not only became frequent, but even lawful. Superflition, which had consecrated tyranny, was compelled to restrain it. The church, which afforded an asylum to banditti of every kind, established a truce between them. The protection of saints was implor ed to escape the fury of the nobles. The ashes of the dead were only sufficient to awe the ferocioufnets of these people; so alarming are the terrors of the grave, even to men of cruel and savage dispositions.

When the minds of men, kept in constant alarm, were disposed to tranquillity through fear, policy, which avails itself equally of reason and the passions, of ignorance and understanding, to rule over mankind, attempted to reform the government. On the one hand, several inhabitants in the countries were enfranchised; and on the other, exemptions were granted in favour of the cities. A number of men in all parts were made free. The emperors, who, to secure their election even among ignorant and ferocious princes, were obliged to discover some abilities and
some virtues, prepared the way for the improvement of the legislation.

Maximilian improved the means of happiness which time and particular events had concurred to produce in his age. He put an end to the anarchy of the great. In France and Spain, they had been made subject to regal authority; in Germany, the emperors made them submit to the authority of the laws. For the sake of the public tranquillity, every prince is amenable to justice. It is true, that these laws established among princes, who may be considered as lions, do not save the people, who may be compared to lambs: they are still at the mercy of their rulers, who are only bound one towards another. But as public tranquillity cannot be violated, nor war commenced, without the prince who is the cause of it being subject to the penalties of a tribunal that is always open, and supported by all the forces of the empire, the people are less exposed to those sudden irruptions, and unforeseen hostilities, which, threatening the property of the sovereigns, continually endangered the lives and safety of the subjects.

Why should not Europe be one day entirely subject to the same form of government? Why should there not be the ban of Europe, as there is the ban of the empire? Why should not the princes composing such a tribunal, the authority of which should be contented to by all, and maintained unanimously against any one refractory member, realize the beautiful visionary system of the Abbé St. Pierre? Why should not the complaints of the subjects be carried to this tribunal, as well as the complaints of one sovereign against another? Then would wisdom reign upon the earth.

While this perpetual peace, which hath been so long withed for, and which is still at such a distance, is expected, war, which formerly established right, is now subject to conditions that moderate its fury. The claims of humanity are heard even in the midst of carnage. Thus Europe is indebted to Germany for the improvement of the legislation in all states; regulari-
ty and forms even in the revenge of nations; a certain equity even in the abuse of power; moderation in the midst of victory; a check to the ambition of all potentates; in a word, fresh obstacles to war, and fresh encouragements to peace.

This happy constitution of the German empire has improved with the progress of reason ever since the reign of Maximilian. Nevertheless, the Germans themselves complain, that, although they form a national body, distinguished by the same name, speaking the same language, living under the same chief, enjoying the same privileges, and connected by the same interests, yet their empire has not the advantage of that tranquillity, that power and consideration, which it ought to have.

The causes of this misfortune are obvious. The first is the obscurity of the laws. The writings upon the *jus publicum* of Germany are numberless; and there are but few Germans who are verified in the constitution of their country. All the members of the empire now send their representatives to the national assembly, whereas they formerly sat there themselves. The military turn, which is become universal, has precluded all application to business, suppressed every generous sentiment of patriotism, and all attachment to fellow-citizens. There is not one of the princes who has not settled his court too magnificently for his income, and who does not authorize the most flagrant oppressions to support this ridiculous pomp. In short, nothing contributes to the decay of the empire so much as the too extensive dominion of some of its princes. The sovereigns, become too powerful, separate their private interest from the general good. This reciprocal diffusion among the states, is the reason that, in dangers which are common to all, each province is left to itself. It is obliged to submit to that prince, whoever he may be, whose power is superior; and thus the Germanic constitution degenerates insensibly into slavery or tyranny.

Great Britain was but little known before the Ro-
mans had carried their arms there. After these proud conquerors had forsaken it, as well as the other provinces distant from their dominion, in order to defend the centre of their empire against the barbarians, it became the prey of the inhabitants of the Baltic Sea. The natives of the country were massacred; and upon their remains several sovereignties were founded, which were in time united into one. The principles by which the Anglo-Saxons were guided have never been handed down to us; but we know, that, like all the northern nations, they had a king and a body of nobility.

William subdued the southern part of the island, which even at that time was called England, and established a feudal government in it, but very different from that which was seen in the rest of Europe. In other parts, government was nothing but a labyrinth without an issue, a perpetual anarchy, and the right of the strongest. This terrible conqueror established it upon a more respectable, a more regular, and a more permanent footing, referring to himself exclusively the right of hunting and of war, the power of levying taxes, the advantage of having a court of justice, where civil or criminal causes of all the orders of the state were ultimately adjudged by him and by the great officers of his crown, whom he appointed or dismissed at pleasure.

As long as the tyrant lived, the conquered people, and the foreigners whom he had employed to subdue them, submitted to this harsh yoke, as it were, almost unanimously, and without murmuring openly. Afterwards, both the one and the other, being accustomed to a more moderate authority, endeavoured to recover some of their primitive rights. Despotism was so firmly established, as to render it impossible to subvert it, without the most complete unanimity. Accordingly, a league was formed, in which all the citizens without distinction, either of noblemen or of peasants, of inhabitants of towns or of the country, united their resentments and their interests. This universal confederacy
softened a little the destiny of the nation under the reigns of the two first Henrys; but it was not till during that of John that it truly recovered its liberty. Fortunately this turbulent, cruel, ignorant, and disinterested monarch, was compelled, by force of arms, to grant that famous charter, which abolished the most oppressive of the feudal laws, and secured to the vassals, respecting their lords, the same rights as were confirmed to the lords in regard to kings; which put all persons, and every species of property, under the protection of peers and of juries, and which, even in favour of the vassals, diminished the oppression of slavery.

This arrangement suspended for a short time the jealousy subsisting between the barons and the princes, without extinguishing entirely the source of it. The wars began again, and the people availed themselves of the idea they had given of their strength and courage during these commotions, in order to gain admission into parliament under Edward I. Their deputies, it is true, had at first no more than the right of representation in this assembly; but this success was the prelude to other advantages, and accordingly the commons soon determined the subsidies, and made part of the legislation; they even soon acquired the prerogative of impeaching and bringing to judgment those ministers who had abused the authority they were intrusted with.

The nation had gradually reduced the power of the chiefs to what it ought to be, when it became engaged in long and obstinate wars against France, and when the pretensions of the House of York and Lancaster made all England a scene of carnage and of desolation. During these dreadful commotions the din of arms alone was heard. The laws were silent, and they did not even recover the least part of their force when the storms were appeased. Tyranny was exerted with so many atrocious acts, that citizens of all ranks gave up every idea of general liberty in order to attend only to their personal safety. This cruel
despotism lasted more than a century. Elizabeth her-
self, whose administration might, in several respects,
serve as a model, always conducted herself according
to principles entirely arbitrary.

James I. apparently recalled to the minds of the
people those rights which they seemed to have for-
gotten; less wise than his predececssors, who had con-
tented themselves with tacitly enjoying unlimited pow-
er, and, as it were, under the veil of mystery, this
prince, deceived by the name of monarchy, encou-
raged in his illusion by his courtiers and his clergy,
openly avowed his pretensions with a degree of blind
simplicity, of which there had been no example. The
doctrine of passive obedience, issuing from the throne,
and taught in the churches, diffused universal alarm.

At this period, liberty, that idol of elevated minds,
which renders them ferocious in a savage state and
haughty in a civilized one, liberty, which had reign-
ed in the breasts of the English at a time even when
they were but imperfectly acquainted with its advan-
tages, inflamed the minds of all men. In the reign
of this first of the Stuarts, however, it was only a per-
petual struggle between the prerogatives of the crown
and the privileges of the citizens. Opposition appear-
ed under another aspect in the reign of the obstinate
successor of this weak despot. Arms became the sole
arbiter of these great concerns, and the nation show-
ed, that in combating formerly for the choice of their
tyrants, they had paved the way for destroying them,
punishing, and expelling them at another time.

To put an end to the spirit of revenge and mistrust,
which would have been perpetuated between the king
and the people as long as the Stuarts had occupied
the throne, the English chose from a foreign race, a
prince who was obliged to accept at last of that so-
cial compact of which all hereditary monarchs affect
to be ignorant. William III. received the crown on
certain conditions, and contented himself with an au-
thority established upon the same basis as the rights of
the people. Since a parliamentary claim is become
BOOK

the sole foundation of royalty, the conventions have not been infringed.

The government is formed between absolute monarchy, which is tyranny; democracy, which tends to anarchy; and aristocracy, which, fluctuating between one and the other, falls into the errors of both. The mixt government of the English, combining the advantages of these three powers, which mutually observe, moderate, assist, and check each other, tends from its very principles to the national good. These several springs, by their action and reaction, form an equilibrium from which liberty arises. This constitution, of which there is no instance among the ancients, and which ought to serve as a model to all people, whose geographical position will admit of it, will last for a long time, because at its origin, which is usually the work of commotions, of manners, and of transient opinions, it became the work of reason and experience.

The first fortunate singularity in the constitution of Great Britain, is to have a king. Most of the republican states known in history, had formerly annual chiefs. This continual change of magistrates proved an inexhaustible source of intrigues and confusion, and kept up a continual commotion in the minds of men. By creating one very great citizen England hath prevented the rising up of many. By this stroke of wisdom those dissensions have been prevented, which in all popular associations have induced the ruin of liberty, and the real enjoyment of this first of blessings before it had been lost.

The royal authority in England is not only for life, but is also hereditary. At first sight, nothing appears more advantageous for a nation than the right of choosing its masters. An inexhaustible source of talents and virtues seems to spring from this brilliant prerogative. This would indeed be the case, if the crown were necessarily to devolve to the citizen most worthy to wear it. But this is a chimerical idea, disproved by the experience of all people and of all ages. A throne
hath always appeared to the eyes of ambition, of too great a value to be the appurtenance of merit alone. Those who aspire to it have always had recourse to intrigue, to corruption and to force. Their competition hath excited at every vacancy a civil war, the greatest of political calamities, and the person who hath obtained the preference over his competitors, hath been nothing more during the course of his reign but the tyrant of the people, or the slave of those to whom he owed his elevation. The Britons are therefore to be commended for having averted from themselves these calamities, by putting the reins of government into the hands of a family that had merited and obtained their confidence.

It was proper to secure to the chief of the state a revenue sufficient to support the dignity of his rank. Accordingly, at his accession to the throne, an annual subsidy is granted to him for his own life, fit for a great king, and worthy of an opulent nation. But this concession is not to be made till after a strict examination of the state of public affairs; after the abuses which might have introduced themselves in preceding reigns have been reformed, and after the constitution hath been brought back to its true principles. By this management England hath obtained an advantage which all free governments had endeavoured to procure to themselves, that is to say, a periodical reformation.

To assign to the monarch that kind of authority best calculated for the good of the people, was not so easy a matter. All histories attest, that wherever the executive power hath been divided, the minds of men have always been agitated with endless hatred and jealousies, and that a sanguinary contest hath always tended to the ruin of the laws and to the establishment of the strongest power. This consideration determined the English to confer on the king alone this species of power, which is nothing when it is divided; since there is then neither that harmony, nor
HISTORY OF SETTLEMENTS AND TRADE

BOOK XIX.

that secrecy, nor that dispatch, which can alone impart energy to it.

From this great prerogative necessarily follows the disposal of the forces of the republic. The abuses of them would have been difficult in times when the militia were but seldom assembled, and only for a few months, and when therefore they had no time to lose that attachment they owed to their country. But since all the princes of Europe have contracted the ruinous habit of maintaining, even in time of peace, a standing army of mercenary troops, and since the safety of Great Britain hath required that she should conform to this fatal custom, the danger is become greater, and it has been necessary to increase the precautions. The nation alone hath the power of assembling the troops; she never settles them for more than a year, and the taxes established for the payment of them have only the same duration. So that if this mode of defence, which circumstances have induced to think necessary, should threaten liberty, it would never be long before the troubles would be put an end to.

A still firmer support to the English liberty, is the division of the legislative power. Wherever the monarch can establish or abolish laws at pleasure there is no government; the prince is a despot, and the people are slaves. If the legislative power be divided, a well-regulated constitution will scarce ever be corrupted, and that only for a short time. From the fear of being suspected of ignorance or corruption, neither of the parties would venture to make dangerous proposals, and if either of them should, it would disgrace itself to no purpose. In this arrangement of things, the greatest inconvenience that can happen, is that a good law should be rejected, or that it should not be adopted so soon as the greatest possible good might require. The portion of the legislative power which the people have recovered, is insured to them by the exclusive regulation they have of the taxes. Every state hath both customary and contingent wants. Neither the one nor the
other can be provided for any otherwise than by taxes, and in Great Britain the sovereign cannot exact one. He can only address himself to the Commons, who order what they think most suitable to the national interest, and who, after having regulated the taxes, have an account given to them of the use they have been put to.

It is not the multitude who exercise these inestimable prerogatives, which their courage and their perseverance have procured to them. This order of things, which may be proper for feeble associations, would necessarily have subverted everything in a great state. Representatives, choosen by the people themselves, and whose destiny is connected with theirs, reflect, speak, and act for them. As it was possible, however, that, either from indolence, weaknesses, or corruption, these representatives might fail in the most august and the most important of duties, the remedy of this great evil hath been found in the right of election. As soon as the time of the commission expires, the electors are assembled. They grant their confidence again to those who have shewn themselves worthy of it, and they reject with disdain those who have betrayed it. As a discernment of this kind is not above the abilities of common men, because it depends upon facts, which are usually very simple, those disorders are thus terminated which did not derive their source from the effects of government, but from the particular dispositions of those who directed its operations.

Nevertheless, there might result from this division of power between the king and the people a continual struggle, which, in process of time, might have brought on either a republic or slavery. To prevent this inconvenience, an intermediate body hath been established, which must be equally apprehensive of both these revolutions. This is the order of the nobility, destined to lean to the side which might become the weakest, and thus ever to maintain the equilibrium. The constitution, indeed, hath not given them the same degree of authority as to the Commons; but the splen-
dour of hereditary dignity, the privileges of a seat in the House of Peers, belonging to themselves and without election, together with some other prerogatives of honour, have been contrived to substitute as much as possible to what they wanted in real strength.

But if, notwithstanding so many precautions, it should at length happen, that some ambitious and enterprising monarch should wish to reign without his parliament, or to compel them to agree to his arbitrary decisions, the only resource remaining to the nation would be resistance.

It was upon a system of passive obedience, of divine right, and of power not to be dissolved, that the regal authority was formerly supported. These absurd and fatal prejudices had subdued all Europe; when, in 1688, the English precipitated from the throne a superstitious, persecuting, and despotic prince. Then it was understood, that the people did not belong to their chiefs; then the necessity of an equitable government among mankind was incontrovertibly established; then were the foundations of societies settled; then the legitimate right of defence, the last resource of nations that are oppressed, was incontrovertibly fixed. At this memorable period, the doctrine of resistance, which had till then been only one act of violence opposed to other acts of violence, was avowed in England by the law itself.

But how is it possible to render this great principle useful and efficient? Will a single citizen, left to his own strength, ever venture to strive against the power, always formidable, of those who govern? Will he not necessarily be crushed by their intrigues, or by their oppression? This would undoubtedly be the case, were it not for the indefinite liberty of the press. By this fortunate expedient, the actions of the depositaries of authority become public. Any vexations or outrages that have been committed over the most obscure individual, are soon brought to light. His cause becomes the cause of all; and the oppressors are punished, or satisfaction is only offered for the injury, accord-
ing to the nature of the offence, or the disposition of the people.

This description of the British Constitution, made without art, must have convinced all persons of a proper way of thinking, that there hath never been a constitution so well regulated upon the face of the globe. We shall be confirmed in this opinion, when we consider that the most important affairs have always been publicly canvassed in the senate of the nation, without any real mischief having ever resulted from it. Other powers think they stand in need of the veil of mystery, to cover their operations. Secrecy appears to them essential to their preservation, or to their prosperity. They endeavour to conceal their situation, their projects, and their alliances, from their enemies, from their rivals, and even from their friends. The quality of being impenetrable, is the greatest praise they think they can bestow upon a statesman. In England, the internal, as well as external, proceedings of government, are all open, all exposed to the face of day. How noble and confident it is, in a nation, to admit the universe to its deliberations! How honest, and advantageous it is, to admit all the citizens to them! Never hath Europe been told, in a more energetic manner: *We do not fear thee.* Never hath it been laid, with more confidence and justice, to any nation: *Try us, and see whether we be not faithful depositaries of your interests, of your glory, and of your happiness.* The empire is constituted with sufficient strength, to repel the shocks which are inseparable from such a custom, and to give this advantage to neighbours who may not be favourably inclined.

But is this government a perfect one? Certainly not; because there is not, neither can there be, any thing perfect in this world. In a matter so complicated, how is it possible to foresee and to obviate every thing? Perhaps, in order that the chief of the nation should be as dependent upon the will of the people, as would be suitable to their security, liberty, and happiness, it
would be necessary that this chief should have no property out of his kingdom. Otherwise the good of one country happening to clash with that of the other, the interests of the precarious sovereignty will often be sacrificed to those of the hereditary sovereignty; otherwise, the enemies of the state will have two powerful means of molesting it; sometimes by intimidating the king of Great Britain, by threats addressed to the elector of Hanover; sometimes by engaging the king in fatal wars, which they will prolong at pleasure; sometimes by compelling the elector to put an end to these hostilities by a shameful peace. Will the nation meanly abandon the king in quarrels that are foreign to them? and if they should interfere, will it not be at their expence, at the loss of their revenues and of their population? Who knows whether the danger of the foreign sovereignty will not render him base, and even treacherous, to the national sovereignty? In this case, the British nation could do nothing better than to say to their sovereign: Either resign your sovereignty or your electorate; abdicate the dominions you hold from your ancestors, if you mean to keep those you hold from us.

A constitution, in which the legislative and executive power are separate, bears within itself the seeds of perpetual contest. It is impossible that peace should reign between two opposite political bodies. Prerogative must endeavour to extend itself, and press upon liberty, and vice versa.

Whatever admiration we may have for a government, if it can only preserve itself by the same means by which it had been established; if its future history must exhibit the same scenes as the past, such as rebellion, civil wars, destruction of the people, the afflication or expulsion of kings, a state of perpetual alarms and commotions, who would wish for a government upon such conditions? If peace, both within and without, be the object of administration, what shall we think of an order of things that is incompatible with it?
Would it not be to be wished, that the number of representatives should be proportioned to the value of property, and to the exact ratio of patriotism? Is it not absurd that a poor hamlet, or a wretched village, should depute as many or more members to the assembly of the Commons, as the most opulent city or district? What interest can these men take in the public felicity, which they scarce partake of? What facility will not bad ministers find in their indigence to bribe them; and to obtain, by money, that majority they stand in need of. O, shame! The rich man purchases the suffrages of his constituents, to obtain the honour of representing them; and the court buys the vote of the representative, in order to govern with more despotic sway. Would not a prudent nation endeavour to prevent both the one and the other of these corruptions? Is it not surprising that this hath not been done upon the day, when a representative had the impudence to make his constituents wait in his antichamber, and afterwards to say to them: I know not what you want, but I will only act as I think proper; I have bought you very dear, and I am resolved to sell you as dear as I can: Or even upon that day, when the minister boasted of having in his pocket-book the rates of every man's probity in England?

Is there nothing to object against the effort of these three powers, acting perpetually one upon the other, and tending incessantly to an equilibrium which they will never obtain? This struggle, is it not somewhat similar to a continual anarchy? Doth it not endanger commotions, in which, from one moment to another, the blood of the citizens may be spilt, without our being able to foresee whether the advantage will remain on the side of tyranny or on that of liberty? And if all circumstances be well weighed, would not a nation left independent and more quiet be happy?

These defects, and others added to them, will they not one day bring on the decline of the government? This is a circumstance we cannot decide; but we are

R. iii
BOOK XIX.

convinc'd it would be a great misfortune for the na-
tions, since they all owe to it a milder defliny than
that which they before enjoyed. The example of a
free, rich, magnanimous, and happy people, in the
midst of Europe, hath engaged the attention of all
men. The principles from which many benefits have
been derived, have been adopted, diffused, and pre-
sented to the monarchs, and to their delegates; who,
to avoid being accused of tyranny, have been obliged
to adopt them, with more or less modification. The
ancient maxims would soon be revived, if there did
not exist, as it were, in the midst of us, a perpetual
tribunal, which demonstrated the depravity and abfur-
dity of them.

But, if the enjoyments of luxury should happen to-
tally to pervert the morals of the nation; if the love
of pleasure should soften the courage of the coman-
ders and officers of the fleets and armies; if the intoxi-
cation of temporary successes, if vain ideas of false
greatness, should excite the nation to enterprizes above
their firength; if they should be deceived in the choice
of their enemies, or their allies; if they should lose
their colonies, either by making them too extensive,
or by laying restraints upon them; if their love of pa-
triotism be not exalted to the love of humanity; they
will, sooner or later, be enlaved, and return to that
kind of insignificancy from whence they emerged on-
ly through torrents of blood, and through the calamit-
ties of two ages of fanaticism and war. They will be-
come like other nations whom they despise, and Eu-
rope will not be able to shew the univerfe one nation
in which she can venture to pride herself. Despotism,
which always oppresses most heavily minds that are
subdued and degraded, will alone rive superior, amidst
the ruin of arts, of morals, of reason, and of liberty.

The history of the United Provinces is replete with
very singular events. Their combination arose from
depair, and almost all Europe encouraged their esta-
blishment. They had but just triumphed over the long
and powerful efforts of the court of Spain to reduce them to subjection, when they were obliged to try their strength against the Britons, and disconcerted the schemes of France. They afterwards gave a king to England, and deprived Spain of the provinces she possessed in Italy and the Low Countries, to give them to Austria. Since that period, Holland has been disgusted of such a system of politics, as would engage her in war; she attends solely to the preservation of her constitution, but, perhaps, not with sufficient zeal, care, and integrity.

The constitution of Holland, though previously modelled on a plan that was the result of reflection, is not less defective than those which have been formed by chance. One of its principal defects is, that the sovereignty is too much divided.

It is a mistake to suppose that the authority resides in the States General fixed at the Hague. The fact is, that the power of the members who compose this assembly consists only in deciding upon matters of form, or police. In alliances, peace, war, new taxes, or any other important matter, each of the deputies must receive the orders of his province; which is itself obliged to obtain the consent of the cities. The consequence of this complicated order of things is, that the resolutions, which would require the greatest secrecy and celerity, are necessarily tardy and public.

It seems, that in an union contracted between this number of states, independent of each other, and connected only by their common interest, each of them ought to have had an influence proportioned to its extent, to its population, and to its riches: but this fortunate basis, which enlightened reason ought to have founded, is not adopted by the confederate body. The province which bears more than half of the public expenses hath no more votes than that which contributes only one hundredth part of them; and in that province, a petty town, uninhabited and unknown, hath legally the same weight as this unparalleled city,
the activity and industry of which are a subject of astonishment and of jealousy to all nations.

The unanimity of the towns and provinces, which is required for all important resolutions, is not a measure of more judicious policy. If the most considerable members of the republic should resolve to act without the concurrence of the less important branches, this would be a manifest infringement of the principles of the union; and if they should lay a great stress upon obtaining their suffrages, they will not succeed without much solicitation or concessions. Whichever of these two expedients have been adopted, when the parties have differed, the harmony of the United States hath usually been disturbed, and frequently in a violent and permanent manner.

The imperfections of such a constitution did not, in all probability, escape the Prince of Orange, the founder of this republic. If this great man permitted that they should serve as a basis to the government which was establishing, it was undoubtedly in hopes that they would render the election of a Stadtholder necessary, and that this supreme magistrate would always be chosen in his family. This view of a profound ambition hath not always been attended with success; and this singular magistracy, which united to the absolute disposal of the land and sea forces several other important prerogatives, hath been twice abolished.

At these periods, which are remarkable in the history of a state, unparalleled in the annals of the Old and of the New World, great changes have been produced. The authors of the revolution have boldly divided all the authority among themselves. An intolerable tyranny hath been everywhere established, with more or less effrontery. Under pretence that the general assemblies were tumultuous, fatiguing, and dangerous, the people have no longer been called in to elect the depositaries of the public authority. The burgomasters have chosen their sheriffs, and have seized upon the finances, of which they gave no account, but to their equals or constituents. The senators have
arrogated to themselves the right of completing their own body. Thus the magistracy hath been confined to a few families, who have assumed an almost exclusive right of deputation to the States General. Each province and each town have been at the disposal of a small number of citizens, who, dividing the rights and the spoils of the people, have had the art of eluding their complaints, or of preventing the effects of any extraordinary discontent. The government has become almost aristocratic. Had the reformation been extended only to what was defective in the constitution, the House of Orange might have apprehended that they should no more be reinstated in that degree of splendour from which they had fallen. A less disinterested conduct hath occasioned the restoration of the stadtholdership; and it hath been made hereditary, even in the female line.

But will this dignity become in time an instrument of oppression? Enlightened men do not think it possible. Rome, say they, is always quoted as an example to all our free states, that have no circumstance in common with it. If the dictator became the oppressor of that republic, it was in consequence of its having oppressed all other nations; it was because its power, having been originally founded by war, must necessarily be destroyed by it; and because a nation composed of soldiers could not escape the despotism of a military government. However improbable it may appear, it is yet certain, that the Roman republic submitted to the yoke, because it paid no taxes. The conquered people were the only tributaries to the treasury. The public revenues, therefore, necessarily remaining the same after the revolution as before, property did not appear to be attacked; and the citizen thought he should be still free enough, while he had the disposal of his own.

Holland, on the contrary, will maintain its liberty, because it is subject to very considerable taxes. The Dutch cannot preserve their country without great expenses. The sense of their independence alone excites
an industry proportionable to the load of their contributions, and to the patience necessary to support the burden of them. If to the enormous expences of the state it were necessary to add those which the pomp of a court requires; if the prince were to employ in maintaining the agents of tyranny what ought to be bestowed on the foundations of a land obtained, as it were, from the sea, he would soon drive the people to despair.

The inhabitant of Holland, placed upon a mountain, and who observes at a distance the sea rising eighteen or twenty feet above the level of the lands, and dashing its waves against the dykes he has raised, considers within himself, that sooner or later this bounteous element will get the better of him. He disdains to precariously a dwelling; and his house, made either of wood or stone at Amsterdam, is no longer looked upon as such: it is his ship that is his asylum; and by degrees he acquires an indifference and manners conformable to this idea. The water is to him what the vicinity of volcanos is to other people.

If to these natural causes of the decay of a patriotic spirit were joined the loss of liberty, the Dutch would quit a country that cannot be cultivated but by men who are free; and these people, so devoted to trade, would carry their spirit of commerce, together with their riches, to some other part of the globe. Their islands in Asia, their factories in Africa, their colonies in America, and all the ports in Europe, would afford them an asylum. What stadtholder, what prince, revered by such a people, would wish, or dare, to become their tyrant?

A ferocious, ambitious man, or a ferocious warrior, might possibly attempt it. But among those who are destined to govern the nation, are such men rarely to be found. Every thing seems to conspire in exciting the greatest apprehensions in the republic upon this important point. There are scarce any natives on board their fleets, except a few officers. Their armies are composed of, recruited, and commanded by fo-
reigners, devoted to a chief, who, according to their ideas, can never arm them against people to whom they are attached by no tie. The fortresses of the state are all governed by generals who acknowledge no other laws beside those of the prince. Courtiers degraded in their characters, overwhelmed with debts, destitute of virtue, and interested in the subversion of the established order, are perpetually raised to the most important posts. It is by favour, that a set of commanders, devoid of shame and of ability, have been placed, and are maintained in the colonies; men who, either from motives of gratitude or of cupidity, are inclined to accomplish the slavery of those distant regions.

Against so many dangers, of what avail can be the general lethargy, the thirst of riches, the taste for luxury, which begins to insinuate itself, the spirit of trade, and the perpetual condescensions shown for an hereditary authority? According to every probability, the United Provinces, without effusion of blood, and without commotion, must insensibly fall under the yoke of a monarchy. As the spirit of despotism, or the desire of meeting with no opposition to our wills, is inherent in the mind of every man in a greater or less degree, some stadtholder may arise, and perhaps soon, who, regardless of the fatal consequences of his enterprise, will enslave the nation. It concerns the Dutch attentively to consider these observations.

The Roman empire was shaking on all sides, when the Germans entered into Gaul, under the guidance of a chief whom they had chosen themselves, and to whom they were rather companions than subjects. This was not an army, the ambition of which was limited to the seizing of some fortified places; it was the irruption of a people in search of a settlement. As they attacked none but slaves, dissatisfied with their fate, or masters enervated by the luxuries of a long peace, they met with no very obstinate resistance. The conquerors appropriated to themselves the lands
which suited them, and separated soon after, in order
to enjoy their fortune in peace.

The division was not the work of blind chance. The posseffions were settled by the general assemblie, and they were enjoyed under its authority. They were granted at first for no more than one year; but this period was gradually prolonged, and was at last extended to the life of the posseffror. Matters were car-
ried still further, when the springs of government be-
came entirely relaxed; and under the feeble descen-
dants of Charlemagne, hereditary posseffion was almost generally establisshed. This usurpation was consecrated by a solemn convention, at the accession of Hugo Cap-
net to the throne; and at that period the feudal te-

ture, that most destructive of all rights, prevailed in all its force.

France was then no more than an assemblage of petty sovereignties, situated near each other, but with-
out having any connection. In this state of anarchy, the lords, entirely independent of the apparent chief of the nation, oppressed their subjects, or their slaves, at pleasure. If the monarch interested himself in the fate of these unhappy people, they declared war against him; and if these people themselves sometimes ven-
tured to appeal to the rights of mankind, the confe-
quence was, that the chains with which they were crushed became still more opprressive.

In the meanwhile, the extinction of some powerful houses, together with various treaties and conquests, were successively adding to the royal domain territo-
ries of greater or less extent. This acquisition of se-
veral provinces gave to the crown a mass of power, which imparted to it some degree of energy. A per-
petual contest between the kings and the nobles, an alternate superiority of the power of one single person, or of several; such was the kind of anarchy that lasted, almost without interruption, till about the middle of the fifteenth century.

The character of the French was then changed by
a train of events which had altered the form of go-
vernment. The war which the English, in conjunc-
tion with, or under the direction of, the Normans, had
incessantly carried on against France for two or three
hundred years past, spread a general alarm, and occa-
sioned great ravages. The triumphs of the enemy,
the tyranny of the great, all conspired to make the
nation with that the prince might be invested with
power sufficient to expel foreigners out of the king-

dom, and to keep the nobles in subjection. While
princes, distinguished by their wisdom and bravery,
were endeavouring to accomplish this great work, a
new generation arose. Every individual, when the
general alarm was past, thought himself happy enough
in the privileges his ancestors had enjoyed. They ne-
lged to trace the source of the power of kings, which
was derived from the nation; and Lewis XI. having
few obstacles to surmount, became more powerful than
his predecessors.

Before his time, the history of France presents us
with an account of a variety of states, sometimes di-
vided and sometimes united. Since that prince’s reign,
it is the history of a great monarchy. The power of
several tyrants is centered in one person. The people
are not more free; but the constitution is different.
Peace is enjoyed with greater security within, and war
carried on with more vigour without.

Civil wars, which tend to make a free people be-
come slaves, and to restore liberty to a nation that is
already enslaved, have had no other effect in France
than that of humbling the great, without exalting the
people. The ministers, who will always be the crea-
tures of the prince, while the general sense of the na-
tion has no influence in affairs of government, have
fold their fellow-citizens to their master; and as the
people, who were possessed of nothing, could not be
lovers by this servitude, the kings have found it the
more easy to carry their designs into execution, espe-
cially as they were always concealed under pretence
of political advantage, and even of alleviating the bur-
den of the people. The jealousy excited by a great inequality of conditions and fortunes, hath favoured every scheme that tended to aggrandize the regal authority. The princes have had the art to engage the attention of the people, sometimes by wars abroad, sometimes by religious disputes at home; to suffer the minds of men to be divided by opinions, and their hearts by different interests; to excite and keep up jealousies between the several ranks of the state; to flatter alternately each party with an appearance of favour, and to satisfy the natural envy of the people by the depression of them all. The multitude, reduced to poverty, and become the objects of contempt, having seen all-powerful bodies brought low one after another, have at least loved in their monarch the enemy of their enemies.

The nation, though by inadvertency it has lost the privilege of governing itself, has not, however, submitted to all the outrages of despotism. This arises from the loss of its liberty not having been the effect of a tumultuous and sudden revolution, but gradually brought about in a succession of several ages. The national character which hath always influenced the princes as well as the court, if it were only by means of the women, hath established a sort of balance of power; and thus it is that polite manners having tempered the exertion of force, and softened the opposition that might be made to it, have prevented those sudden and violent commotions, from whence results either monarchical tyranny or popular liberty.

Inconstancy, as natural to the minds of a gay and lively people as it is to children, hath fortunately prevailed over the systems of some despotic ministers. Kings have been too fond of pleasure, and too conversant with the real source of it, not to be induced frequently to lay aside the iron sceptre, which would have terrified the people, and prevented them from indulging in those frivolous amusements to which they were addicted. The spirit of intrigue, which hath ever prevailed among them, since the nobles have been in-
vited to court, hath occasioned continual removals of statesmen, and consequently subverted all their projects. As the change in government has been imperceptibly brought about, the subjects have preferred a kind of dignity, which the monarch himself seemed to respect, considering it as the source or consequence of his own. He has continued the supreme legislator for a long time, without being either willing or able to abuse his whole power. Kept in awe by the bare idea only of the fundamental laws of the nation he governed, he has frequently been afraid to act contrary to the principles of them. He has been sensible that the people had right to oppose to him. In a word, there has been no tyrant, even at a time when there was no liberty.

Such, and still more arbitrary, have been the governments of Spain and Portugal, of Naples and Piedmont, and of the several small principalities of Italy. The people of the south, whether from inactivity of mind or weakness of body, seem to be born for despotism. The Spaniards, though they are extremely proud, and the Italians, notwithstanding all the powers of genius they possess, have lost all their rights, and every idea of liberty. Wherever the monarchy is unlimited, it is impossible to ascertain, with any degree of precision, what the form of government is, since that varies, not only with the character of each sovereign, but even at every period of the same prince's life. These states have written laws and customs, and societies that enjoy certain privileges; but when the legislator can subvert the laws and tribunals of justice; when his authority is founded only on superior strength, and when he calls upon God with a view to inspire his subjects with fear, instead of imitating him in order to become an object of affection; when the original right of society, the unalienable right of property among citizens, when national conventions and the engagements of the prince are in vain appealed to; in a word, when the government is arbitrary, there...
BOOK is no longer any state; the nation is no more than the landed property of one single individual.

In such countries, no state will ever be formed. Far from its being a duty to be acquainted with public affairs, it is rather criminal and dangerous to have any knowledge of the administration. The favour of the court, the choice of the prince, supply the place of talents. Talents, it is true, have their use; and are sometimes of use to serve the designs of others, but never to command. In these countries, the people submit to the government their superiors impose, provided only they are indulged in their natural indolence. There is only one system of legislation in these delightful regions of Europe that merits our attention, which is the republic of Venice. Three great phenomena make this state remarkable; these are, its first foundation, its power at the time of the crusades, and its present form of administration.

A great, magnificent, and rich city, impregnable, though without walls or fortifications, rules over seventy-two islands. They are not rocks and mountains raised by time in the midst of a vast sea, but rather a plain, parcelled out and cut into channels by the stagnations of a small gulf, upon the slope of a low land. These islands, separated by canals, are at present joined by bridges. They have been formed by the ravages of the sea, and the ravages of war have occasioned them to be peopled towards the middle of the fifth century. The inhabitants of Italy, flying from Attila, sought an asylum on the sea.

The Venetian Lagunes at first neither made a part of the same city, nor of the same republic. United by one general commercial interest, or rather by the necessity of defending themselves, they were, however, divided into as many separate governments as islands, each subject to its respective tribune.

From the plurality of chiefs contentions arose, and the public good was consequently sacrificed. These people, therefore, in order to constitute one body,
chose a prince, who, under the title of Duke or Doge, enjoyed for a considerable time all the rights of sovereignty, of which he only now retains the signs. These Doges were elected by the people till 1173: at that period the nobles arrogated to themselves the exclusive privilege of appointing the chief of the republic; they seized upon the authority, and formed an aristocracy.

Those political writers who have given the preference to this kind of government, have said, with some show of reason, that all societies, in whatever way they may have been formed, have been governed in this manner. If in democratic states the people were to settle their administration themselves, they would necessarily fall into extravagances; and they are therefore obliged, for their own preservation, to submit to a senate, more or less numerous. If in monarchies kings pretended to see every thing with their own eyes, and to do every thing themselves, nothing would either be seen or done; and it hath therefore been necessary to have recourse to councils, to preserve empires from a stagnation, more fatal, perhaps, than a state of action ill conducted. Every thing, therefore, may be traced to the authority of many, and of a small number; every thing is conducted according to the principles of aristocracy.

But in the monarchical form of government, command is not settled in one class of citizens, and obedience in the rest; the road to honours and to employments is open to every one who hath the necessary talents to obtain them; the nobles are not every thing, and the people nothing. Substitute aristocracy to this form of government, and we shall find nothing but slavery and despotism.

Venice, in its origin, tempered as much as possible the defects of this odious and unjust government. The several branches of power were distributed and balanced with remarkable accuracy. Prudent and severe laws were enacted, to suppress and strike awe into the ambition of the nobles. The great reigned without
disturbance, and with a kind of equality, as the stars
shine in the firmament amidst the silence of the night.
They were obliged outwardly to conform to the cus-
toms of the several orders of the republic, in order
that the distinction between patricians and plebeians
might become less odious. The hope even of sharing,
in process of time, the rights of sovereignty, was ex-
tended to those who from rank were excluded from
it, if by their services and their industry they should
one day acquire consideration and riches.

This was the only regular form of government then
existing in Europe. Such an advantage raised the Ve-
etians to great opulence, enabled them to keep ar-
mies in their pay, and imparted to them that know-
ledge which made them a political people, before any
of the rest were. They reigned over the seas; they
had a manifest preponderance in the continent; they
formed or diffused leagues, according as it suited their
interest.

When the commerce of the republic was ruined by
the discovery of the New World, and of the passage
to India by the Cape of Good Hope, it was depriv-
ed of every advantage which had given it grandeur,
strength, and courage. To these illusions, which in
some measure console the subjects for the loss of their
liberty, were substituted the seduction of voluptuous-
ness, pleasures, and effeminacy. The great grew cor-
rupt as well as the people, the women as well as the
men, the priests as well as the laymen, and licentious-
ness knew no bounds. Venice became the country
upon the earth where there were fewer factitious vices
and virtues.

In proportion as the minds, the dispositions, and the
power of man became enervated within, it was a ne-
cessary consequence that less vigour and less exertion
should show itself without. Accordingly the republic
fell into the most pusillanimous circumpection. They
assumed and added still more to the national character
of Italy, which is jealously and mistrust. With one half
of the treasures and care which it hath cost them to
maintain that neutrality they have observed for two book centuries past, they would perhaps have freed them-

selves for ever from the dangers to which their very precautions have exposed them.

The republic doth not appear to be in a state of tranquillity, notwithstanding all the cares that have been taken for its security. Its anxiety is manifested by the principles of its government, which become constantly more severe by the extreme horror of every thing that is in the least elevated; by the aversion which it shows for reason, the use of which it considers as a crime; by the mysterious and dark veils with which it conceals its operations; by the precaution which it constantly takes to place foreign command-
ers at the head of its feeble troops, and to appoint in-
spectors over them; by the forbidding, indiscriminate-
ly, all those who are its subjects, to go and inure them-
selves to war in the field of battle; by its informers;

by all the refinements of insidious policy; and by va-

rious other means which discover continual apprehen-
sions and alarms. It seems to place its chief confi-
dence in an inquisitor, who is continually prying a-

bout amongst individuals, with the axe raised over the
head of any one who shall venture to disturb public or-

der by his actions or by his discourses.

Every thing, however, is not censurable in Venice. The impot which supplies the treasury with 25,000,000 of livres [1,041,666l. 13s. 4d.], hath neither increased nor diminished since the year 1707. Every method is taken to conceal from the citizens the idea of their slavery, and to make them easy and cheerful. The form of worship is replete with ceremonies. There are no great festivals without public spectacles and music. One may say and do what one chooses at Ve-

nec, if one does not speak in public either of politics or of religion. A Christian orator preaching before the chiefs of the republic, imagined that he ought to begin his discourse with an eulogium of the govern-

ment; immediately a satellite was dispatched to take him out of his pulpit; and being the next day fus-

S iij
B O O K x n.

moned to appear before the tribunal of the state in-

quistors, he was told, *What need have we of your enco-
miums? Be more cautious.* They were well aware that
an administration is soon censured in every place where
it is allowed to be extolled. The state inquisitors do
not retain their functions longer than eighteen months.
They are chosen from among the most moderate per-
sons, and the least act of injustice is followed by their
deposition. They address all men in the familiar mode
of the second person, and would even adopt it in speak-
ing to the doge. Any person who is summoned before
them is obliged to appear without delay. A secretary
of state was not excused by alleging the necessity of
finishing his dispatches. It is true that the doors are
shut while causes are trying; but these causes of alarm
to foreigners are the real protection of the people, and
the counterpoise to the tyranny of the aristocratic bo-
dy. About six years ago it was deliberated in council
whether this formidable tribunal should not be aboli-
ished; and immediately the most wealthy citizens
were preparing to withdraw themselves; and a neigh-
bouring king foretold that Venice would not exist ten
years longer after the suppression of this magistracy.
Accordingly, were it not for the terror with which it
inspires the citizens, they would be incessantly expo-
ed to vexations from a number of patricians who lan-
guish in indigence. After some violent contests, the
inquisition was confirmed by a majority of votes, and
the four persons who had moved the debate were pu-
nished only by assigning to them honourable employ-
ments, which kept them at a distance from the re-
public.

During the carnival, monks and priests go to the
public diversions in masks. It is well known, that a
degraded ecclesiastic can have no influence. A patri-
cian, who is become either monk or priest, is no more
than a common citizen. The horror of executions is
kept up by the unfrequency of them. The people
are persuaded that the devils are flying about the gib-
bet to seize upon the souls of the persons executed. A
capuchin friar once thought of saying, that of a hundred drowned persons no one would be saved, and that of a hundred persons executed on the gallows not one would be damned. As it was of consequence to the Venetians that one should not fear being drowned, but that one should fear being hanged, the preacher had orders to teach the contrary, notwithstanding the authority of St. Austin.

If the naval forces of the Venetians are commanded by a patrician alone, it is only since the celebrated Morosini, admiral of their fleet at the expedition of the Peloponnesus, told them, that it had been in his power to starve them. If the land forces can only be commanded by a foreign general, it is from the just apprehension, that a citizen might take advantage of the affection of the soldiers to become the tyrant of his country.

There are a multitude of magistrates placed at the head of different affairs, which must accelerate the dispatch of them. The doge may solicit and obtain favours, but he cannot grant any. There are preservers of the laws, to whom the new regulations proposed by the senate to the council are referred. They examine them and make their reports to the council, who decide accordingly. The council therefore represents the republic, the senate the legislative body subordinate to the council, and the state inquisitor is a kind of tribune to protect the people.

An inquisitor is not, in my opinion, a very tremendous person, since it is possible to punish him when he becomes inconstant. There is no such thing as being found in France as a sheriff's officer, who would venture to deliver a summons to a magistrate of a superior order. At Venice a legal proceeding may be carried on against either a patrician or an inquisitor. Their goods may be sold, their persons seized, and they may be thrown into prison.

The Venetian ministry have obscure agents in all the courts, by whom they are informed of the character of the men in favour, and the means of sedu...
BOOK XIX.

Cing them; they support themselves by their cunning. There is another republic which derives its strength, and supports itself by its form and its courage, and that is Switzerland.

The Switzers, known in antiquity by the name of Helvetians, were, as the Gauls and the Britons, only to be subdued by Cæsar, who was the greatest of the Romans, if he had been more attached to his country. They were united to Germany, as a Roman province, under the reign of Honorius. Revolutions, which are frequent and easily accomplished in such a country as the Alps, divided colonies, that were separated by large lakes or great mountains, into several baronies. The most considerable of these occupied by the House of Austria, in process of time seized upon all the rest. Conquest introduced slavery, oppression excited the people to revolt, and thus liberty arose from an unbounded exertion of tyranny.

There are now thirteen cantons of robust peasants, who defend almost all the kings of Europe, and fear none; who are better acquainted with their real interests than any other nation; and who constitute the most sensible people in all modern political states. These thirteen cantons compose among themselves, not a republic as the seven provinces of Holland, nor a simple confederacy as the Germanic body, but rather a league, a natural association of so many independent republics. Each canton has its respective sovereignty, its alliances, and its treaties separate. The general diet cannot make laws or regulations for either of them.

The three most ancient cantons are immediately connected with each of the others. It is from this union of convenience, not of constitution, that if one of the thirteen cantons were attacked, all the rest would march to its assistance. But there is no common alliance between the whole body and each particular canton. Thus the branches of a tree are united among themselves, without having an immediate connection with the common trunk.
The union of the Switzers was, however, indifférent till the beginning of the 16th century; when religion, which ought to be the bond of peace and charity, disunited them. The reformation caused a separation of the Helvetic body, and the state was divided by the church. All public affairs are transacted in the separate and particular diets of the Catholic and Protestant parties. The general diets are assembled only to preserve the appearance of union. Notwithstanding this source of discord, Switzerland has enjoyed peace much more than any state in Europe.

Under the Austrian government, oppression and the raising of troops impeded population. After the revolution, there was too great an increase of the number of people in proportion to the barrenness of the land. The Helvetic body could not be enlarged without endangering its safety, unless it made some excursions abroad. The inhabitants of these mountains, as the torrents that pour down from them, were to spread themselves in the plains that border upon the Alps. These people would have destroyed each other, had they remained sequestered among themselves. But ignorance of the arts, the want of materials for manufactures, and the deficiency of money, prevented the importation of foreign merchandise, and excluded them from the means of procuring the comforts of life, and of encouraging industry. They drew even from their increase of numbers, a method of subsisting and acquiring riches, a source and an object of trade.

The duke of Milan, master of a rich country open on every side to invasion, and not easily defended, was in want of soldiers. The Switzers, who were his most powerful neighbours, must necessarily become his enemies, if they were not his allies, or rather his protectors. A kind of traffic was therefore set on foot between these people and the Milanese, in which men were bartered for riches. The nation engaged troops successively in the service of France, of the emperor, of the pope, of the duke of Savoy, and all the potentates of Italy. They sold their blood to the most di-
BOOK XIX.

ant powers, and to the nations most in enmity with each other; to Holland, to Spain, and to Portugal; as if these mountains were nothing more than a repository of arms and soldiers, open to every one who wanted to purchase the means of carrying on war.

Each canton treats with that power which offers the most advantageous terms. The subjects of the country are at liberty to engage in war at a distance, with an allied nation. The Hollander is, by the constitution of his country, a citizen of the world; the Switzer, by the same circumstance, a destroyer of Europe. The profits of Holland are in proportion to the degree of cultivation, and the consumption of merchandise; the prosperity of Switzerland increases in proportion to the number of battles that are fought, and the slaughter that attends them.

It is by war, that calamity inseparable from mankind, whether in a state of civilization or not, that the republics of the Helvetic body are obliged to live and subsist. It is by this that they preserve a number of inhabitants within their country proportioned to the extent and fertility of their lands, without forcing any of the springs of government, or restraining the inclinations of any individual. It is by the traffic of troops with the powers at war with each other, that Switzerland has not been under the necessity of making sudden emigrations, which are the cause of invasions, and of attempting conquests, which would have occasioned the loss of its liberty, as it caused the subversion of all the republics of Greece.

As far as human foresight can penetrate into futurity, the state of these people must be more permanent than that of all other nations, if differences in their form of worship do not become fatal to them. From the top of their barren mountains, they behold, groaning under the oppression of tyranny, whole nations which nature hath placed in more plentiful countries, while they enjoy in peace the fruits of their labour, of their frugality, of their moderation, and of all the virtues that attend upon liberty. If it were pol-
fible that habit could blunt their sensibility for so mild a destiny, it would be incessantly revived in them by that multitude of travellers who resort there to enjoy the sight of that felicity which is not to be seen elsewhere. Undoubtedly, the love of riches hath somewhat altered that amiable simplicity of manners, in such of the cantons where the arts and commerce have made any considerable progress; but the features of their primitive character are not entirely effaced, and they still retain a kind of happiness unknown to other men. Can it be apprehended that a nation may grow tired of such an existence?

The weight of taxes cannot alter the advantages of this destiny. These scourges of the human race are unknown in most of the cantons, and in the rest they amount to little or nothing. In some places only, a dangerous abuse hath been introduced. Administrators, known under the title of bailiffs, take upon themselves to impose in their own jurisdiction arbitrary fines, which they make use of for their own private benefit. This extravagance of the feudal laws cannot last, and every vestige will soon be lost of so odious a custom, which in process of time would affect the public felicity.

The nation will never be disturbed by its propensities, which naturally lead it to order, tranquility, and harmony. If any turbulent or dangerous characters are to be found there, who may be fond of factions and tumults, they mix in foreign wars to endeavour to gratify this restless disposition.

It is not possible that the several cantons should attempt reciprocally to subdue each other. Those in which democracy is established, are too feeble to conceive so unreasonably a project; and in the others, the patricians and plebeians will never unite their wishes and their exertions for an aggrandizement, the consequences of which might become fatal to one of the orders.

The tranquillity of the Helvetic body is still less in danger from their neighbours than from their citizens. As in the disputes between crowned heads, the Swiss
BOOK observe a very impartial neutrality, and as they never
become guarantees of any engagement, they are not
known to have any enemies. If any power should
think it had a cause of complaint against them, it
would stifle its resentment from the well-grounded ap-
prehension of miscarriages in its projects of revenge
against a country entirely military, and which reckons
as many soldiers as men. If even it were certain of
conquering them, they would never be attacked, be-
cause the blindest and most violent policy doth not ex-
terminate a people to take possession of nothing but
rocks. Such are the motives which induce us to be-
lieve in the stability of the republic of Switzerland.

It now remains that we speak of the ecclesiastical
government. If the foundation of Christianity pre-
fents us with a scene that astonishes the mind, the hi-
tory of the revolutions in the government of the
church is not less surprising. What an enormous dif-
erence is there between St. Peter, a poor fisherman,
on the borders of the lake of Genezareth, and servant
of the servants of God; and some of his proud suc-
cessors, their brows girt with the triple crown, masters
of Rome, and of a great part of Italy, and calling
themselves the Kings of the Kings of the earth! Let
us trace things up to their origin; and let us take a
rapid view of the splendour and of the corruption of
the church. Let us see what its government is be-
come in the space of eighteen centuries; and let pre-
fent and future sovereigns learn what they are to ex-
pect from the priesthood, the sole principle of which
is to render the authority of the magistrates subor-
dinate to the divine authority, of which it is the de-
pository.

In an obscure village of Judea, and in the house
of a poor carpenter, there arose a man of austere mo-
rals. His candour was disgusted with the hypocrisy
of the priests of his time. He had discovered the va-
nity of legal ceremonies, and the vice of expiations;
at thirty years of age this virtuous person quitted his
employment, and began to preach his opinions. The
multitude, from the villages and country places, flock-ed around him, listened to him, and followed him. He associated to himself a small number of disciples, ignorant and weak men, taken from the lowest conditions of life. He wandered for some time about the capital, and at length ventured to appear there. One of his own disciples betrayed him, and the other denied him. He was taken up, accused of blasphemy, and crucified between two thieves. After his death his disciples appeared in the public places, and in the great cities, at Antioch, at Alexandria, and at Rome. They announced, both to barbarous and civilized people, at Athens and at Corinth, the resurrection of their Master; and the belief of their doctrine, which seemed to contrary to reason, was universally adopted. In all parts corrupt men embraced a system of morality, antithetical in its principles and unfociable in its councils. Persecution arose; and the preachers, together with their converts, were imprifoned, scourged, and put to death. The more blood is spilt, the more doth the sect extend itself. In less than three centuries, the temples of idolatry are subverted or abandoned; and notwithstanding the hatred, heresies, schisms, and fanguiary quarrels, which have torn Christianity since its origin, even down to our latter times; yet there are scarce any altars remaining, except such as are raised to the man God, who died upon a cross.

It was no difficult matter to demonstrate to the Pagans the absurdity of their worship; and in all general, as well as particular disputes, if we can prove that our adversary is in the wrong, he immediately concludes that we are in the right. Providence, which tends to the accomplishment of its designs by all sorts of means, intended that this mode of reasoning should lead men into the way of salvation. The founder of Christianity did not arrogate to himself any authority, either over the partners of his mission, or over his followers, or over his fellow-citizens. He respected the authority of Cæsar. When he saved the life of an adulterous woman, he took care not to attack the law
BOOK which condemned her to death. He referred two brothers, who were at variance concerning the division of an inheritance, to the civil tribunal. When persecuted, he suffered persecution. In the midst of intolerant persons, he recommended toleration. You shall not, said he to his disciples, command fire to come down from heaven upon the head of the unbeliever; you shall shake off the very dust from your feet, and you shall retire: Fastened to a cross, his head crowned with thorns, his side pierced with a spear, he said to God: Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do. To instruct and to baptize the nations, was the object of the mission of the apostles; to employ persuasion and not violence; to go about in the same manner God had sent his Son, such were the means employed for the purpose. Priesthood hath in no time conformed itself to such maxims; and yet religion hath not been the less prosperous.

In proportion as the new doctrine gained ground, a kind of hierarchy was instituted among its ministers, consisting of bishops, priests, acolytes, and sacrificants, or porters. The object of the administration itself, included doctrine, discipline, and morals. To confer sacred orders, was the first act of the jurisdiction of the church. To set persons free, or to bind them, and to appoint a spiritual and voluntary expiation for offences, was the second. To excommunicate the rebellious sinner, or the heretic, was the third; and the fourth, which is common to every association, was to institute rules of discipline. These rules, at first kept secret, and which were chiefly on the administration of the sacraments, were made public, assemblies or councils were held. The bishops were the representatives of the apostles; the rest of the clergy were subordinate to them. Nothing was decided without the concurrence of the faithful; so that this was a true democracy. Civil matters were referred to the arbitration of the bishops. The Christians were blamed for having law-suits; and still more for expelling themselves to be brought before the magistrate. It is pro-
bable that property was in common, and that the bish-
shop disposed of it at pleasure.

Hitherto every thing was conducted without the in-
terference of the secular power. But under Aurelian,
the Christians applied to the emperor for justice against
Paul of Samosata. Constantine banished Arius, and
condemned his writings to the flames; Theodosius
persecuted Nestorius; and these innovations fixed the
period of the second state of ecclesiastical jurisdiction:
when it had now deviated from its primitive simpli-
city, and was become a mixture of spiritual power
and coercive authority. The faithful, already ex-
tremely numerous, in the second century, were distri-
bututed in different churches subject to the same ad-
ministration. Among these churches, there were some
more or less considerable; secular authority interfered
in the election of bishops, and the confusion between
these two powers increased. There were some poor
and some rich among them, and this was the first origin
of the ambition of the clergy. There were indigent
believers among them all; and the bishops became
the dispensers of the alms: and this is the most an-
cient source of the corruption of the church.

What a rapid progress hath ecclesiastical authority
made since the end of the third century! Proceedings
are carried on before the bishops; and they become
the arbiters in civil matters. The judicial sentence of
the bishop admits of no appeal; and the execution of
it is referred to the magistrates. The trial of a priest
cannot be carried out of the province. A distinction
arises between civil and ecclesiastical crimes, and this
gives birth to the privilege of the clergy. The appeal
to the sovereign is allowed, if it should happen that
the sentence of the bishop should be invalidated at the
tribunal of the magistrates. Long before these con-
cessions, the bishops had obtained the inspection over
the police and the morals; they took cognizance of
prostitutions, foundlings, guardianships, lunatics, and
minors; they visited the prisons; they solicited the en-
largement of the prisoners; they denounced the negli-
gent judges to the sovereign; they interfered with the
disposal of the public money, with the construction and
repairing of the great roads, and other edifices. Thus
it is, that, under pretence of afflicting each other, the
two authorities were blended, and paved the way for
the diffusions which were one day to arise between
them. Such was in the first centuries, in the prospe-
rous days of the church, the third state of its govern-
ment, half civil, half ecclesiastical, to which, at
present, we scarcely know what name to give. Was
it from the weakness of the emperors, from their fear,
from intrigue, or from sanctity of manners, that the
chiefs of Christianity conciliated to themselves so ma-
ny important prerogatives? At that time religious
terror had peopled the deserts with anchorets, more
than seventy-six thousand of whom were reckoned:
this was a nursey of deacons, priests, and bishops.

Constantine transferred the seat of empire to Byzan-
tium. Rome was no more its capital. The Barba-
rians, who had taken it more than once, and ravaged
it, were converted. It was the fate of Christianity,
which had conquered the gods of the Capitol, to sub-
due the destroyers of the throne of the Caesars; but in
changing their religion, these chiefs of hordes did not
change their manners. What strange kind of Chris-
tians were Clovis and his successors! exclaims the au-
thor of the history of the church. Notwithstanding
the analogy between the ecclesiastical and the feudal
government, it would be an illusion to make one the
model of the other. Literature was no longer culti-
vated; and the priests employed the little knowledge
they had preserved, in forging titles, and in fabricat-
ing legends. The harmony between the two powers
was disturbed. The origin and the riches of the bish-
ops attached the Romans, who neither had, nor
could have, any thing but contempt and aversion for
their new matters; some of whom were Pagans, others
Heretics, and all of them ferocious. No man ever
doubted of the donation of Constantine; and that of
Pepin was confirmed by Charlemagne. The grandeur
of the bishops of Rome increased under Lewis the De-
bonnaire, and under Otho. They arrogated that lo-
overeignty which their benefactors had reserved for
themselves. Like other potentates, they founded their
claim upon prescription. The church was already in-
flicted with pernicious maxims; and the opinion, that
the bishop of Rome might depose kings, was univer-
"sally adopted. Different causes afterwards concurred
in establishing the supremacy of this see over the rest.
The prince of the apostles had been the first bishop of
Rome. Rome was the centre of union between all
the other churches, the indigence of which she reliev-
ed. She had been the capital of the world; and the
Christians were not so numerous anywhere else. The
title of pope was a title common to all bishops, over
whom the bishop of Rome did not obtain the supe-
riority till the end of the eleventh century. At that
time ecclesiastical government tended not only to mo-
narchy, but had even advanced towards universal
monarchy.

Towards the end of the eighth century, the famous
decretals of Isidorus of Seville appeared. The pope
announced himself to be infallible. He withdrew him-
selves from his former submission to the councils. He
held in his hand two swords; one the emblem of his
spiritual, the other of his temporal power. Discipline
was no more. The priests were the slaves of the pope,
and kings were his vassals. He required tributes from
them; he abolished the ancient judges, and appointed
new ones. He created primates. The clergy were
exempted from all civil jurisdiction; and Gratian the
monk, by his decree, completed the mischief occasion-
ed by the decretales. The clergy employed themselves
in augmenting their income by every possible mode.
The possession of their estates was declared immutable
and sacred. Men were terrified with temporal as well
as spiritual threats. Tithes were exacted. A traffic
was made of relics; and pilgrimages were encouraged.
This completed the destruction of morality, and the
last stroke was thus given to the discipline of the
church. A criminal life was expiated by a wandering one. Events were construed into the judgments of God; and decisions by water, by fire, or by the destiny of the faints, were adopted. The folly of judiciary astrology was added to superstitious opinions. Such was the state of the Western church: an absolute despotism, with all its atrocious characters.

The Eastern church experienced also its calamities. The Grecian empire had been dismembered by the Arabian Muffulmen, by modern Scythians, by the Bulgarians, and by the Russians. These last were not amended by being washed with the waters of baptism. Mohammedism deprived Christianity of part of its followers, and threw the rest into slavery. In the West, the Barbarians, converted to Christianity, had carried their manners along with them into the church. In the East, the Greeks had become depraved by their commercial intercourse with a race of men perfectly similar. Nevertheless, literature seemed to revive under the learned and vicious Photius. While the clergy of the East were striving against ignorance, our clergy in the West became hunters and warriors, and were possessed of lordships subject to military service. Bishops and monks marched under standards, massacred, and were massacred. The privileges of their domains had engaged them in public affairs. They wandered about with the ambulatory courts; they afflicted at the national assemblies, which were become parliaments or councils; and this was the period of entire confusion between the two powers. Then it was that the bishops pretended openly to be the judges of sovereigns; that Vamba was compelled to do penance, invested with a monk’s habit, and deposed; that the right of reigning was contested to Lewis the Debonnaire; that the popes interfered in the quarrels between nations, not as mediators, but as dethrone; that Adrian II. forbade Charles the Bald to invade the fates of his nephew Clotaire; and that Gregory IX. wrote to St. Lewis in these terms: We have condemned Frederick II. who called himself Emperor, and have de-
posed him; and we have elected in his stead Count Ro-
bert, your brother.

But if the clergy encroached upon the rights of the
temporal power, the lay lords appointed and installe-
d priests, without the participation of the bishops; re-
gular benefices were given to seculars, and the con-
vent were pillaged. Neither incontinence nor simony
excited any shame. Bishoprics were sold; abbeys
purchased; priests had either a wife or a concubine;
the public temples were forsaken; and this disorder
brought on the abuse and contempt of censures, which
were poured forth against kings, and against their sub-
jects; and torrents of blood were shed in all countries.
The church and the empire were then in a state of
anarchy. Pilgrimages were preludes to the crusades,
or the expiation for crimes and affinities. Eccle-
siastics of all orders, believers of all ranks, inlisted
themselves. Persons loaded with debts were dispensed
from paying them; malefactors escaped the pursuit of
the laws; corrupt monks broke through the restraints
of their solitude; dissolute husbands forsook their
wives. Courtezans exercised their infamous trade at
the foot of the sepulchre of their God, and near to the
tent of their sovereign. But it was impossible to carry
on this expedition, and the succeeding ones, without
funds. An impost was levied, and this gave rise to
the claims of the pope upon all the estates of the
church; to the institution of a multitude of military
orders; to the alternative given to the vanquished, of
slavery or of embracing Christianity, of death or of
baptism; and to console the reader for so many cala-
mities, this circumstance occasioned the increase of na-
vigation and commerce, which enriched Venice, Ge-
noa, Pisa, and Florence; the decline of the feudal go-

But I have not the courage to pursue any further the
account of the disorders, and of the exorbitant increase
of papal authority. Under Innocent III. there was no

T ij
BOOK more than one tribunal in the world, and that was at 
Rome; there was but one matter, and he was at Rome, 
from whence he reigned over Europe by his legates. 
The ecclesiastical hierarchy extended itself one step 
further, by the creation of cardinals. Nothing was 
now wanting to the despot but Janizaries, whom he 
acquired by creating a multitude of monastic orders. 
Rome, formerly the mistress of the world by arms, be-
came so by opinion. But why did the popes, who were 
all-powerful over the minds of men, forget to maintain 
the terrors of their spiritual thunder, by directing it 
only against ambitious or unjust sovereigns? Who 
knows whether this kind of tribunal, so much wished 
for, to which crowned heads might be summoned, 
would not have existed to this day in Rome; and whe-
ther the threats of one common father, supported by 
general superstition, might not have put an end to ev-
ery military contest?

The papal militia, composed of monks, who were 
laborious and austere in their origin, became corrup-
ted. The bishops, tired out with the enterprises of the 
legates, of the secular magistrates, and of the monks, 
over their jurisdiction, encroached, on their parts, upon 
the secular jurisdiction, with a degree of boldness of 
which it is difficult to form an idea. If the clergy 
could have determined to erect gibbets, perhaps we 
should at present be under a government entirely fa-
cerdotal. It is the maxim, that the church abhors the 
effusion of blood, which has preferred us from it. There 
were schools in France and in Italy; and those at Pa-
ris were famous towards the eleventh century. The 
number of colleges was increased; and, nevertheless, 
this state of the church, which we have described with-
out malice or exaggeration, was continued in all Chri-
tian countries, from the ninth to the fourteenth cen-
tury, an interval of four or five hundred years. The 
emperors have lost Italy, and the popes have acquired 
a great temporal power. No one hath yet raised him-
self against their spiritual power. The interests of this 
sovereign are embraced by all the Italians. The dig-
nity of episcopacy is eclipsed by that of cardinal, and the secular clergy were always ruled by the regular clergy. Venice alone hath known and defended its rights. The irruption of the Moors in Spain hath thrown Christianity there into an abject state, from which it hath scarce emerged for these two last centuries; and even down to our days, the inquisition displays it under the most hideous aspect:—the inquisition, a terrible tribunal, a tribunal insulting to the spirit of Jesus Christ; a tribunal, which ought to be detested by sovereigns, by bishops, by magistrates, and by subjects: by sovereigns, whom it venturers to threaten, and whom it hath sometimes cruelly persecuted; by bishops, whose jurisdiction it annihilates; by the magistrates, whose legitimate authority it usurps; by the subjects, whom it keeps in continual terror, whom it reduces to silence, and condemns to stupidity, from the danger that attends their acquiring instruction, their reading, their writing, and their speaking: a tribunal which hath only owed its institution, and which only owes its continuance, in those regions where it is still maintained, to a sacrilegious policy, jealous of perpetuating prejudices and prerogatives, which could not have been discoursed, without being dispelled.

Before the schism of Henry VIII. England was subject to the pope, even in temporal concerns. London shook off the yoke of Rome; but this reformation was less the effect of reason than of passion. Germany hath been a continual scene of violence on both sides; and since the time of Luther, the Catholics and Schismatics have shown themselves equally enthusiasm in that country, the former for papal tyranny, the latter for independence. Christianity was established in Poland, with all the claims of papal authority. In France the temporal power was considered as subordinate to the spiritual power. According to the sentiment of the favourites of the Tramontane opinions, this kingdom, as well as all the kingdoms of the earth, was subject to the church of Rome; its princes might be excommunicated, and its subjects freed from the oath of alle-
But the papal colossus was shaken; and even since the fourteenth century it approached the infant of its downfall. Then literature was revived; the ancient languages were cultivated; the first Hebrew grammar was printed, and the Royal College was founded. Towards the middle of the fifteenth century, the art of printing was invented. A multitude of writings of all kinds were drawn out of the dust of monastic libraries, to be diffused among the people. The vulgar tongue was improved, and translations were made. The sovereign, and individuals, collected great libraries. The decrees of the councils, the fathers, and the holy scriptures, were read. The canon law was attended to, and the history of the church was investigated. The spirit of criticism arose, and the apocryphal books were detected; while inspired writings were restored to their original purity. The eyes of the sovereigns and of the clergy were opened, and they were enlightened by religious disputes. The origin of immunities, exemptions, and privileges, was traced; and the futility of them was demonstrated. Ancient times were searched into, and their discipline compared to modern customs. The hierarchy of the church resumed its influence, and the two powers withdrew into their respective limits. The decisions of the church resumed their efficacy; and if papal tyranny hath not been extinguished in France, it is at least confined within very narrow bounds. In 1681, the clergy of that kingdom decided, that temporal power was independent of spiritual power, and that the pope was subject to the canons of the church. If the mission of the priest be of divine right; if it belonged to him to set men free, and to enclose them in bonds; can he not excommunicate the impenitent sinner, or the heretic, whether he be a sovereign or a private man? According to our principles, this is a power that cannot be denied to him: but prudent men perceived, in this violent proceeding, such mischievous consequences, that they have declared it was scarce ever to be referred to. Doth excommunication involve the de-
position of the sovereign, and disengage the subjects from their oath of allegiance? It would be high-trea-
son to suppose it. Hence we see, that the ecclesiasti-
cal government, at least, in France, hath passed on, from the tyranny of anarchy, to a kind of moderate ari-
focracy.

But if I might be allowed to explain myself upon a
matter so important, I should venture to say, that nei-
ther in England, nor in the countries of Germany, of
the United Provinces, and of the North, the true prin-
ciples have been traced. Had they been better known,
how much blood and how many troubles would they
have spared, the blood of Pagans, Heretics, and Chris-
tians, since the first origin of natural forms of worship
to the present day; and how much would they spare
in future, if the rulers of the earth were prudent and
steady enough to conform to them?

It appears to me, that the state is not made for re-
ligion, but religion for the state: this is the first prin-
ciple.

The general interest is the universal rule that ought
to prevail in a state: this is the second principle.

The people, or the sovereign authority, depositary
of theirs, have alone the right to judge of the confor-
mity of any institution whatever with the general in-
terest: this is the third principle.

These three principles appear to me incontrovertibly
evident; and the propositions that follow are no more
than corollaries deduced from them.

It therefore belongs to this authority, and to this
authority alone, to examine the tenets and the disci-
pline of religion: the tenets, in order to ascertain,
whether, being contrary to common sense, they will
not expose the public tranquillity to commotions, so
much the more dangerous, as the ideas of future hap-
piness will be complicated with zeal for the glory of
God, and with submission to truths, which will be con-
sidered as revealed: the discipline, to observe whether
it doth not clash with the prevailing manners, exting-
uish the spirit of patriotism, damp the ardour of cou-
rage, occasion an aversion for industry, for marriage, and for public affairs; whether it be not injurious to population, and to the social state; whether it doth not inspire fanaticism, and a spirit of intolerance; whether it doth not sow the seeds of division between the relations of the same family, between families of the same city, between the cities of the same kingdom, and between the several kingdoms of the earth; whether it doth not diminish the respect due to the sovereign and the magistrates; and whether it doth not inculcate maxims so austerely as to occasion melancholy, or practices which lead on to extravagance.

This authority, and this authority alone, can therefore prescribe the established mode of worship, adopt a new one, or even abolish every form of worship, if it should find it convenient. The general form of government being always settled at the first minute of its adoption, how is it possible that religion should give the law by its antiquity?

The state hath the supremacy in every thing. The distinction between a temporal and a spiritual power is a palpable absurdity; and there neither can, nor ought to be, any more than one sole and single jurisdiction, wherever it belongs, to public utility alone, to order, or to defend.

For every offence whatever there should be but one tribunal; for every guilty person but one prison; for every illegal action but one law. Every contrary claim is injurious to the equality of the citizens; every profession is an usurpation of the claimant, at the expense of the common interest.

There should be no other councils than the assembly of the ministers of the sovereign. When the administrators are assembled, the church is assembled. When the state has pronounced, the church has nothing more to say.

There should be no other canons, except the edicts of the princes, and the decrees of the courts of judicature.

What is a common offence, and a privileged offence,
where there is but one law, and one public matter, between the citizens?

Immunities, and other exclusive privileges, are so many acts of injustice, exercised against the other ranks of society that are deprived of them.

A bishop, a priest, or a member of the clerical body, may quit his country, if he chooses it; but then he is nothing. It belongs to the state to watch over his conduct, to appoint and to remove him.

If we understand by a benefice, any thing more than the salary every citizen ought to reap from his labour, this is an abuse which requires a speedy reformation. The man who doth nothing hath no right to eat.

And wherefore should not the priest acquire, enrich himself, enjoy, fell, buy, and make his will, as another citizen?

Let him be chaste, docile, humble, and even indigent; let him not be fond of women, let him be of a meek disposition, and let him prefer bread and water to all the conveniencies of life; but let him be forbidden to bind himself to these observances by vows. The vow of chastity is repugnant to nature and injurious to population; the vow of poverty is only that of a foolish or of an idle man; the vow of obedience to any other than to the ruling power, and to the law, is that of a slave or of a rebel.

If there existed, therefore, in any district of a country, fifty thousand citizens bound by such vows, what could the sovereign do better, than to repair to the spot, with a sufficient number of satellites, armed with whips, and to say to them, Go forth, ye lazy wretches, go forth; go to the fields, to agriculture, to the manufactures, to the militia?

Charity is the common duty of all those whose property exceeds their absolute wants.

The relief of old men, and of indigent and old persons, is the duty of the state they have served.

Let there be no other apostles but the legislator and the magistrates,
Let there be no sacred writings, except those which they shall acknowledge as such.

Let there be no divine right but the good of the republic.

I could extend these consequences to many other objects; but I stop here, protesting, that if in what I have said there should be any thing contrary to the good order of a well-regulated society, and to the felicity of the citizens, I retract; although I can scarce persuade myself that the nations can become enlightened, and not be sensible one day of the truth of my principles. As for the rest, I forewarn my readers that I have spoken only of the external forms of religion. With respect to internal religion, man is only accountable for it to God. It is a secret between man and him, who hath taken him out of nothing, and can plunge him into it again.

If we now take a review of what has been said, we shall find that all the governments of Europe are comprehended under some of the forms we have been describing, and are differently modelled according to the local situation, the degree of population, the extent of territory, the influence of opinions and occupations, and the external connections and vicissitudes of events that act upon the system of the body politic, as the impression of surrounding fluids does upon natural bodies.

We are not to imagine, as it is often asserted, that all governments nearly resemble each other, and that the only difference between them consists in the character of those who govern. This maxim may, perhaps, be true in absolute governments, among such nations as have no principles of liberty. Thence take the turn the prince gives them; they are haughty, proud, and courageous, under a monarch who is active and fond of glory; indolent and stupid under a superstitious king; full of hopes and fears under a young prince; of weaknesses and corruption under an old despot; or rather alternately confident and weak,
under the several ministers who are raised by intrigue. Book XIX.

In such states, government assumes the character of the administration; but in free states it is just the reverse.

Whatever may be said of the nature and springs of the different systems of government to which men are subject, the art of legislation being that which ought to be the most perfect, is also the most proper to employ men of the first genius. The science of government does not contain abstracted truths, or rather it has not one single principle which does not extend to all the branches of administration.

The state is a very complicated machine, which cannot be wound up or set in motion without a thorough knowledge of all its component parts. If any one of the parts be too much straitened or relaxed, the whole must be in disorder. Every project that may be beneficial to a certain number of citizens, or in critical times, may become fatal to the whole nation, and prejudicial for a long continuance. If we destroy or change the nature of any great body, those convulsive motions, which are called strokes of state, will disturb the whole nation, which may, perhaps, feel the effects of them for ages to come. All innovations ought to be brought about insensibly; they should arise from necessity, be the result, as it were, of the public clamour, or at least agree with the general wishes. To abolish old customs, or to introduce new ones on a sudden, tends only to increase that which is bad, and to prevent the effect of that which is good. To act without consulting the will of the generality, without collecting, as it were, the majority of votes in the public opinion, is to alienate the hearts and minds of men, and to bring every thing into discredit, even what is honest and good.

It would be a desirable thing in Europe, that the sovereigns, convinced of the necessity of improving the science of government, should imitate a custom established in China. In this empire, the ministers are distinguished into two classes, the thinkers and the figna-
BOOKERS. While the latter are employed in the arrange-
ment and dispatch of public affairs, the first attend on-
ly to the forming of projects, or to the examination
of such as are presented to them. According to the
admirers of the Chinesef government, this is the source
of all those judicious regulations, which establish in
those regions the most enlightened systems of legisla-
tion, together with the most prudent administration.
All Asia is subject to a despotism government; but in
Turkey and Persia, it is a despotism of opinion by
means of religion; in China, it is the despotism of the
laws by the influence of reason. Among the Moham-
medans, they believe in the divine authority of the
prince; among the Chinese, they believe in natural
authority, founded upon the law of reason. But in
these empires it is conviction that influences the will.

In the happy state of policy and knowledge to which
Europe hath attained, it is plain that this conviction
of the mind, which produces a free, easy, and general
obedience, can proceed from nothing but a certain
evidence of the utility of the laws. If the govern-
ments will not pay thinkers, who may, perhaps, become
suspicious or corrupt as soon as they are mercenary, let
them, at least, allow men of superior understandings to
watch in some measure over the public good. Every
writer of genius is born a magistrate of his country;
and he ought to enlighten it as much as it is in his
power. His abilities give him a right to do it. Whether
he be an obscure or a distinguished citizen, whatever
be his rank or birth, his mind, which is always
noble, derives its claims from his talents. His tribunal
is the whole nation; his judge is the public, not the
despot who does not hear him, nor the minister who
will not attend to him.

All these truths have, doubtless, their boundaries;
but it is always more dangerous to suppress the free-
don of thought, than to leave it to its bent or impe-
tuosity. Reason and truth triumph over those daring
and violent minds, which are roused only by restraint,
and irritated only by persecution. Kings and mini-
thers, love your people, love mankind, and ye will be B O O K
happy. Ye will then have no reason to fear men of
free sentiments or unsatisfied minds, nor the revolt of
bad men. The revolt of the heart is much more dan-
gerous; for virtue, when foured, and roused into in-
dignation, is guilty of the most atrocious acts. Cato
and Brutus were both virtuous: they were reduced
to the alternative of choosing between two great e-
normities, suicide, or the death of Cæsar.

Remember that the interests of government and
those of the nation are the same. Whoever attempts
to separate them, is unacquainted with their true na-
ture, and will only injure them.

Authority divides this great interest, when the wills
of individuals are substituted to the established order.
The laws, and those alone, ought to have the sway.
This universal rule is not a yoke for the citizens, but
a power which protects them, and a watchfulness
which inspires their tranquillity. They think them-
selves free; and this opinion, which constitutes their
happiness, determines their submission. If the arbi-
trary caprices of a turbulent and enterprising adminis-
trator should subvert this fortunate system, the peo-
ple, who from habit, prejudice, or self-love, are gene-

erally inclined to consider the government under which
they live as the best of all possible governments, are
derived of this illusion, to which nothing can be sub-
fitted.

Authority divides this great interest, when it obsti-
nately perseveres in any error into which it hath fall-
en. Let it not be blinded by a foolish pride, and it
will perceive that those changes, which bring it back
to what is true and good, far from weakening its
springs, will strengthen them. To be undeceived with
respect to a dangerous mistake, is not to contradict
one's self; it is not to display to the people the incon-

tinacy of government; it is to demonstrate to them its
wisdom and its uprightness. If their respect were to
diminish, it would be for that power which would ne-
never know its mistakes, or would always justify them, and not for those who would avow and correct them. Authority divides this great interest, when it sacrifices the tranquillity, ease, and blood of the people, to the terrible and transient brilliancy of warlike exploits. It is in vain that we endeavour to justify these destructive propensities by statues and by inscriptions. These monuments of arrogance and flattery will one day be destroyed by time or overthrown by hatred. The memory of that prince only will be respected, who shall have preferred peace, which must have incurred happiness to his subjects, to victories, which would have been only for himself; who shall have considered the empire as his family; who shall have made no other use of his power, than for the advantage of those who had intrusted him with it. His name and his character will be universally cherished. Fathers will inform posterity of the happiness which they enjoyed. Their children will repeat it to their descendants; and this delightful remembrance will be preserved from one age to another, and will be perpetuated in each family, and to the remotest centuries.

Authority divides this great interest, when the person in whose hands the reins of government have been placed, by birth or election, suffers them to be guided at pleasure by blind chance; when he prefers a mean repose to the dignity and the importance of the functions with which he is intrusted. His inaction is criminal and infamous. The indulgence with which his faults might have been treated, will be justly denied to his indolence. This severity will be the more lawful, as his character will have determined him to choose for substitutes the first ambitious men who may offer, and these almost necessarily men of no capacity. If even he had the singular good fortune of making a good choice, he would still be unpardonable, because it is not allowable to impose our duties upon others. He will die without having lived. His name will be forgotten, or, if remembered, it will only be as the
names of those sluggish kings, the years of whose reign history hath with reason disdained to count.

Authority divides this great interest, when the posts which determine the public tranquillity are intrusted to vile or corrupt men of intrigue; when favour shall obtain the rewards due to services; when the powerful springs, which insure the grandeur and the duration of empires, are destroyed. All emulation is extinct. The enlightened and laborious citizens either conceal themselves, or retire. The wicked and the audacious show themselves insolently, and prosper. Every thing is directed and determined by presumption, by interest, and by the most disordinate passions. Justice is disregarded, virtue is degraded, and propriety, which might in some measure be a substitute to it, is considered as an old prejudice or a ridiculous custom. Discouragement within and opprobrium without, these are all that remain to a nation formerly powerful and respected.

There may sometimes be people dissatisfied under a good government; but where there are many that are unhappy, without any kind of public prosperity, then it is that the government is vicious in its nature.

Mankind are just as we would have them to be; it is the mode of government which gives them a good or an evil propensity.

A state ought to have one object only in view; and that is, public felicity. Every state has a particular manner of promoting this end; which may be considered as its spirit, its principle, to which every thing else is subordinate.

A nation can have no industry for the arts, nor courage for war, without a confidence in, and an attachment to, the government. But when the principle of fear hath broken every other spring of the soul, a nation then becomes of no consequence, the prince is exposed to a thousand enterprises from without, and a thousand dangers from within. Defiled by his neighbours, and abhorred by his subjects, he must be in perpetual fear for the safety of his kingdom, as well
as for that of his own life. It is a happiness for a na-
tion that commerce, arts, and sciences, should flourish
within it. It is even a happiness for those who govern,
when they are not inclined to exert acts of tyranny.
Upright minds are very easily led; but none have a
greater aversion for violence and slavery. Let good
monarchs be blessed with enlightened people, and let
tyranhs have none but brutes to reign over.

Military power is both the cause and the destruction
of despotism; which in its infant state may be com-
pared to a lion that conceals his talons in order to let
them grow. In its full vigour, it may be considered
as a madman who tears his body to pieces with his
arms. In its advanced age, it is like Saturn, who, af-
fter having devoured his children, is shamefully mili-
lated by his own race.

Government may be divided into legislation and
policy. Legislation relates to the internal manage-
ment of the state, and policy to the external direction
of it.

Savage nations, which are addicted to hunting, have
rather a policy than a legislation. Governed among
themselves by manners and example, the only con-
ventions or laws they have are between one nation
and another. Treaties of peace or alliance constitute
their only code of legislation.

Such were nearly the societies of ancient times.
Separated by deserts, without any communication of
trade or voyages, they had only a present and imme-
diate interest to settle. All their negotiations confi-
ed in putting an end to a war by fixing the bounda-
ries of a state. As it was necessary to persuade a na-
tion, and not bribe a court by the mistresses or favour-
ites of a prince, eloquent men were employed for this
purpose; and the names of orator and ambassador
were synonymous.

In the middle ages, when every thing, even justice
itself, was decided by force; when the Gothic govern-
ment divided by separate interests all those petty states
which owed their existence to its constitution; nego-
ations had but little influence over a wild and recluse people, who knew no right but that of war, no treaties but for truces or ransoms.

During this long period of ignorance and barbarism, policy was entirely confined to the court of Rome. It had arisen from the artifices which had founded the papal government. As the pontiffs, by the laws of religion and the system of the hierarchy, influenced a very numerous clergy, whose proselytes extended perpetually in all the Christian states, the correspondence kept up with the bishops, established early at Rome a centre of communication for all the different churches or nations. All rights were subordinate to a religion which exercised an absolute authority over the mind of every individual; it had a share in almost every transactiun, either as the motive or the means; and the popes, by the Italian agents they had placed in all the prelacies of the Christian state, were constantly informed of every commotion, and availed themselves of every event. They had the highest interest in this; that of attaining universal monarchy. The barbarism of the times in which this project was conceived, does not lessen its greatness and sublimity. How daring was the attempt, to subdue, without troops, nations that were always in arms! What art to make even the weaknesses of the clergy respectable and sacred! What skill to agitate, to shake thrones one after the other, in order to keep them all in subjection! So deep, so extensive a design could only be carried into execution, by being concealed; and therefore was inconsistent with an hereditary monarchy; in which the passions of kings, and the intrigues of ministers, are the cause of so much instability in affairs. This project, and the general rule of conduct it requires, could not be formed but in an elective government, in which the chief is always chosen from a body animated with the same spirit, and guided by the same maxims; in which an aristocratic court rather governs the prince, than suffers itself to be governed by him.
While Italian policy was engaged in examining all the states of Europe, and availing itself of every opportunity to aggrandize and confirm the power of the church, each sovereign saw with indifference the revolutions that were taking place without. Most of them were too much engaged in establishing their authority in their own dominions, in disputing the branches of power with the several bodies which were in possession of them, or which were striving against the natural bent that monarchy has to despotism: they were not sufficiently masters of their own inheritance, to interfere in the disputes of their neighbours.

The fifteenth century changed the order of things. When the princes had collected their forces, they were inclined to bring them to action, and try their respective strength. Till that time, the nations had only carried on war with each other upon their several frontiers. The season of the campaign was lost in assembling troops, which every baron always raised very slowly. There were then only skirmishes between small parties, not any regular battles between different armies. When a prince, either by alliances or inheritance, had acquired possessions in different states, the interests were confounded, and contentions arose among the people. It was necessary to send regular troops in the pay of the monarch, to defend at a distance territories that did not belong to the state. The crown of England no longer held provinces in the midst of France; but that of Spain acquired some rights in Germany, and that of France laid some claims in Italy. From that time all Europe was in a perpetual alternate state of war and negotiation.

The ambition, talents, and rivalship of Charles V. and Francis I. gave rise to the present system of modern politics. Before these two kings, France and Spain had disputed the kingdom of Naples, in the name of the houses of Arragon and Anjou. Their diversions had excited a ferment throughout all Italy, and the republic of Venice was the chief cause of
that intestine commotion that was excited against two foreign powers. The Germans took a part in these disturbances, either as auxiliaries, or as being interested in them. The emperor and the pope were concerned in them with almost all Christendom. But Francis I. and Charles V. engaged in their fate, the views, the anxiety, the destiny of all Europe. All the powers seemed to be divided between two rival houses, in order to weaken alternately the most powerful. Fortune favoured the talents, the force, and the artifice of Charles V. More ambitious and less voluptuous than Francis I., his character turned the scale, and Europe for a time inclined to his side, but did not continue always to favour the same interest.

Philip II. who had all the spirit of intrigue, but not the military virtues of his father, inherited his projects and ambitious views, and found the times favourable to his aggrandizement. He exhausted his kingdom of men and ships, and even of money, though he was in possession of the mines of the New World; and left behind him a more extensive monarchy, but Spain itself in a much weaker state than it had been under his father.

His son imagined he should again make all Europe dependent, by an alliance with that branch of his house which reigned in Germany. Philip II. had through negligence relinquished this political idea: Philip III. refused it. But in other respects he followed the erroneous, narrow, superstitious, and pedantic principles of his predecessor. Within the state, there was much formality, but no order and no economy. The church was perpetually encroaching upon the state. The inquisition, that horrid monster, which conceals its head in the heavens and its feet in the infernal regions, struck at the root of population, which at the same time suffered considerably from war and the colonies. In the external operations of the state, there were still the same ambitious views, and less skilful measures.
in his enterprises, slow and obstinate in the execution of them, Philip III. had all those defects which are prejudicial to each other, and occasion every project to miscarry. He destroyed the small degree of life and vigour the monarchy yet retained. Richelieu availed himself of the weaknesses of Spain, and the foibles of the king whom he ruled over, to fill that period with his intrigues, and cause his name to descend to posterity. Germany and Spain were in some manner connected to each other by the house of Austria; to this league, he opposed that of France with Sweden, to counteract the effect of the former. This system would naturally have taken place in his times, if it had not been the work of his genius. Gustavus Adolphus by his conquests enslaved all the north. All Europe concurred in lowering the pride of the house of Austria; and the peace of the Pyrenees turned the scale against Spain in favour of France.

Charles V. had been accused of aiming at universal monarchy; and Lewis XIV. was taxed with the same ambition. But neither of them ever conceived so high and so rash a project. They were both of them passionately desirous of extending their empire, by the aggrandizement of their families. This ambition is equally natural to princes of common abilities, who are born without any talents, as it is to monarchs of superior understanding, who have no virtues or moral qualifications. But neither Charles V. nor Lewis XIV. had that kind of spirit of resolution, that impulse of the soul to brave every thing, which constitutes heroic conquerors: they bore no resemblance in any particular to Alexander. Nevertheless useful alarms were taken and spread abroad. Such alarms cannot be too soon conceived, nor too soon diffused, when there arise any powers that are formidable to their neighbours. It is chiefly among nations, and with respect to kings, that fear produces safety.

When Lewis XIV. began to reflect on his own situation, perhaps he might be surprized at seeing himself more powerful than he thought he was. His great-
was partly owing to the little harmony that sub-
stituted between the forces and the designs of his ene-
mies. Europe had, indeed, felt the necessity of a ge-
neral union, but had not discovered the means of for-
ing it. In treating with this monarch, proud of suc-
cesses, and vain from the applause he had received, it
was thought a considerable advantage if every thing
was not given up. In a word, the insults of France,
which increased with her victories; the natural turn of
her intrigues to spread disaffection everywhere, in order
to reign alone; her contempt for the faith of treaties;
the haughty and authoritative tone she usurped, turn-
ed the general envy she had excited into detestation,
and raised universal alarms. Even those princes, who
had seen without umbrage, or favoured the increase of
her power, felt the necessity of repairing this error in
polities, and of combining and raising among them-
Mves a body of forces superior to those of France,
in order to prevent her tyrannizing over the nations.

Leagues were, therefore, formed, which were for a
long time ineffectual. One man alone was found ca-
pable to animate and conduct them. Warmed with
that public spirit, which only great and virtuous souls
can possess, it was a prince, though born in a repub-
cic, who, for the general cause of Europe, was inflam-
ed with that love of liberty, so natural to upright
minds. He turned his ambition towards the greatest
object and most worthy of the time in which he liv-
ed. His own interest never warped him from that of
the public. With a courage peculiar to himself he
knew how to defy those very misfortunes which he
foretold; depending less for success upon his military
abilities, than, waiting for a favourable turn of affairs,
from his patience and political activity. Such was
the situation of affairs when the succession to the throne
of Spain set all Europe in flames.

Since the empire of the Persians and that of the
Romans, ambition had never been tempted by so rich
a spoil. The prince, who might have united this
town to his own, would naturally have risen to that

U iij
universal monarchy, the idea of which raised a general alarm. It was therefore necessary to prevent this empire from becoming the possession of a power already formidable, and to keep the balance equal between the Houses of Austria and Bourbon, which had the only hereditary right to the throne.

Men well versed in the knowledge of the manners and affairs of Spain, have asserted, if we may believe Bolingbroke, that had it not been for the hostilities, which were then excited by England and Holland, we should have seen Philip V. as good a Spaniard as his predecessors, and that the French ministry would then have had no influence over the Spanish administration; but that the war raised against the Spaniards for the sake of giving them a ruler, obliged them to have recourse to the fleets and armies of a state that was alone capable of afflicting them in fixing upon such a king as they wanted. This just idea, the result of deep reflection, has been confirmed by the experience of half a century. The turn of the Spaniards has never been able to coincide with the taste of the French. Spain, from the character of her inhabitants, seems rather to belong to Africa than to Europe.

The train of events, however, answered to the general wishes. The armies and the councils of the quadruple alliance gained an equal superiority over the common enemy. Instead of those languid and unfortunate campaigns which had tried the patience of the prince of Orange, but not discouraged him, all the operations of the confederates were successful. France, in her turn, humbled and defeated on every side, was upon the brink of ruin, when she was restored by the death of the emperor.

It was then perceived, that if the archduke Charles, crowned with the imperial diadem, and succeeding to all the dominions of the House of Austria, should join Spain and the West Indies to this vast inheritance, he would be in possession of that same exorbitant power, which the House of Bourbon had been deprived of by
the war. But the enemies of France still persisted in their design of dethroning Philip V, without thinking of the person that was to succeed him; while true politicians, notwithstanding their triumphs, grew tired of a war, the very success of which always became an evil, when it could no longer do any good.

This difference of opinions raised divisions among the allies, which prevented them from reaping all those advantages from the peace of Utrecht, they might reasonably have expected from their success. The best means that could be devised to protect the provinces of the allies, were to lay open the frontiers of France. Lewis XIV. had employed forty years in fortifying them, and his neighbours had suffered him quietly to raise these bulwarks which kept them in continual awe. It was necessary to demolish them: for every strong power that puts itself in a posture of defence, intends to form an attack. Philip remained upon the throne of Spain; and the fortifications were left standing in Flanders, and on the borders of the Rhine.

Since this period, no opportunity hath offered to rectify the mistake committed at the peace of Utrecht. France hath always maintained its superiority on the continent; but chance hath often diminished its influence. The scales of the political balance will never be perfectly even, nor accurate enough to determine the degrees of power with exact precision. Perhaps, even this balance of power may be nothing more than a chimera. It can be only fixed by treaties, and these have no validity, when they are only made between absolute monarchs, and not between nations. These acts must be permanent when made by the people themselves, because the object of them is their peace and safety, which are their greatest advantages: but a despot always sacrifices his subjects to his anxiety, and his engagements to his ambition.

But it is not war alone that determines the superiority of nations, as it hath been hitherto imagined; since during the last half-century commerce hath had
a much greater influence in it. While the powers of
the continent divided Europe into unequal portions,
which policy, by means of leagues, treaties, and al-
iances, always preferred in a certain equilibrium; a
maritime people formed as it were a new system, and
by their industry made the land subject to the sea;
as nature herself has done by her laws. They form-
ed, or brought to perfection, that extensive commerce,
which is founded on an excellent system of agricul-
ture, flourishing manufactures, and the richest posi-
tions of the four quarters of the world. This is the
kind of universal monarchy that Europe ought to
wrest from England, in restoring to each maritime
state that freedom and that power it hath a right to
have upon the element that surrounds it. This is a
system of public good founded upon natural equity,
and in this case justice is the voice of general inter-
est. The people cannot be too much warned to re-
sume all their powers, and to employ the resources of-
tered them by the climate and the soil they inhabit,
to acquire that national and distinct independence in
which they were born.

If all Europe were sufficiently enlightened, and each
nation were acquainted with its rights and its real ad-
vantages, neither the continent nor the ocean would
mutually give laws to each other; but a reciprocal in-
fluence would be established between the continental
and maritime people, a balance of industry and pow-
er, which would induce a mutual intercourse for the
general benefit. Each nation would sow and reap
upon its proper element. The several states would
enjoy the same liberty of exportation and importation
that should subsist between the provinces of the same
d empire.

There is a great error that prevails in modern po-
litics, which is, that every state should endeavour to
weaken its enemies as much as possible. But no na-
tion can seek the ruin of another state, without pay-
ing the way for, and hastening its own slavery. There
are certainly moments in which fortune at once throws
into the way of a people a great increase of power; but such sudden elevations are not lasting. It is sometimes better to support rivals, than to oppress them. Sparta refused to enslave Athens, and Rome repented of having destroyed Carthage.

These noble and generous sentiments would prevent policy from the necessity of committing many crimes and asserting many falsehoods; policy, which for these two or three centuries past hath had more important and more various objects to attend to. The influence of policy was formerly much limited, it seldom extended beyond the frontiers of the several nations. Its sphere hath been singularly enlarged in proportion as the nations most distant from each other have formed connections among themselves. It hath particularly received an immense increase since the time, when by discoveries, either fortunate or unfortunate, all the parts of the universe have been rendered subordinate to those which we inhabit.

As the operations of policy were multiplied in proportion to the extent which it acquired, every power thought it necessary for their interests to fix agents in foreign courts, who had formerly been employed there but for a very short time. The habit of treating incessantly gave birth to maxims unknown before that period. Delays and artifices were substituted to the frankness and celerity of transient negotiations. The powers founded and studied each other, and reciprocal attempts were made to tire out or to surmise all parties. Secrets which had been found impenetrable were purchased with gold, and bribery completed what intrigue had begun.

It appeared necessary to furnish a continual supply of matter to quiet that spirit of anxiety with which the minds of all the ambassadors had been impressed. Policy, like that insidious insect that weaves its web in darkness, hath stretched forth its net in the midst of Europe, and fastened it, as it were, to every court. One single thread cannot be touched without drawing all the rest. The most petty sovereign hath some se-
cret interest in the treaties between the greater powers.

Two petty princes of Germany cannot exchange a fief, or a domain, without being thwarted or seconded by the courts of Vienna, Verfailles, or London. Negotiations must be carried on in all the cabinets for years together for every the moft trifling change in the dis-
position of the land. The blood of the people is the only thing that is not bargained for. War is deter-
mounced upon in a day or two; the settling of peace is protracted during several years. This slowness in ne-
gotiations, which proceeds from the nature of affairs, is also increased by the character of the negotiators.

These are generally ignorant persons, who are treating with some men of knowledge and abilities. The chancellor Oxenftiern ordered his son to prepare him-
s elf to go to Westphalia, where the troubles of the em-
pire were to be pacified. But, said the young man, I have not attended to any previous studies necessary for this important commission. I will prepare you for it, re-
plied the father. A fortnight after, Oxenftiern, who had not spoken upon the subject to his son, said to him, My son, you must set out to-morrow.—But, sir, you had promised to instruct me, and you have not done it. Go, nevertheless, replied the experienced minister, thrugging up his shoulders, and you will see by what kind of men the world is governed. There are, perhaps, two or three wife and judicious councils in Europe. The rest are in the possession of intriguing men, raised to the management of affairs by the passions and shameful pleasures of a prince and his mistresses. A man is ad-
vanced to a share in the administration, without any knowledge of the subject; he adopts the first system that is offered to his caprice, pursues it without UNDER-
standing it, and, with a degree of obstinacy propor-
tionate to his ignorance, he changes the whole plan of his predeceffors, in order to introduce his own system of administration, which he will never be able to sup-
port. Richelieu's first declaration, when he became minister, was, the council hath altered its plan. This saying, which was once found to be a good one, in the
mouth of one single man, has, perhaps, been repeated, or thought of, by every one of Richelieu's successors. All men engaged in public affairs have the vanity not only to proportion the parade of their expense, of their manner, and of their air, to the importance of their office, but even to raise the opinion they have of their own understanding, in proportion to the influence of their authority.

When a nation is great and powerful, what should its governors be? The court and the people will answer this question, but in a very different manner. The ministers see nothing in their office but the extent of their rights; the people the extent only of their duties. The ideas of the latter are just; for the duties and rights arising from each mode of government ought to be regulated by the wants and desires of each nation. But this principle of the law of nature is not applicable to the social state. As societies, whatever be their origin, are almost all of them subject to the authority of one single man, political measures are dependent on the character of the prince.

If the king be a weak and irresolute man, his government will change as his ministers, and his politics will vary with his government. He will alternately have ministers that are ignorant or enlightened, steady or fickle, deceitful or sincere, harsh or humane, inclined to war or peace; such, in a word, as the variety of intrigues will produce them. Such a state will have no regular system of politics; and all other governments will not be able to maintain any permanent designs and measures with it. The system of politics must then vary with the day, or the moment; that is, with the humour of the prince. Under a weak and unstable reign, none but temporary interests ought to prevail, and connections subordinate to the instability of the ministry.

The reciprocal jealousy prevailing between the depositaries of the royal authority is another cause of this instability. One man, against the testimony of his
conscience and of his knowledge, counteracts, from a motive of mean jealousy, a useful measure, the honour of which would belong to his rival. The next day the same infamous part is adopted by the latter. The sovereign alternately grants what he had refused, or refuses what he had granted. The negotiator will easily perceive which of his ministers he has left consulted, but it is impossible for him to foresee what his last resolution will be. In this embarrassment to whom shall we have recourse? To bribery and to the women, if he be sent into a country governed by a man. To bribery and to the men, if he be sent into a country governed by a woman. He must lay aside the character of the ambassador or of the envoy, in order to assume that of the corrupter, the only one by which he can succeed. It is gold which he must substitute to the most profound policy. But if by some chance, of which perhaps there is scarce any example, gold should fail of its effect, the only resource he has remaining is to solicit to be recalled.

But the fate of nations and political interests are very different in republican governments. As the authority there resides in the collective body of the people, there are certain principles and some public interests attended to in every negotiation. In this case, the permanency of a system is not to be confined to the duration of the ministry, or to the life of one single man. The general spirit that exists and perpetuates itself in the nation is the only rule of every negotiation. Not but that a powerful citizen, or an eloquent demagogue, may sometimes lead a popular government into a political mistake; but this is easily recovered. Faults, in these instances, may be considered equally with successes as lessons of instruction. Great events, and not men, produce remarkable periods in the history of republics. It is in vain to attempt to surprise a free people by artifice or intrigues, into a treaty of peace or alliance. Their maxims will always make them return to their lasting interests, and all en-
gagements will give way to the supreme law. In these governments, it is the safety of the people that does every thing, while in others it is the will of the ruler.

This contrast of political principles has rendered every popular government suspicious or odious to all absolute monarchs. They have dreaded the influence of a republican spirit upon their own subjects, the weight of whole chains they are every day increasing. A kind of secret conspiracy may therefore be perceived between all monarchies, to destroy, or insensibly to sap, the foundations of all free states. But liberty will arise from the midst of oppression. It already exists in every breast; public writings will contribute to infil it into the minds of all enlightened men, and tyranny into the hearts of the people. All men will, at length, be sensible, and this period is at no great distance, that liberty is the first gift of Heaven, as it is the first source of virtue. The instruments of despotism will become its destroyers; and the enemies of humanity, those who seem armed at present merely to oppose it, will exert themselves in its defence.

In this place I was intending to speak of war, or that rage which, being kindled by injustice, ambition, and revenge, assails, under two adverse commanders, a multitude of armed men, impels them against each other, drenches the earth with their blood, strews it with dead bodies, and prepares nourishment for the animals that come after them, but who are less ferocious than they.

But I have suddenly postponed my intention, by asking of myself what peace is, and whether it exists anywhere? Upon the spot where I now am, in the centre of my own city, a multitude of interests oppose to mine confine me, and I repel them. If I pass the limits of that space which I call my own country, I am considered with an anxious eye; I am accosted, and asked, who I am, from whence I came, and where I am going? At length I obtain a bed, and am preparing to take some rest, when a sudden clamour compels me to depart. If I remain, I am proscribed; and
the next day the house which had given me refuge shall be set on fire, and those who have treated me as a fellow-citizen shall be murdered by assassins who speak my own language. Should curiosity, or a thirst of knowledge, induce me to visit another country; if I take some pains to examine it, I am immediately suspected, and a spy is commissioned to watch me. Should I have the misfortune to worship God in my own way, which happens not to be that of the country I am visiting, I am surrounded by priests and executioners. I then make my escape, exclaiming, with grief: Peace, then, that blessing so earnestly wished for, exists not in any place.

The good man, however, hath his dreams; and I will acknowledge, that being witnesses to the progress of knowledge, which hath shaken so many prejudices, and introduced so much softness in our manners, I have thought that it was impossible the infernal art of war should be perpetuated, but that it would sink into oblivion. The people who have brought it to perfection will become accursed; and the moment when these formidable instruments of death shall be generally demolished cannot be far distant. The universe will at length execrate those odious conquerors, who have rather chosen to be the terror of their neighbours than the fathers of their subjects, and to invade provinces rather than to gain the affections of men; who have chosen that the cries of grief should be the only hymn accompanying their victories; who have raised up melancholy monuments, defined to immortalize their rage and their vanity, in the countries which they had spoiled, in the cities they had reduced to ashes, and over the carcases which their swords had heaped on each other; conquerors, who have had no other wish than that the history of their reign should contain only the remembrance of the calamities they had occasioned. Mankind will no longer be deceived respecting the objects of their admiration. They will no longer, with abject infatuation, prostrate themselves before those who trampled them under their feet. Ca-
lamities will be considered in their proper light; and no longer be prostituted to the commemoration of brilliant crimes. Princes themselves will partake of the wisdom of their age. The voice of philosophy will revive in their minds sentiments which have long lain dormant, and will inspire them with horror, and a contempt for sanguinary glory. They will be confirmed in these ideas by the ministers of religion; who, availing themselves of the sacred privilege of their functions, will drag them before the tribunal of the Great Judge, where they will be obliged to answer for the thousands of unfortunate persons sacrificed to their hatred or caprice. If it were resolved in the decrees of Heaven, that sovereigns should persever in their frenzy, those numberless hordes of assassins who are kept in pay would throw away their arms. Filled with a just horror for their detestable employment, and with profound indignation against the cruel abuse which was made of their strength and of their courage, they would leave their extravagant despots to settle their quarrels themselves.

But this illusion did not last long. I was soon persuaded that the disputes between kings would never end, any more than their passions, and that they could only be decided by the sword. I thought that it would be impossible ever to disgust the horrors of war a people, who, notwithstanding all sorts of cruelties and devastations were committed around them without scruple and without remorse, upon the scene of discord, still found, while sitting quietly by their fire-side, that there were not sieges, battles, or catastrophes enough to satisfy their curiosity and amuse their vacant hours. I thought, that there was nothing either reasonable or humane to be expected from a set of butchers, who, far from giving themselves up to despair, from tearing their hair, from detesting themselves, and from shedding rivers of tears at the sight of a vast plain filled with scattered members, were, on the contrary, able to go over it with an air of
triumph, bathing their feet in the blood of their friends and of their enemies, walking over their carcases, and mixing songs of mirth with the plaintive accents of expiring men. It seemed to me, as if I heard the speech of one of those tygers, who, blending flattery with fero- cioufnnes, said to a monarch, feized with a confeneration at the sight of a field of battle covered with torn limbs and dead bodies, scarcely cold: *Sir, it is not us, but those, who are too happy:* and thus prevented the tears from falling from the eyes of a young prince; tears, which he ought rather to have prompted him to shed, by saying to him: "Behold, and consider the effects of thy ambition, of thy folly, of thy rage, and of ours; and feel the drops of blood trickling down thy cheeks, which fall from the laurels with which we have crowned thee." These distressing reflections plunged me into melancholy; so that it was some time before I could resume the thread of my ideas, and go on with my subject.

War has existed at all times and in all countries; but the art of war is only to be found in certain ages of the world, and among certain people. The Greeks instituted it, and conquered all the powers of Asia. The Romans improved it, and subdued the world. These two nations, worthy to command all others, as their genius and virtue were the causes of their prosperity, owed this superiority to their infantry, in which every single man exerts his whole strength. The Grecian phalanx and the Roman legions were everywhere victorious.

When indolence had introduced a superior number of cavalry into the armies of the ancients, Rome lost some of its glory and success. Notwithstanding the exact discipline of its troops, it could no longer reft those barbarous nations that fought on foot.

These men, however, little better than savages, who, with arms only, and those powers nature had taught them the use of, had subdued the moft extensive and the moft civilized empire of the universe, soon changed their infantry into cavalry. This was properly called
the line of battle, or the army. All the nobility, who were the sole possessors of lands and of privileges, those usual attendants of victory, chose to ride on horseback; while the enslaved multitude were left on foot, almost without arms, and were scarce holden in any degree of estimation.

In times when the gentleman was distinguished by his horse; when the man himself was of little consequence, and every idea of importance was attached to the knight; when wars consisted in small incursions, and campaigns lasted but a day; when success depended upon the quickness of marches; then the fate of armies was determined by cavalry. During the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, there were scarce any other troops in Europe. The dexterity and strength of men was no longer shown in wrestling, at the clavus, in the exercise of arms, and of all the muscles of the body; but in tournaments, in managing a horse, and in throwing the lance at full speed. This species of war, better calculated for wandering Tartars, than for fixed and sedentary societies, was one of the defects of the feudal government. A race of conquerors, whose rights were to be determined by their swords, whose merit and glory were in their arms, whose sole occupation was hunting, could scarce avoid riding on horseback, with all that parade and spirit of authority which must necessarily arise from a rude and uncultivated understanding. But what could troops of heavy-armed cavalry avail in the attack and defence of castles and towns, fortified by walls or by surrounding waters?

To this imperfection of the military art, must be ascribed the duration of war for several ages, without intermission, between France and England. War continued incessantly for want of a sufficient number of men. Whole months were required to collect, to arm, to bring into the field troops that were only to continue there a few weeks. Kings could not assemble more than a certain number of vassals, and those at stated times. The lords had only a right to call under
their banners some of their tenants, upon stipulated terms. The time that ought to have been employed in carrying on war was lost in forms and regulations, in the same manner as courts of justice consume those estates they are to determine. At length the French, tired with being constantly obliged to repulse the English, like the horse that implored the assistance of man against the stag, suffered the yoke and burden to be imposed upon them, which they bear to this day. Kings raised and maintained at their own expense a constant body of troops. Charles VII. after having expelled the English by the assistance of mercenary troops, when he disbanded his army, kept nine thousand horse and sixteen thousand infantry.

This was the origin of the abasement of the nobility and the elevation of monarchy, of the political liberty of the nation without, and its civil slavery within. The people were delivered from feudal tyranny, only to fall, some time or other, under the despoticism of kings. So much does human nature seem born for slavery! It became necessary to raise a fund for the payment of an army; and the taxes were arbitrary, and unlimited as the number of soldiers, who were distributed in the different parts of the kingdom, under a pretence of guarding the frontiers against the enemy; but in reality to restrain and oppress the subject. The officers, commanders, and governors, were tools of government always armed against the nation itself. They, as well as their soldiers, no longer considered themselves as citizens of the state, solely devoted to the defence of the property and rights of the people. They acknowledged no longer any person in the kingdom except the king, in whose name they were ready to massacre their fathers and brothers. In short, the body of troops raised by the nation was nothing more than a royal army.

The discovery of gun-powder, which required considerable expense and great preparation, forges, magazines, and arsenals, made arms more than ever dependent on kings, and determined the advantage that in-
fantry hath over cavalry. The latter presented the book
front of the man and horse to the former. A horse-
man dismounted was either lost or good for nothing;
and a horse without a leader occasioned confusion and
disorder among the ranks. The havoc which the ar-
tillery and fire-arms made in squadrons, was more dif-
cult to repair than it was in battalions. In a word,
men could be bought and disciplined at a less expence
than horses; and this made it easy for kings to pro-
cure soldiers.

Thus the innovation of Charles VII. fatal to his
subjects, at least in futurity, became from his example
prejudicial to the liberty of all the people of Europe.
Every nation was obliged to keep itself upon the de-
fence against a nation always in arms. The right sys-
tem of politics, if there were any politics at a time
when arts, literature, and commerce had not yet open-
ed a communication among people, should have been,
for the princes to have jointly attacked that particular power that had put itself into a state of continual
war. But instead of compelling it to submit to peace,
they took up arms themselves. This contagion spread
itself the quicker, as it appeared the sole remedy against
the danger of an invasion, the only guarantee of the
security of the nations.

There was, however, a general want of the knowl-
dge necessary to discipline a body of infantry, the
importance of which began to be perceived. The man-
ner of fighting which the Switzers had employed
against the Burgundians, had rendered them as cele-
britated as formidable. With heavy swords and long
halberds, they had always overcome the horses and
men of the feudal army. As their ranks were impen-
etrable, and as they marched in close columns, they
overthrew all that attacked and all that opposed them.
Every power was then defirous of procuring some Swi's
soldiers. But the Switzers, sensible of the need there
was of their assistance, and setting the purchase of it
at too high a rate, it became necessary to resolve not

BOOK to employ them, and to form in all parts a national infantry, in order not to depend upon these auxiliary troops.

The Germans first adopted a discipline that required only strength of body, and subordination. As their country abounded in men and horses, they almost rivalled the reputation of the Swiss infantry, without losing the advantage of their own cavalry.

The French, more lively, adopted, with greater difficulty, and more slowly, a kind of military system that laid a restraint upon all their motions, and seemed rather to require perseverance than impetuosity. But the taste for imitation and novelty prevailed among this light people over that vanity which is fond of its own customs.

The Spaniards, notwithstanding the pride they have been reproached with, improved the military art of the Switzers, by bringing to greater perfection the discipline of that warlike people. They formed an infantry which became alternately the terror and admiration of Europe.

In proportion as the infantry increased, the custom and service of the feudal militia ceased in all parts, and war became more general. The constitution of each nation had for ages past scarce allowed the different people to wage war and massacre one another beyond the barriers of their own states. War was carried on upon the frontiers only between the neighbouring powers. When France and Spain had carried their arms to the most remote extremities of Italy, it was no longer possible to call together the ban and arriere ban of the nations, because it was not in fact the people who made war against each other, but the kings with their troops, for the honour of themselves or their families, without any regard to the good of their subjects. Not that the princes did not endeavour to interest the national pride of the people in their quarrels; but this was done merely to weaken, or totally to subdue that spirit of independence, which was still
struggling among some sets of men, against that absolute authority which the princes had gradually assumed.

All Europe was in commotion. The Germans marched into Italy, the Italians into Germany, the French into both these countries. The Turks besieged Naples and Nice, and the Spaniards were at the same time dispersed in Africa, in Hungary, in Italy, in Germany, in France, and in the Low Countries. All these people, inured and practised in arms, acquired great skill in the art of fighting and destroying each other with infallible regularity and precision.

It was religion that caused the Germans to contend with the Germans, the French with the French, but which more particularly excited Flanders against Spain. It was on the fens of Holland that all the rage of a bigoted and delusive king fell, of a superstitious and sanguinary prince, of the two Philips, and of the duke of Alva. It was in the Low Countries that a republic arose from the persecution of tyranny and the flames of the inquisition. When freedom had broken her chains, and found an asylum in the ocean, she raised her bulwarks upon the continent. The Dutch first invented the art of fortifying places; so much do genius and invention belong to free minds. Their example was generally followed. Extensive states had only occasion to fortify their frontiers. Germany and Italy, divided among a number of princes, were crowded with strong citadels from one end to the other. When we travel through these countries, we meet every evening with gates shut and draw-bridges at the entrance of the towns.

While Naflâu, who had taken up arms to secure the independence of his country, was renewing the science of fortification, the passion for glory simulated Gustavus Adolphus to investigate, according to the maxims of the ancients, the principles of the military science of the field, which were almost entirely lost. He had the honour to discover, to apply, and to diffuse them; but, if the most experienced judges may be credited,
he did not introduce into those principles the modifications which the difference of men's minds, of constitutions, and of arms, would have required. The persons trained up under him, great captains as they were, could not venture to be more bold or more enlightened than himself; and this timid circumspection prevented the alterations and improvements which might have been made. Cohorn and Vauban alone instructed Europe in the art of defending, but especially in that of attacking places. It happened, by one of those contradictions which are sometimes observed among nations, as well as among individuals, that the French, notwithstanding their ardent and impetuous disposition, appeared more expert in sieges than any other nation; and that they seemed to acquire at the foot of the walls that patience and coolness, in which they are most commonly deficient in all other military operations.

The king of Prussia appeared, and with him a new order of things was introduced. Without suffering himself to be swayed by the authority of those who had gone before him, this prince created a system of tactics almost entirely new. He demonstrated, that troops, however numerous, might be disciplined and manoeuvred; that the motions of the greatest armies were not subject to calculations more complicated and less certain than those of the most feeble corps; and that the same springs by which one battalion was put in motion, when properly managed, and put together by a great commander, might set a hundred thousand men in motion. His genius suggested to him many scientific details, of which no man had previously entertained the least idea; and by giving, in a manner, the advantage to the legs over the arms, he introduced into his evolutions, and into his marches, a celebrity, which is become necessary, and almost decisive, since armies have been unfortunately so much multiplied, and since they have been obliged to occupy a very extensive front.

This prince, who, since Alexander, hath not had his
equal in history, for extent and variety of talents; who, without having been himself formed by Greeks, hath been able to form Lacedemonians; this monarch, in a word, who hath deferred beyond all others that his name should be recorded in his age, and who will have the glory, since it is one, of having carried the art of war to a degree of perfection, from which, fortunately, it cannot but degenerate. Frederic hath seen all Europe adopt his institutions with enthusiasm. In imitation of the Roman people, who, by instructing themselves at the school of their enemies, learnt the art of resisting, of vanquishing, and of enslaving them, the modern nations have endeavoured to follow the example of a neighbour, formidable by his military capacity, and who might become dangerous by his success. But have they accomplished their design? Some external parts of his discipline have undoubtedly been imitated; but let us be allowed to doubt whether his great principles have been perfectly understood, thoroughly investigated, and properly combined.

But even if this sublime and terrible doctrine were become common among the powers, would it be equally useful to them all? The Prussians never lose sight of it one moment. They are ignorant of the intrigues of courts, the luxuries of cities, and the idleness of a country life. Their colours are their roofs, war-like songs their amusements, the recital of their first exploits their conversation, and fresh laurels their only hope. Eternally under arms, eternally in exercise, they have perpetually before them the image, and almost the reality, of a prudent and obstinate war, whether they be collected together in camps, or dispersed in garrisons.

Military men of all countries, draw the contrast between this description and that of your education, of your laws, and of your manners, and compare yourselves to such men, if you can. I will allow that the sound of the trumpet may rouse you from your lethargy, from balls, from public amusements; and that, from the arms of your mistress, you may rush with X iiij
eagerness into danger. But will a transient ardour supply the place of that vigilance, of that activity, of that application, and of that foresight, which can alone determine the operations of a war or of a campaign? Will a body, enervated by effeminate habits, resist the horrors of famine, the rigour of seasons, and the diversity of climates? Will a mind, ruled by the taste for pleasure, bend itself to regular, profound, and serious reflections? In a heart replete with various and frivolous objects, will not one of them be found which may be incompatible with courage? On the borders of the Po, of the Rhine, and of the Danube, in the midst of those destructions and ravages which always attend upon his steps, will not the Frenchman, covered with dust, his strength exhausted, and destitute of every thing, turn his sorrowful eyes towards the smiling borders of the Loire or of the Seine? Will he not sigh after those ingenious diversions, those tender connections, those charming societies, and after those voluptuous delights of every kind which he hath left there, and which await him at his return? Imbued with the absurd and unfortunate prejudice, that war, which is a profession for other nations, is only a rank or condition of life to him, will he not quit the camp as soon as he shall think he can do it without exposing his reputation too openly? If example, or circumstances, do not allow him to follow his inclination, will he not exhaust in a few months the income of ten years, to change a foraging party into a party of pleasure, or to display his luxury at the head of the trenches? The dislike of his duties, and his indifference for public affairs, will they not expose him to the ridicule of an enemy, who may have different principles and a different rule of conduct?

It is not to the king of Prussia, but to Lewis XIV. that we must attribute that prodigious number of troops, which presents us with the idea of war, even in the midst of peace. By keeping always numerous armies on foot, that proud monarch obliged his neighbours or his enemies, to exert efforts nearly similar,
The contagion spread itself even among the princes who were too weak to raise disturbances, and too poor to keep them up. They fold the blood of their legions to the greater powers; and the number of soldiers was gradually raised in Europe to two millions.

The barbarous ages are spoken of with horror; and yet war was then only a period of violence and of commotions, but at present it is almost a natural state. Most governments are either military, or become so; even the improvement in our discipline is a proof of it. The security we enjoy in our fields, the tranquility that prevails in our cities, whether troops are passing through, or are quartered in them; the police which reigns around the camps, and in garrisoned towns, proclaim indeed that arms are under some kind of control, but at the same time indicate that everything is subject to their power.

Fortunately, the hostilities of our days do not resemble those of former times. At those distant periods, the conquered provinces were laid waste, the towns subdued were reduced to ashes, the vanquished citizens were either put to death, or reduced to servitude. At present, war is much less cruel. When the battle is at an end, no more atrocious acts are committed; the prisoners are taken care of; the cities are no more destroyed, nor the countries ravaged. The contributions exacted from a subdued people scarce amount to as much as they paid for taxes before their misfortunes; and when they are restored by peace to their former masters, no alteration appears in their situation. When treaties insure their submission to the conqueror, they enjoy the same advantages as all the other subjects, and sometimes even several very important prerogatives. Accordingly, the nations, even those which are the least enlightened, show very little concern for these divisions between princes; they consider those quarrels as disputes between one government and another; and they would behold these events with total indifference, were they not obliged to pay the mercenaries employed to support the am-
B O O K X I X.

bition, the turbulence, or the caprices of a tyrannical

These mercenaries are very ill paid. They cost
the nation four or five times less than the meanest
mechanic. They receive no more than what is ab-
solutely necessary to keep them from starving. Not-
withstanding this, the troops, the generals, the forti-
fied places, the artillery, and the instruments of war,
have been multiplied to such a degree, that the main-
tenance of them hath driven the people to despair.
In order to provide for these expences, it hath been
necessary to overburden all the classes of society, which,
pressing one upon another, must crush the lowest and
the most useful of them, that of the husbandman.
The increase of taxes, and the difficulty of collecting
them, destroy, through want or distress, those very fa-
milies which are the parents and nurseries of the ar-
mies.

If an universal oppression be the first inconvenience
arising from the increase of soldiers, their idleness is
a second. Let them be incessantly employed, but
not to excess, as soon as the din of war shall no long-
er be heard, and their morals will be less dissolute, less
contagious; the strength necessary to bear the fatigues
of their profession will always be preserved, and their
health will seldom be affected; they will no more be
consumed by hunger, torment, or affliction; deprivations
and quarrels will no more be common among them,
and they may still be useful to society after the time
of their service shall be expired. For a moderate in-
crease of their pay, they will cheerfully make the roads
over which they are to march; they will level the
mountains they are to climb up; they will fortify the
towns they are to defend; they will dig the canals
from whence they are to derive their subsistence; they
will improve the ports in which they are to embark;
they will deliver the people from the most cruel and
the most ignominious of all vexations, the labours of
vassalage. After having expiated, by useful labours,
the misfortune of being devoted, by their condition,
to defolate the earth, and to massacre the inhabitants, they will perhaps cease to be detested; they will perhaps one day attain the honour of being considered in the light of citizens.

The Romans were acquainted with these truths, and had made them the basis of their conduct. How is it come to pass that we, who were formerly the slaves, and who are become at present the disciples of these matters of the world, have deviated so much from this important object of their principles? It is because Europe hath believed, and doth still believe, that men who are destined to handle arms, and to gather laurels, would be degraded by using instruments which are only in the hands of the lowest classes of the people. How long will this absurd prejudice, formed in barbarous times, subsist? How long shall we still remain in the twelfth century?

A third inconvenience arising from the increase of soldiers, is a decrease of courage. Few men are born fit for war. If we except Lacedaemon and Rome, where women who were citizens, and free, brought forth soldiers; where children were lulled to sleep by, and awakened with the sound of trumpets and songs of war; where education rendered men unnatural, and made them beings of a different species: all other nations have only had a few brave men among them. And, indeed, the lesser troops are raised, the better will they be. In the earlier ages of our ancestors, who were less civilized, but stronger than we are, armies were much less numerous than ours, but engagements were more decisive. It was necessary to be a noble or a rich man to serve in the army, which was looked upon both as an honour and a privilege. None but volunteers entered into the service. All their engagements ended with the campaign; and any man who disdained the art of war was at liberty to withdraw. Besides, there was then more of that ardour, and of that pride of sentiment, which constitutes true courage. At present, what glory is there in serving under absolute commanders, who judge of men by their size, estimate
A Fourth Inconvenience is, that the Incentive of the number of troops is increased beyond the number of the soldiers is increased; and in proportion as a force is en-
chanced, so the incentive to engage. According, except in the uncommon and extreme circumstances of a country, they do not conclude them-
from their own forces, unless their situation or their examples are well fortified, magistrates and authorities may prevail in-ven-
tion; but when they prefer a people from their own, their own decision is given, according to their own circumstances of a country. A number of troops, however small, is a Fourth Inconvenience is, that the incentive of the number of troops is increased beyond the number of the soldiers is increased; and in proportion as a force is en-
makes everything conform to his will, as every thing is subordinated to his power. By the force of arms alone, he sets the opinions of men at defiance, and controls their will. By the assistance of soldiers he levies taxes; and by these he raises soldiers. He imagines that his authority is shown and exercised, by destroying what he hath formed; but his exertions are vain and fruitless. He is perpetually renewing his forces, without being ever able to recover the national strength. In vain do his soldiers keep his people in continual war; if his subjects tremble at his troops, his troops in return will fly from the enemy. But in these circumstances, the loss of a battle is that of a kingdom. The minds of all men being alienated, they voluntarily submit to a foreign yoke; because, under the dominion of a conqueror, hope is still left; while, under that of a despot, nothing remains but fear. When the progress of the military government hath introduced despotism, then the nation exists no more. The soldiery soon becomes insolent and detested. Barrenness, occasioned by wretchedness and debauchery, is the cause of the extinction of families. A spirit of discord and hatred prevails among all orders of men, who are either corrupted or disgraced. Societies betray, sell, and plunder each other, and give themselves up, one after another, to the scourges of the tyrant, who plunders, oppresses, destroys, and annihilates them all. Such is the end of that art of war, which paves the way for a military government. Let us now consider what influence the navy has.

The ancients have transmitted to us almost all those arts that have been revived with the restoration of letters; but we have surpassed them in the military management of the navy. Tyre and Sidon, Carthage and Rome, scarce knew any sea but the Mediterranean; to sail through which it was only necessary to have rafts, galleys, and men to row them. Sea engagements might then be bloody; but it required great skill to construct and equip the fleets. To pass from Europe into Africa, it was only necessary to
be supplied with boats, which may be called flat bottomed ones, which transmitted Carthaginians or Romans, the only people almost who were engaged in sea fights. Commerce was, fortunately, a greater object of attention to the Athenians, and the republics of Asia, than victories at sea.

After these famous nations had abandoned both the land and the sea to plunderers and to pirates, the navy remained, during twelve centuries, equally neglected with all the other arts. Those swarms of barbarians, who over-ran and totally destroyed Rome in its declining state, came from the Baltic upon rafts or canoes, to ravage and plunder our sea-coasts, without going far from the continent. These were not voyages, but descents upon the coast, that were continually renewed. The Danes and Normans were not armed for a cruise, and scarce knew how to fight but upon land.

At length, chance or the Chinese supplied the Europeans with the compass, and this was the cause of the discovery of America. The needle, which taught sailors to know how far they were distant from the north, or how near they approached to it, emboldened them to attempt longer voyages, and to lose sight of land for whole months together. Geometry and astronomy taught them how to compute the progress of the constellations, to determine the longitude by them, and to judge pretty nearly how far they were advancing to the east and west. Even at that time, the height and the distance of vessels from the coast might always have been known. Though the knowledge of the longitude be much more inaccurate than that of the latitude, yet they both soon occasioned such improvement to be made in navigation, as to give rise to the art of carrying on war by sea. The first essay, however, of this art was made between galleys that were in possession of the Mediterranean. The most celebrated engagement of the modern navy was that of Lepanto, which was fought two centuries ago, between two hundred and five Christians, and two
hundred and sixty Turkish galleys. This prodigious armament was entirely constructed in Italy; a country from which almost every invention of art has been derived, though not preserved in it. But at that time, its trade, its population, were double what they are at present. Besides, those galleys were neither so long nor so large as those of our times, as we may judge from some of the old carcases that are still preserved in the arsenal of Venice. The number of rowers amounted to one hundred and fifty, and the troops did not exceed fourscore men in one galley. At present, Venice hath more beautiful galleys, and less influence, upon that sea which the doge marries, and which other powers frequent and trade upon.

Galleys, indeed, were proper for criminals; but stronger vessels were required for soldiers. The art of constructing ships improved with that of navigation. Philip II. king of all Spain, and of the East and West Indies, employed all the docks of Spain and Portugal, of Naples and Sicily, which he then possessed, in constructing ships of an extraordinary size and strength; and his fleet assumed the title of the Invincible Armada. It consisted of one hundred and thirty ships, near one hundred of which were the largest that had yet been seen on the ocean. Twenty small ships followed this fleet, and failed or fought under its protection. The pride of the Spaniards, in the sixteenth century, hath dwelt very much upon, and exaggerated the pompous description of this formidable armament. But a circumstance which diffused terror and admiration two centuries ago, would now serve only to excite laughter. The largest of those ships would be no more than a third-rate in our squadrons. They were so heavily armed, and so ill managed, that they could scarce move, or fail near the wind, nor board another vessel, nor could the ship be properly worked in tempestuous weather. The sailors were as awkward as the ships were heavy, and the pilots almost as ignorant as the sailors.

The English, who were already acquainted with the
weakness and little skill of their enemies at sea, concluded that inexperience would occasion their defeat. They carefully avoided boarding these unwieldy machines, and burned a part of them. Some of these enormous galleons were taken, others disabled. A storm arose, in which most of the ships lost their anchors, and were abandoned by their crews to the fury of the waves, and cast away, some upon the western coasts of Scotland, others upon the coasts of Ireland. Scarcely one half of this invincible fleet was able to return to Spain, where the damages it had suffered, joined to the terror of the sailors, spread a general consternation, from which Spain has never recovered. The Spaniards were for ever depressed by the loss of an armament that had cost three years preparation, and upon which all the forces and revenues of the kingdom had been almost exhausted.

The destruction of the Spanish navy occasioned the dominion of the sea to pass into the hands of the Dutch. The pride of their former tyrants could not be more signally punished than by the prosperity of a people, forced by oppression to break the yoke of regal authority. When this republic began to emerge from its fens, the rest of Europe was embroiled in civil wars by the spirit of fanaticism. Persecution drove men into Holland from all other states. The inquisition which the House of Austria wished to extend over all parts of its dominions; the persecution which Henry II. raised in France; the emissaries of Rome, who were supported in England by Mary; every thing, in a word, concurred to people Holland with an immense number of refugees. This country had neither lands nor harvest for their subsistence. They were obliged to seek it by sea throughout the whole universe. Almost all the commerce of Europe was engrossed by Lisbon, Cadiz, and Antwerp, under one sovereign, whose power and ambition rendered him a general object of hatred and envy. The new republicans having escaped his tyranny, and being excited by resentment and necessity, became pirates, and form-
ed a navy at the expence of the Spaniards and Por-
tuguese, whom they held in utter averfion. France
and England, who, in the progress of this rising re-
public, only perceived the humiliation of the House
of Anftria, affifted Holland in preferring the conquifts
and fpoils fhe had made, the value of which fhe was yet
unacquainted with. Thus the Dutch fecured to them-
selves eftablifhments wherever they choofe to direct their
forces; fixed themselves in these acquisitions before the
jealoufy of other nations could be excited, and imper-
ceptibly made themselves masters of all commerce by
their induftry, and of all the feas by the strength of
their fquadrons.

The domestic troubles in England were for a while
favourable to this prosperity, which had been fo filent-
ly acquired in remote countries. But at length Crom-
well excited in his country an emulation for commerce,
fo natural to the inhabitants of an ifland. To share
the empire of the feas with the English, was, in fact,
to give it up to them; and the Dutch were determined
to maintain it. Instead of forming an alliance with
England, they courageoufly resolved upon war. They
carried it on for a long time with unequal force; and
this perseverance againft misfortune preserved to them,
at leaft, an honourable rivalry. Superiority in the
construction and form of the ships often gave the vic-
tory to their enemies; but the vanquifhed never met
with any decisive lofes.

In the meanwhile, these long and dreadful combats
had exhausted, or at leaft diminished, the strength of
the two nations, when Lewis XIV. willing to avail
himelf of their mutual weaknefs, afpired to the em-
pire of the sea. When this prince first afumed the
reins of government, he found only eight or nine vef-
sels in his harbours, and those very much decayed;
neither were they ships of the first or second rate.
Richelieu had perceived the neceffity of raising a pier
before Rochelle; but not of forming a navy; the idea
of which muft, however, have been conceived by Hen-
ry IV. and his friend Sully. But it was referred to

Vol. VI.

Y
the most brilliant age of the French nation to give
birth to every improvement at once. Lewis, who con-
ceived, at least, all the ideas of grandeur he did not
himself suggest, inspired his subjects with the same pas-
sion which prevailed in him. Five ports were opened
to the military navy. Docks and arsenals, equally
convenient and magnificent, were constructed. The
art of ship-building, still very imperfect everywhere,
was established upon more certain principles. A set
of naval regulations much superior to those of the
other nations, and which they have since adopted, ob-
tained the sanction of the laws. Seamen emerged from
the midst of the ocean, as it were, already formed. In
less than twenty years the harbours of the kingdom
reckoned one hundred ships of the line.

The French navy first exerted its power against the
people of Barbary, who were beaten. It afterwards
obtained some advantages over the Spaniards. It then
engaged the fleets of England and Holland, sometimes
separately and sometimes combined, and generally ob-
tained the honour and advantage of the victory. The
first memorable defeat the French navy experienced
was in 1692, when with forty ships they attacked nin-
ty English and Dutch ships off the Hogue, in or-
der to give the English a king they rejected, and who
was not himself very desirous of the title. The most
numerous fleet obtained the victory. James the Se-
cond felt an involuntary pleasure at the triumph of
the people who expelled him; as if at this instant the
blind love of his country had prevailed within him,
over his ambition for the throne. Since that day the
naval powers of France have been upon the decline,
and it was impossible that they should not be.

Lewis XIV. accustomed to carry on his enterprises
with more hauhtiness than method, more ambitious
of appearing powerful than of being really so, had be-
gun by completing the higher parts of his military na-
vy before he had settled its foundation. The only fo-
lid basis which could have been given to it would have
been an extensive commercial navy, carried on with
activity; and there was not even the shadow of such a thing existing in the kingdom. The trade with the East Indies was still in its infancy. The Dutch had appropriated to themselves the small quantity of commodities which the American islands then produced. The French had not yet thought of giving to the great fisheries that degree of extension of which they were susceptible. There were no French vessels admitted in the northern harbours, and the southern very seldom saw any. The state had even given up its coasting trade to foreigners. Was it not therefore unavoidable, that this colossus should be overturned, and the illusion dissipated upon the first remarkable check which this proud display of power should receive?

From that period England acquired a superiority, which hath raised her to the greatest prosperity. A people, who are at present the most considerable power at sea, easily persuade themselves that they have always held that empire. Sometimes they trace their maritime power to the era of Julius Caesar; sometimes they assert that they have ruled over the ocean, at least, since the ninth century. Perhaps, some day or other, the Corsicans, who are at present a nation of little consequence, when they are become a maritime people, will record in their annals that they have always ruled over the Mediterranean. Such is the vanity of man, which must endeavour to aggrandize itself in past as well as future ages. Truth alone, which exists before all nations, and survives them all, informs us, that there hath been no navy in Europe from the Christian era till the 16th century. The English themselves had no need of it, while they remained in possession of Normandy and of the coasts of France.

When Henry VIII. was desirous of equipping a fleet, he was obliged to hire vessels from Hamburgh, Lubeck, and Dantzig; but especially from Genoa and Venice, in which states it was only known how to build and conduct a fleet; which supplied sailors and admirals; and which gave to Europe a Columbus, an Americus, a Cabot, and a Verezani; those wonderful
men, who by their discoveries have added so much to the extent of the globe. Elizabeth was in want of a naval force against Spain, and permitted her subjects to fit out ships to act against the enemies of the state. This permission formed sailors for the service. The queen herself went to see a ship that had been round the world; on board of which she embraced Drake, at the time she knighted him. She left forty-two men of war to her successors. James and Charles the First added some ships to the naval forces they had received from the throne; but the commanders of this navy were chosen from the nobility, who, satisfied with this mark of distinction, left the labours to the pilots; so that the art of navigation received no improvements.

There were few noblemen in the party that dethroned the Stuarts. Ships of the line were at that time given to captains of inferior birth, but of uncommon skill in navigation. They improved, and rendered the English navy illustrious.

When Charles II. reascended the throne, the kingdom was possessed of six and fifty ships. The navy increased under his reign to the number of eighty-three, fifty-eight of which were ships of the line. Nevertheless, towards the latter days of this prince, it began to decline again. But his brother, James II. restored it to its former lustre, and raised it even to a greater degree of splendour. Being himself high-admiral before he came to the throne, he had invented the art of regulating the manoeuvres of the fleet, by the signals of the flag. Happy, if he had better understood the art of governing a free people! When the prince of Orange, his son-in-law, became possessed of his crown, the English navy consisted of one hundred and sixty-three vessels of all sizes, armed with seven thousand pieces of cannon, and equipped with forty-two thousand men. This force was doubled during the war that was carried on for the Spanish succession. It hath since so considerably increased, that the English think they are able alone to balance, by their maritime forces, the navy of the whole universe. England is now
at sea what Rome formerly was upon land, when the English nation considers its navy as the bulwark of its safety, and the source of its riches. On this they found all their hopes in times of peace as well as war. They therefore raise a fleet more willingly, and with greater expedition than a battalion. They spare no expence, and exert every political art to acquire seamen.

The foundations of this power were laid in the middle of the last century by the famous act of navigation, which secured to the English all the productions of their vast empire, and which promised them a great share in those of other regions. This law seemed to advise all people to think only of themselves. This lesson, however, hath been of no use hitherto; and no government hath made it the rule of their conduct. It is possible that the eyes of men may soon be opened; but Great Britain will however have enjoyed, during the space of more than a century, the fruits of its foresight; and will perhaps have acquired, during that long interval, sufficient strength to perpetuate her advantages. It may readily be supposed that she is inclined to employ all possible means to prevent the explosion of that mine which time is gradually and slowly digging under the foundation of her fortune, and to declare war against the first people who shall attempt to blow it up. Her formidable fleets impatiently expect the signal of hostilities. Their activity and their vigilance are redoubled, since it hath been decided that the prizes were to belong entirely to the officers and the crews of the victorious ship, since the state hath granted a gratuity of one hundred and thirty-two livres ten sols [5l. 10s. 5d.] to every person who should board, take, or sink, any of the enemy's ships. This allurement of gain will be increased, if it be necessary, by other rewards. Will the nations which are so habitually divided by their interests and by their jealousies consent together to suppress this boldness; and if
one of them should undertake it separately, will it succeed in this terrible conflict?

The navy is a new species of power, which hath given the universe in some measure to Europe. This part of the globe, though so limited, hath acquired by its squadrons an absolute empire over the rest, which are much more extensive. It hath seized upon those regions that were suitable to it, and hath placed under its dependence the inhabitants and productions of all countries. A superiority so advantageous will last for ever, unless some event, which it is impossible to foresee, should disquiet our descendants of an element in which shipwrecks are so frequent. As long as they shall have any fleets remaining, they will pave the way for revolutions, they will draw along with them the destinies of nations, and they will be the levers of the world.

But it is not only to the extremities of the world, or in barbarous regions, that ships have carried terror, and dictated laws. Their influence hath been sensibly felt even in the midst of ourselves, and hath disturbed the ancient systems of things. A new kind of equilibrium hath been formed, and the balance of power hath been transferred from the continent to the maritime nations. In proportion as the nature of their forces brought them nearer to all countries bordering upon the ocean and its several gulfs, so they have had it in their power to do good or mischief to the greater number of states; consequently they must have had more allies, more consideration, and more influence. These advantages have been evident to the governments which, by their situation, were at hand to share them; and there is scarce any one which hath not exerted greater or less efforts to succeed in it.

Since nature hath decided that men must be in perpetual agitation upon our planet, and that they should continually disturb it with their inquietude, it is a fortunate circumstance for modern times, that the forces of the sea should make a diversion from those of the
A power which hath coasts to protect will not easily encroach upon the territories of its neighbours. It would require immense preparations, innumerable troops, arsenals of all kinds, and a double supply of means and of resources to execute its project of conquest. Since Europe hath employed its forces on the sea, it enjoys greater security than before. Its wars are perhaps as frequent and as bloody, but it is less ravaged and less weakened by them. The operations are carried on with greater harmony and with more regular plans; and there are less of those great effects which derange all systems. There are greater efforts, and less shocks. All the passions are turned towards one certain general good, one grand political aim, towards a happy employment of all the natural and moral powers, which is commerce.

The importance to which the navy has arisen will lead, in process of time, every thing which has a greater or less distant affinity to it, to the degree of perfection it is susceptible of: till the middle of the last century an uncertain routine was followed in the construction of ships. One knows not what the sea requires, was still a common proverb. At this period geometry carried its attention to this art, which was becoming every day more interesting, and applied to it some of its principles. Since that, its attention has been more seriously engaged, and always with success. Matters, however, are still far from being brought to demonstration; for there is still great variety in the dimensions adopted in the different docks.

In proportion as the navy became a science, it became a necessary object of study to those who engaged in this profession. They were made to understand, though very slowly, that those commanders who had general ideas, founded upon mathematical rules, would have a great superiority over officers, who, having nothing but habit to lead them, could only judge of the things they had to do from their analogy to those which they had already seen. Schools were opened
on all sides, where young men were instructed in naval
b o o k   t a c t i c s ,  a n d  i n  o t h e r  k n o w l e d g e  o f  e q u a l  i m p o r t a n c e .

This was something, but it was not all. In a pro-
feffion where the disposition of the sea and of the cur-
rents, the motion of the ships, the strength and variety
of the winds, the frequent accidents from fire, the or-
dinary breaking of the sails and ropes, and many other
circumstances, infinitely multiply the plans; where,
in the midst of the noise of cannon, and of the greatest
dangers, one must instantly take a resolution which
shall determine at once either victory or defeat; where
the evolutions must be so rapid, that they seem rather
to be the effect of sentiment than the result of reflec-
tion: in such a profession, the most learned theory
cannot be sufficient. Deprived of that certain and
speedy effect of fight which practice, and that the most
constant, can only give, it would lose in reflection the
time for action. Experience must therefore complete
the seaman, whose education hath been begun by the
study of the exact sciences. In process of time, this
union of theory with practice must prevail in every
place where there are navigators, but nowhere more
speedily than in an island, because arts are sooner
brought to perfection, wherever they are of indispen-
sable necessity.

For the same reason, in an island there will be bet-
ter sailors, and more of them; but will they be treat-
ed with that justice and humanity which is due to
them? Let us suppose that one of them, who hath
fortunately escaped from the devouring heats of the
line, from the horror of storms, and from the intem-
perature of climates, returns from a voyage of several
years, and from the extremities of the globe. His
wife expects him with impatience; his children are
anxious to see a father whose name hath been repeated
to them a multitude of times; he himself soothes his
anxiety by the pleasing hope that he shall soon see
again what is most dear to him in the world, and ant-
cipates by his wishes the delightful moment when his
heart will be comforted in the tender embraces of his family. All at once, at the approach of the shore, within sight of his country, he is forcibly taken out of the ship in which he had braved the fury of the waves in order to enrich his fellow-citizens, and is put, by a fleet of infamous satellites, on board of a fleet, where thirty or forty thousand of his brave companions are to share his misfortunes, till the end of hostilities. In vain do their tears flow, in vain do they appeal to the laws; their destiny is irrevocably fixed. This is a feeble image of the atrociousness of the English mode of ruling.

In our absolute governments another mode is adopted; perhaps, in fact, as cruel, though apparently more moderate. The sailor is there inlifed, and for life. He is employed or disbanded at pleasure; his pay is regulated by caprice, which also fixes the period when he shall receive it. Both in time of peace, as in time of war, he hath never any will of his own, but is always under the rod of a sultan or despot, most commonly unjust, cruel, and interested. The greatest difference I can observe between these two modes is, that the former is only a temporary servitude, the latter is a slavery which hath no end.

Nevertheless, we shall find some apologists, and perhaps some admirers, of these inhuman customs. It will be said, that, in a state of society, the wills of individuals must always be subject to the general will; and that their convenience must always be sacrificed to the public good. Such hath been the practice of all nations and of all ages. It is upon this basis alone that all institutions, ill or well planned, have been founded. They will never deviate from this central point, without hastening the inevitable period of their ruin.

Undoubtedly the republic must be served, and that by the citizens: but, is it not just that every one should contribute to this service, according to his means? In order to preserve to the possessor of millions, often unjustly the entire enjoyment of his fortune and of his delights, must the unfortunate sailor be obliged to sacri-
BOOK XIX.

The face two-thirds of his salary, the wants of his family, and the most valuable of his property, his liberty? Would not the country be served with more zeal, with more vigour and understanding, by men who should voluntarily devote to it all the natural and moral powers they have acquired, or exercised, upon all the seas, than by slaves, who are necessarily and incessantly employed in attending to the breaking of their chains? Improperly will the administrators of empires allege, in justification of their atrocious conduct, that these navigators would refuse to employ their hands, and exert their courage in engagements, if they were not dragged to them against their inclinations. Every circumstance confirms that their most favourite object would be to follow their professions; and it is demonstrated, that even if they had any dislike to it, fill their necessities, which are ever renewed, would compel them to attend to it.

But wherefore should we not declare, that governments are as well convinced as those who cenfure them, of the injustice they commit towards their sailors? But they choose rather to erect tyranny into a principle, than to own that it is impossible for them to be just. In the present state of things, all of them, and more especially some, have raised their naval forces beyond what their circumstances would allow. Their pride hath not yet suffered them to descend from that exaggerated grandeur with which they had intoxicated both themselves and their neighbours. The time will come, however, and it cannot be very distant, when it will be necessary to proportion armaments to the resources of an exhausted treasury. This will be a fortunate epocha for Europe, if it should follow so bright an example. That part of the world which possesses at present three hundred and ninety-two ships of the line, and four times that number of ships of war of an inferior order, will derive great advantages from this revolution. The ocean will then be ploughed with fewer fleets, and those will consist of a less number of ships. The mercantile navy will be enriched from the
military navy; and commerce will acquire a greater degree of extension throughout the whole universe.

Commerce produces nothing of itself; for it is not of a plastic nature. Its business confines in exchanges, by its operations, a town, a province, a nation, a part of the globe, are disencumbered of what is useless to them, and receive what they are in want of. It is perpetually engaged in supplying the respective wants of men. Its knowledge, its funds, and its labours, are all devoted to this honourable and necessary office. Its influence could not exist without the arts and without cultivation: but these would be very insignificant without its influence. By pervading the earth, by crossing the seas, by raising the obstacles which opposed themselves to the intercourse of nations, by extending the sphere of wants and the thirst of enjoyments, it multiplies labour, it encourages industry, and becomes, in some measure, the moving principle of the world.

The Phœncians were the first merchants of whom history hath preserved the remembrance. Situated on the borders of the sea, on the confines of Asia and Africa, to receive and dispense all the riches of the ancient world, they founded their colonies, and built their cities, with no other view but that of commerce. At Tyre, they were the masters of the Mediterranean; at Carthage, they laid the foundations of a republic that traded, by the ocean, upon the richest of the European coasts.

The Greeks succeeded the Phœncians, as the Romans did the Carthaginians and the Greeks: they held the dominion of the sea as well as of the land; but they carried on no other kind of commerce, except that of conveying into Italy, for their own use, all the riches of Africa, Asia, and the conquered world. When Rome had invaded the whole world, and had lost all her acquisitions, commerce returned, as it were, to its original source towards the East. There it was established, while the Barbarians overran Europe. The empire was divided; the din of arms, and the art of war, remained in the West; Italy, however, preserved
its communication with the Levant, where all the treasures of India were circulated.

The Crusades exhausted in Asia all the rage of zeal and ambition, of war and fanaticism, with which the Europeans were possessed; but they were the cause of introducing into Europe a taste for Asiatic luxury, and redeemed, by giving rise to some degree of traffic and industry, the blood and the lives they had cost. Three centuries, taken up in wars and voyages to the East, gave to the restless spirit of Europe a recruit it stood in need of, that it might not perish by a kind of internal consumption: they prepared the way for that exertion of genius and activity, which since arose, and displayed itself in the conquest and trade of the East Indies, and of America.

The Portuguese attempted, by degrees, and with circumspection, to double the African coast. It was not till after four score years of labours and of war, and after having made themselves masters of all the western coast of that vast region, that they ventured to double the Cape of Good Hope. The honour of clearing this formidable barrier was reserved to Vasco de Gama, in 1497, who at length reached the coast of Malabar, where all the treasures of the most fertile countries of Asia were to be circulated. This was the scene on which the Portuguese displayed all their conquests.

While this nation made itself master of the article of trade, the Spaniards seized upon that which purchases them, the mines of gold and silver. These metals became not only a standard to regulate the value, but also the object of commerce. In this double use they soon engrossed all the rest. All nations were in want of them to facilitate the exchange of their commodities, and obtain the conveniences they flood in need of. The luxury and the circulation of money in the south of Europe, changed the nature as well as the direction of commerce, at the same time that it extended its bounds.

In the meanwhile, the two nations that had subdued the East and West Indies, neglected arts and
agriculture. They imagined every thing was to be obtained by gold, without considering that it is labour alone that procures it: they were convinced, though late, and at their own expence, that the industry which they lost was more valuable than the riches they acquired; and the Dutch taught them this severe lesson. The Spaniards and the Portuguese, though possessed of all the gold in the world, remained or became poor; the Dutch presently acquired riches, without either lands or mines. As soon as these intrepid republicans had taken refuge in the midst of the seas, with Liberty their tutelary divinity, they perceived that their moralities would never be any thing more than the feast of their habitation, and that they should be obliged to seek resources and subsistence elsewhere. They cast their eyes over the globe, and said to themselves, "The whole world is our domain; we will enjoy it by navigation and commerce. The revolutions which shall happen upon this immense and perpetually agitated scene, will never be concealed from our knowledge. Indolence and activity, slavery and independence, barbarism and civilization, opulence and poverty, culture and industry, purchases and sales, the vices and the virtues of men, we will turn them all to our advantage. We will encourage the labours of the nations, or we will impede their prosperity; we will urge them on to war, or we will endeavour to restore tranquillity among them, as it may be most suitable to our own interests."

Till that period, Flanders had been the centre of communication between the north and the south of Europe. The United Provinces of Holland, which had detached themselves from it in order to belong only to themselves, took its place, and became, in their turn, the staple of all the powers which had more or less exchanges to make. The ambition of the new republic was limited to this first advantage. After having drawn into its ports the productions of other countries, its navigators went themselves in quest of them. Holland soon became
BOOK XIX.

an immense magazine, where all the productions of the several climates were collected; and this union of so many important objects increased continually, in proportion as the wants of the people were multiplied, with the means of satisfying them. One merchant attracted another. The commodities of the Old World invited those of the New. One purchaser brought another; and the treasures already acquired became a certain method of acquiring more.

Every circumstance was favourable to the rise and progress of the commerce of this republic. Its position on the borders of the sea, at the mouths of several great rivers; its proximity to the most fertile or best cultivated lands of Europe; its natural connections with England and Germany, which defended it against France; the little extent and fertility of its own soil, which obliged the inhabitants to become fishermen, sailors, brokers, bankers, carriers, and commissaries; in a word, to endeavour to live by industry for want of territory. Moral causes contributed, with those of the climate and the soil, to establish and advance its prosperity. The liberty of its government, which opened an asylum to all strangers dissatisfied with their own; the freedom of its religion, which permitted a public and quiet profession of all other modes of worship; that is to say, the agreement of the voice of nature with that of conscience, of interests with duty; in a word, that toleration, that universal religion of all equitable and enlightened minds, friends to heaven and earth; to God, as to their father; to men, as to their brethren. Finally, this commercial republic found out the secret of availing itself of all events, and of making even the calamities and vices of other nations concur in advancing its felicity. It turned to its own advantage the civil wars which fanaticism had raised among people of a restless spirit, or which patriotism had excited among a free people; it profited by the indolence and ignorance which bigotry supported among two nations who were under the influence of the imagination.
This spirit of industry in Holland, with which was intermixed a considerable share of that political art which sows the seeds of jealousy and discord among the nations, at length excited the attention of other powers. The English were the first to perceive that traffic might be carried on without the interposition of the Dutch. England, where the encroachments of despotism had given birth to liberty, because they were antecedent to corruption and effeminacy, was favorable to obtaining riches by labour, which is their antidote. The English first considered commerce as the proper science and support of an enlightened, powerful, and even a virtuous people. They considered it rather as an improvement of industry than an acquisition of enjoyments; rather as an encouragement and a source of activity in favour of population, than as a promoter of luxury and magnificence, for the purpose of parade. Invited to trade by their situation, this became the spirit of their government and the means of their ambition. All their schemes tended to this great object. In other monarchies, trade is carried on by the people; in this happy constitution by the state, or the whole nation: she carries it on indeed with a constant desire of dominion, which implies that of enslave other people, but by means, at least, which conduce the happiness of the world before it is subdued. By war, the conqueror is little happier than the conquered, because injuries and massacres are their mutual object; but by commerce, the conquering people necessarily introduce industry into the country, which they would not have subdued if it had been already industrious, or in which they would not maintain themselves, if they had not brought industry in along with them. Upon these principles England had founded her commerce and her empire, and mutually and alternately extended one by the other.

The French, situated under as favourable a sky, and upon as happy a soil, have, for a long time, flattered themselves with the idea that they had much to give to other nations, without being under a necessity of
BOOK XIX.

Asking scarce any return. But Colbert was sensible that in the ferment Europe was in at that time, there would be an evident advantage for the culture and productions of a country that should employ those of the whole world. He opened manufactures for all the arts, the woollens, filks, dyes, embroideries, the gold and silver stuffs; all acquired, in the establishments the operations of which he directed, a degree of perfection, which the other manufactures could not attain. To increase the utility of these arts, it was necessary to possess the materials for them. The culture of them was encouraged according to the diversity of climates and territory. Some of them were required even of the provinces of the kingdom, and the rest from the colonies which chance had given it in the New World; as well as from all the navigators who had for a century past infested the seas with their robberies. The nation must then necessarily have made a double profit upon the materials and the workmanship of the manufactures. The French pursued, for a long time, this precarious and temporary object of commerce, with an activity and spirit of emulation which must have made them greatly surpass their rivals; and they still enjoy that superiority over other nations in all those arts of luxury and ornament which procure riches to industry.

The natural volatility of the national character, and its propensity to trifling pursuits, hath brought treasures to the plate, by the taste that has fortunately prevailed for its fashions. Like to that light and delicate sex, which teaches and inspires us with a taste for dress, the French reign in all courts, and in all regions; respecting every thing that concerns ornament or magnificence; and their art of pleasing is one of the mysterious sources of their fortune and power. Other nations have subdued the world by those simple and rustic manners, which constitute the virtues that are fit for war; to them it was given to reign over it by their vices. Their empire will continue, till being degraded and enslaved by their masters, by exertions
of authority equally arbitrary and unlimited, they will become contemptible in their own eyes. Then they will lose, with their confidence in themselves, that industry, which is one of the sources of their opulence and the springs of their activity.

Germany, which hath only a few ports, and those bad ones, hath been obliged to behold, with an indifferent or a jealous eye, its ambitious neighbours enriching themselves with the spoils of the sea, and of the East and the West Indies. Its industry hath been restrained even upon its frontiers, which were perpetually ravaged by destructive wars, and as far as into the interior part of its provinces, by the nature of its constitution, which is singularly complicated. A great deal of time, extensive knowledge, and considerable efforts, would be requisite, to establish a commerce of any importance in a region where everything seemed unfavourable to it. This period, however, is now at hand. Flax and hemp are already industriously cultivated, and appear under agreeable forms. Wool and cotton are wrought with skill; and other manufactures are begun or improved. If, as the laborious and steady character of the inhabitants induces us to hope, the empire should ever attain to the advantage of paying, with its own productions and manufactures, for those which it is obliged to provide itself with from other nations, and to preserve within itself the metals which are extracted from its mines, it will soon become one of the most opulent countries of Europe.

It would be absurd to announce so brilliant a destiny to the northern nations, although commerce hath also begun to meliorate their condition. The iron of their rude climate, which formerly served only for their mutual destruction, hath been turned to uses beneficial to mankind; and part of that which they used to deliver in its rough state, is never sold at present till after it hath been wrought. They have found a mart for their naval stores at a higher price than they were formerly sold for, before navigation had acquired that prodigious extension which astonishes us. If some
of these people indolently wait for purchasers in their harbours, others carry out their productions themselves into foreign ports; and this activity extends their ideas, their transactions, and their advantages.

This new principle of the moral world hath infiltrated itself by degrees, till it is become, as it were, necessary to the formation and existence of political bodies. The taste for luxury and conveniencies hath produced the love of labour, which at present constitutes the chief strength of a state. The sedentary occupations of the mechanic arts indeed render men more liable to be affected by the injuries of the seasons, lest fit to be exposed to the open air, which is the first nutritive principle of life. But it is better that the human race should be enervated under the roofs of the workshops, than inured to hardships under tents; because war destroys, while commerce, on the contrary, gives new life to every thing. By this useful revolution in manners, the general maxims of politics have altered the face of Europe. It is no longer a people immersed in poverty that becomes formidable to a rich nation. Power is at present an attendant on riches, because they are no longer the fruit of conquest, but the produce of constant labour, and of a life spent in perpetual employment. Gold and silver corrupt only those indolent minds which indulge in the delights of luxury, upon that stage of intrigue and meanness, that is called greatness. But these metals employ the hands and arms of the people; they excite a spirit of agriculture in the fields, of navigation in the maritime cities, and in the centre of the state they lead to the manufacturing of arms, clothing, furniture, and the construction of buildings. A spirit of emulation exists between man and nature: they are perpetually improving each other. The people are formed and fashioned by the arts they profess. If there be some occupations which soften and degrade the human race, there are others by which it is hardened and repaired. If it be true that art renders them unnatural, they do not, at least, propagate in order to destroy themselves,
as among the barbarous nations in heroic times. It is certainly an easy, as well as a captivating subject, to describe the Romans with the single art of war subduing all the other arts, all other nations indolent or commercial, civilized or savage; breaking or despising the vases of Corinth; more happy with their gods made of clay, than with the golden statues of their worthless emperors. But it is a more pleasing, and perhaps a nobler sight, to behold all Europe peopled with laborious nations, who are continually failing round the globe, in order to cultivate and render it fit for mankind; to see them animate, by the enlivening breath of industry, all the regenerating powers of nature; seek in the abyss of the ocean, and in the bowels of rocks, for new means of subsistence, or new enjoyments; stir and raise up the earth with all the mechanical powers invented by genius; establish between the two hemispheres, by the happy improvements in the art of navigation, a communication of flying bridges, as it were, that reunite one continent to the other; pursue all the tracks of the sun, overcome its annual barriers, and pass from the tropics to the poles upon the wings of the wind; in a word, to see them open all the streams of population and pleasure, in order to pour them upon the face of the earth through a thousand channels. It is then, perhaps, that the Divinity contemplates his work with satisfaction, and does not repent himself of having made man.

Such is the image of commerce; let us now admire the genius of the merchant. The same understanding that Newton had to calculate the motion of the stars, the merchant exerts in tracing the progress of the commercial people that fertilize the earth. His problems are the more difficult to resolve, as the circumstances of them are not taken from the immutable laws of nature, as the systems of the geometrical are; but depend upon the caprices of men, and the uncertainty of a thousand complicated events. That accurate spirit of combination that Cromwell and Richelieu must have had, the one to destroy, the
other to establish despotic government, the merchant also possesthes and carries it further: for he takes in both worlds at one view, and directs his operations upon an infinite variety of relative considerations, which it is seldom given to the statesman, or even to the philosopher, to comprehend and estimate. Nothing must elude him; he must foresee the influence of the seasons upon the plenty, the scarcity, and the quality of provisions; upon the departure or return of his ships; the influence of political affairs upon those of commerce; the changes which war or peace must necessarily occasion in the prices and demands for merchandise, in the quantity and choice of provisions, in the state of the cities and ports of the whole world; he must know the consequences that an alliance of the two northern nations may have under the torrid zone; the progress, either towards aggrandizement or decay, of the several trading companies; the effect that the fall of any European power in India may have over Africa and America; the stagnation that may be produced in certain countries by the blocking up of some channels of industry; the reciprocal connection there is between most branches of trade, and the mutual assistances they lend by the temporary injuries they seem to inflict upon each other; he must know the proper time to begin and when to stop in every new undertaking; in a word, he must be acquainted with the art of making all other nations tributary to his own, and of increasing his own fortune by increasing the prosperity of his country; or rather he must know how to enrich himself by extending the general prosperity of mankind. Such are the objects that the profession of the merchant engages him to attend to: and still this is not the whole extent of them.

Commerce is a science which requires the knowledge of men still more than of things. Its difficulties arise less from the multiplicity of its transactions than from the avidity of those who are engaged in them. It is therefore necessary to treat with them
apparently as if we were convinced of their good faith, and at the same time to take as many precautions as if they were destitute of every principle.

Almost all men are honset out of their own profession; but there are few who, in the exercise of it, conform to the rules of scrupulous probity. This vice, which prevails from the highest to the lowest ranks, arises from the great number of malversations introduced by time and excused by custom. Personal interest and general habit conceal the crime and the meanness of such proceedings. I do no more, it is said, than what others do, and thus we accustom ourselves to commit actions which our conscience soon ceases to reproach us with.

These kinds of fraud do not appear so in the eyes of those who indulge themselves in them. As they are common to all professions, do they not reciprocally expiate each other? I take out of the purse of those who deal with me, what those whom I have dealt with have taken too much out of mine. Will it be required, that a merchant, a workman, or any individual whatever, should suffer the tacit and secret apprehensions of all those to whom his daily wants oblige him to address himself, without ever seeking his indemnity from any one of them? Since every thing is compensated by general injustice, all will be as well as if the most rigid justice prevailed.

But can there be any kind of compensation in those rapines of detail exercised by one class of citizens over all the rest, or in those exercised by the latter over the former? Are all professions in equal want of each other? Several of them, which are exposed to frauds ineflently renewed, do they not mostly want opportunities of imposing in their turn? Do not circumstances make an alteration from one day to another in the proportion there is between these impostations? These observations will perhaps appear too trifling; let us therefore, be allowed to dwell upon one more important reflection. Will any wise man think it to be a matter of indifference that iniquity should be
practised with impunity, and almost with universal consent, in all states; that the body of a nation should be corrupt, and to a degree of corruption that knows neither restraint nor bounds; and that there is a material difference between a theft which hath the sanction of custom and is daily repeated, and any other possible act of injustice?

The evil must, however, be thought irremediable, at least with respect to retail trades, since the only system of morality applicable to those who follow them is comprised in these maxims: "Endeavour not to be dishonoured in your profession. If you sell dearer than other people, keep up at least the reputation of selling better merchandize. Gain as much as you can; and especially avoid the having of two prices for your goods. Make your fortune as speedily as you can. If you should not be ill-spoken of, and should not forfeit your character, all is well." Honesty principles might be substituted to these; but it would be in vain. The trifling daily profits, those niggardly savings which constitute essential resources in some professions, lower and degrade the soul, and extinguish in it all sense of dignity, and nothing truly laudable can be either recommended to, or expected from a species of men who have arrived to such a pitch of degradation.

It is not the same thing with those whose speculations embrace all the countries of the earth, whose complicated operations connect the most distant nations, and by whose means the whole universe becomes one single family. These men may have a noble idea of their profession, and it is almost unnecessary to say to most of them, Be honest in your dealings; because dishonesty, while it would be prejudicial to yourselves, would also be injurious to your fellow-citizens, and asperse the character of your nation.

Do not abuse your credit; that is to say, in case of any unexpected misfortune, let your own funds be able to replace those you have obtained from the confidence which your correspondents have reposed in your know-
ledge, your talents, and your probity. In the midst of the subversion of your fortunes, show yourselves similar to those great trees which the thunder hath thrown down, but which still preserve all their appearance of majesty.

You will mistrust yourselves so much the more, as you are almost always the only judges of your own probity.

I know very well that you will be always respected by the multitude as long as you are wealthy; but how will you appear in your own eyes? If you have no regard for your own esteem, heap up gold upon gold, and be happy, if it be possible for a man, subject of morals, to be so.

You must undoubtedly have retained, as you ought, some religious principles. Remember, therefore, that a time will come when your conscience will reproach you for riches dishonestly acquired, and which you must restore, unless, like madmen, you set at defiance a judge who is ready to call you to a rigid account of them.

Serve all nations; but whatever advantage may be offered to you from speculation, give it up, if it should be injurious to your own country.

Let your word be sacred. Be ruined if it be necessary, rather than break it; and show that honour is more precious to you than gold.

Do not embrace too many objects at once. Whatever strength of mind you may have, or however extensive your genius may be, remember that the common day of the labouring man consists of little more than six hours, and that all affairs which may require a longer day, would be necessarily intrusted to your subalterns. A chaos would soon be formed around you, in dissipation of which you might find yourself plunged from the summit of prosperity, where you imagine yourself to be, to the bottom of its misfortune.

I shall never cease to recommend order to you; without it, every thing becomes uncertain. Nothing
book is done, or everything is ill and hastily done. Neglect renders all undertakings equally ruinous.

Although there be perhaps not one government bony enough to induce an individual to assist it with his credit, nevertheless I advise you to run the chance of it: but let not this assistance exceed your own fortune. You may injure yourself for your country, but none but yourself. The love of one's country must be subordinate to the laws of honour and of justice.

Never put yourself under the necessity of displaying your sorrows and your despair to a court, who will coolly allege to you the public necessity, and will make you the shameful offer of a safe conduct. It is in you that the foreigners and the citizens have placed their confidence, and not in the ministry of a nation. It is in your hands that they have deposited their funds, and nothing can screen you from their reproaches and from those of your conscience, if you have one.

You will be exceedingly prudent if you form no other enterprizes, except those which may miscarry, without afflicting your family or disturbing your own repose.

Be neither pusillanimous nor rash. Pusillanimity would keep you in a state of mediocrity; rashness might deprive you in one day of the fruit of several years labour.

There is no comparison to be made between fortune and credit. Fortune without credit is of little consequence. Credit without fortune is unlimited. As long as credit remains, ruin is not completed; but the least shock to your credit may be followed by the worst of catastrophes. I have known an instance in which, at the end of twenty years, it had not yet bee forgotten, that an opulent company had flopped payment for the space of four-and-twenty hours.

The credit of a merchant is recovered with still greater difficulty than the honour of a woman: nothing but a kind of miracle can put a flop to an alarm which spreads itself instantaneously from one hemisphere of the globe to the other.
The merchant ought not to be less jealous of his credit, than the military man of his honour.

If you have any elevation of mind, you will rather choose to serve your fellow-citizens with less advantage, than foreigners at a less risk, with less trouble, and with more profit.

Prefer an honest to a more lucrative speculation.

It hath been said, that the merchant, the banker, and the factor, being citizens of the world by profession, were not citizens of any particular country. Let such injurious discourse no longer be holden against you.

If, when you quit trade, you should only enjoy among your fellow-citizens that degree of consideration granted to considerable riches, you will not have acquired every thing which you might have obtained from commerce.

The contempt of riches is perhaps incompatible with the spirit of commerce: but woe be to those in whom that spirit should exclude all sentiments of honour.

I have raised an altar in my heart to four classes of citizens: to the philosopher, who searches after truth, who enlightens the nations, and who preaches, by his example, virtue to men; to the magistrate, who knows how to maintain an equal balance of justice; to the military man who defends his country; and to the honest merchant, who enriches and honours it. The husbandman, by whom we are fed, will excuse me for having forgotten him.

If the merchant doth not consider himself among this distinguished rank of citizens, he doth not hold himself in sufficient estimation. He forgets, that in his morning's work a few strokes of his pen put the four quarters of the world in motion for their mutual happiness.

Suffer not yourselves to indulge any base jealousy for the prosperity of another. If you thwart his operations without any motive, you are a bad man; and if you happen to discover his operations, and appropriate them to yourself, you will have robbed him.
The influence of gold is as fatal to individuals as to nations. If you do not take care, you will be intoxicated with it. You will be defirous of heaping wealth upon wealth, and you will become either avaricious or prodigal. If you be avaricious, you will be rigid, and the sentiment of commiseration and benevolence will be extinguished within you. If you be prodigal, after having wafted the prime of your life in acquiring riches, you will be reduced to indigence by extravagant expences; and if you should escape this misfortune, you will not escape contempt.

Open sometimes your purse to the unfortunate and industrious man.

If you wish to be honoured during your life, and after your death, consecrate a part of your fortune to some monument of public utility. Woe to your heirs, if they be displeased at this expense.

Remember, that when a man dies who hath nothing but his wealth to boaft of, he is no loss to society.

These maxims, which we have allowed ourselves to recal to the memory of man, have always been, and will always be true. If it should happen that they should appear problematical to some of those persons whose actions they are intended to regulate, the public authority must be blamed for it. The rapacious and servile treasury encourage in all parts private injustice, by the general acts of injustice they are seen to commit. They oppress commerce with the numberless imposts they lay upon it; they degrade the merchant, by the injurious suspicions which they are incessantly throwing out against his probity; they render, in some measure, fraud necessary, by the fatal invention of monopolies.

Monopoly is the exclusive privilege of one citizen, over all others, to buy or to sell. At this definition every sensible man will start, and say: Among citizens, all equals, all serving society, all contributing to its expences, in proportion to their means; how is it possible that one of them should have a right, of which another is legally deprived? What matter, then, is this,
sacred in its nature, that any man whatever cannot acquire it, if he be in want of it; or dispose of it, if it should belong to him?

If any one could pretend to this privilege, it would undoubtedly be the sovereign. Nevertheless, he cannot do it, for he is nothing more than the first of the citizens. The body of the nation may gratify him with it; but then it is only an act of deference, and not the consequence of a prerogative, which would necessarily be tyrannical. If, therefore, the sovereign cannot arrogate it to himself, much less can he confer it upon another. We cannot give away what is not our legitimate property.

But if, contrary to the nature of things, there should exist a people, having some pretensions to liberty, and where the chief hath nevertheless arrogated to himself, or conferred a monopoly on another, what hath been the consequence of this infringement of general rights? Rebellion undoubtedly. No; it ought to have been, although it has not. The reason of this is, that a society is an assembly of men, employed in different functions, having different interests, jealous, pusillanimous, preferring the peaceable enjoyment of what is left them, to the having recourse to arms in the defence of what is taken from them; living by the side of each other, and preying upon each other, without any concurrence of inclination: it is because this unanimity, so useful, if even it should subsist among them, would neither give them the courage nor the strength they are in want of, and consequently neither the hope of conquering, nor the resolution of perishing: it is, because they would see for themselves an imminent danger in a fruitless attempt, while in success they would see only advantages for their descendants, whom they have less regard for than they have for themselves.—Sometimes, however, this circumstance hath happened.—Yes, but it was brought about by the enthusiasm of fanaticism.

But in whatever country monopoly may have taken place, it hath produced nothing but devastation. Ex-
exclusive privileges have ruined the Old and the New World. There is no infant colony in the New Hemisphere which hath not been either weakened or destroyed by it. In our hemisphere, there is no flourishing country the splendour of which it hath not extinguished; no enterprise, however brilliant, which it hath not obscured; no circumstance, more or less flattering, which it hath not turned to the general detriment.

But by what fatality hath all this happened? It was not a fatality, but a necessity. It hath been done, because it was necessary it should be done, and for this reason: because the possessor of a privilege, however powerful he may be, can never have either the credit or the resources of a whole nation; because his monopoly not being able to last for ever, he avails himself of it as fast as he can, sees nothing but the present moment, and every thing which is beyond the term of his exclusive privilege is nothing to him; he chooses rather to be less rich without waiting, than more rich by waiting. By an instinct natural to man, whose enjoyments are founded upon injustice, tyranny, and vexation, he is perpetually in dread of the suppression of a privilege fatal to all. This has happened, because his interest is all to himself, and the interest of the nation is nothing to him: it is because, for a small and momentary advantage, but for a certain one, he scruples not to do a great and permanent mischief: it is because the exclusive privilege, when it comes to the spot where it is to be exercised, introduces along with it the train of all perfections: it is because, by the folly, the vague extent, or the extension of the terms of his grant, and by the power of him who hath either granted or protects it, he becomes master of all, interferes with every thing; he restrains and destroys every thing; he will annihilate a branch of industry useful to all, in order to compel another branch, prejudicial to all but himself; he will pretend to command the soil, as he hath commanded the labours, and the ground must cease producing what is
proper to it, in order to produce only what is suitable to the monopoly, or to become barren; for he will prefer barrenness to a fertility which interferes with him, and scarcity which he does not feel, to plenty which might diminish his profits: it is because, according to the nature of the thing of which he hath got the exclusive trade, if it be an article of primary necessity, he will starve at once a whole country, or leave it quite bare; if it be not an article of primary necessity, he will soon be able, by indirect means, to make it one, and he will still starve, and leave quite bare the country, which he will easily deprive of the means of acquiring this article: it is because it is almost possible for him, who is the sole vender, to make himself, by contrivances as artful and deep as they are atrocious, the only buyer; and that then he will put at pleasure the article he sells at a very exorbitant price, and that which the people are obliged to sell to him at a very low one. Then it is, that the seller, being disgusted of a branch of industry, of a culture and of a labour which doth not bring him the equivalent of his expenses, every thing goes to ruin, and the nation falls into misery.

The term of the exclusive privilege expires, and the possessor of it retires opulent; but the opulence of a single man, raised upon the ruin of the multitude, is a great evil; and, therefore, why hath it not been obviated? Wherefore is it not opposed? From the prejudice, as cruel as it is absurd, that it is a matter of indifference to the state, whether wealth be in the purse of one man, or of another; whether it be confined to one man, or distributed among several. Absurd, because in all cases, and especially in those of great necessity, the sovereign addresses himself to the nation; that is, to a great number of men, who possess scarce anything, and whose ruin is completed by the little that is taken from them; and to a very small number of men, who possess a great deal, and who give a little, or indeed who never give in proportion to what they possess; and whose contribution, if even it were
upon a level with their wealth, would never yield the hundredth part of what might have been obtained, without exaction and without murmur, from a numerous set of people in easy circumstances. Cruel, because, with equal advantages, it would be an act of inhumanity to compel the multitude to want and to suffer.

But is the exclusive privilege gratuitously granted? Sometimes; and it is then a mark of acknowledgment either for great services, or for a long train of mean servilities, or the result of the intrigues of a series of subalterns, bought and sold; one extremity of which series comes from the lowest classes of society, while the other is contiguous to the throne; and that is what is called protection. When sold, it is never for its full value, and that for several reasons. It is impossible that the price paid for it can compensate for the ravages it occasions. Its value cannot yet be known, neither by the chief of the nation, who knows nothing, nor by his representative, who is often as ill informed, beside that he is sometimes a traitor to his master and to his country; nor even by the purchaser himself, who always calculates his acquisition by the rate of its least produce. In a word, these shameful bargains being mostly made in times of crisis, the administration accepts a sum little proportioned to the value of the thing, but advanced in the moment of urgent necessity, or, what is more common, of urgent caprice.

Lastly, let us examine what is the result of these monopolies repeated, and of the disasters which attend them; the ruin of the state, and the contempt of public faith. After these acts of infidelity, which cannot be mentioned without exciting a blush, the nation is plunged into desolation. In the midst of several millions of unfortunate wretches, there arises the proud head of some extortioners, gorged with riches, and insulting over the misery of all. The empire, enervated, totters for some time on the borders of the abyss into which it falls, amongst the acclamations of contempt and ridicule from its neighbours; unless Heaven should
milk up a favour in its favour, whom it always expects; but who doth not always arrive, or who is soon disgust-
ed by the general persecution he experiences from those villains of whom he is the terror.

The obstacles with which the several governments
dog the trade which their subjects either carry on, or
ought to carry on, among themselves, are still much
more multiplied in that trade which is carried on be-
tween one state and the rest. This jealousy of the
powers, which is almost of modern date, might be ta-
ten for a secret conspiracy to ruin each other, without
advantage to any one of them.

Those who govern the people exert the same skill
in guarding against the industry of the nations, as in
preferring themselves from the artifices of the intri-
ging men by whom they are surrounded. Acts of
violence and reciprocal enmity universally prevail in
all parts. Some ignorant, mean, and corrupt men,
have filled Europe, and the whole world, with a mul-
titude of unbearable restraints, which have been more
and more extended. Centinels and obstacles are pla-
ced in every part of the sea and of the land. The tra-
veller enjoys no repose, the merchant no property;
both are equally exposed to all the snares of an infidi-
ous legislation, that gives rise to crimes by its prohibi-
tions, and to penalties by crimes. Men become cul-
patible without knowing it, or without design; are ar-
rested, plundered, and taxed, without having any thing
to reproach themselves with. Such is the state of com-
merce in time of peace. But what shall we say of
commercial wars?

It is natural enough for a people, pent up in the icy
regions of the north, to dig out iron from the bowels
of the earth that refutes them subsistence, and to reap
the harvest of another nation by force of arms: hun-
ger, which is restrained by no laws, cannot violate any,
and seems to plead an excuse for those hostilities. Men
must necessarily live by plunder, when they have no
corn. But when a nation enjoys the privilege of an
extensive commerce, and can supply several other states
from its superfluity, what motive can induce it to declare war against other industrious nations, to obstruct their navigation and their labours; in a word, to forbid them to live, on pain of death? Why does it arrogate to itself an exclusive branch of trade, a right of fishing and of navigation, as if it were a matter of property, and as if the sea were to be divided into acres as well as the land? The motives of such wars are easily discovered: we know that the jealousy of commerce is nothing more than a jealousy of power. But have any people a right to obstruct a work they cannot execute themselves, and to condemn another nation to indolence, because they themselves choose to be entirely given up to it?

How unnatural and contradictory an expression is a war of commerce! Commerce is the source and means of subsistence; war of destruction. Commerce may, possibly, give rise to war, and continue it; but war puts a stop to every branch of commerce. Whatever advantage one nation may derive from another in trade becomes a motive of industry and emulation to both: in war, on the contrary, the injury affects both; for plunder, fire, and sword, can neither improve lands nor enrich mankind. The wars of commerce are so much the more fatal, as by the present superiority of the maritime powers over those of the continent, and of Europe over the three other parts of the world, the conflagration becomes general; and that the divisions of two maritime powers excite the spirit of discord among all their allies, and occasion inactivity even among the neutral powers.

Coasts and seas stained with blood, and covered with dead bodies; the horrors of war extending from pole to pole, between Africa, Asia, and America, as well throughout the sea that separates us from the New World, as throughout the vast extent of the Pacific Ocean: such has been the spectacle exhibited in the two last wars, in which all the powers of Europe have been alternately shaken, or have distinguished themselves by some remarkable exertion. In the mean-
while, the earth was depopulated, and commerce did not supply the losses it had sustained; the lands were exhausted by taxes, and the channels of navigation did not afford the progress of agriculture. The loans of the state previously ruined the fortunes of the citizens by the profits, the forerunners of bankruptcy. Even those powers that were victorious, oppressed by the conquests they had made, and having acquired a greater extent of land than they could keep or cultivate, were involved in the ruin of their enemies. The neutral powers, who were desirous of enriching themselves in peace, in the midst of this commotion, were exposed, and tamely submitted to insults more disgraceful than the defeats of an open war.

The spirit of discord had been transferred from the sovereigns to the people. The citizens of the several states took up arms reciprocally to plunder each other. Nothing was seen but merchantmen changed into privateers: those by whom they were commanded were not urged by necessity to follow this employment; some of them had fortunes, and the others might have received advantageous salaries from all sides. An inordinate passion for plunder was the only stimulus they had to this depravity. When they met with a peaceful merchantman, they were seized with a furious joy, which manifested itself in the most lively transports: they were cruel, and homicides. An enemy more fortunate, stronger, or bolder, might, in their turn, deprive them of their prey, their liberty, and their life. But the aspect of a danger so common did not diminish either their avarice or their rage. This species of frenzy was not new. It had been known in the most distant ages, and had been perpetuated from one century to another. Man, at all times, though not urged by the unconquerable stimulus of hunger, hath sought to devour man. The calamity, however, which we here deplore, had never arisen to that pitch at which we have seen it. The activity of piracy hath increased in proportion as the seas have furnished it.
BOOK with more means to satisfy its avidity and its turbulent spirit.

Will nations, then, never be convinced of the necessity of putting an end to these acts of barbarism? Would not a restraint which should check their progress prove a circumstance of evident utility? Wherefore must the productions of the two worlds be either swallowed up in the abyss of the ocean, together with the vessels which convey them; or become the prey of the vices and debauchery of a few vagabonds, destitute of morals and of principles? Will this infatuation continue much longer, or will the administrators of empires at length open their eyes to the light? Should they one day be made acquainted with their true interests, with the essential interests of the societies at the head of which they are placed, they will not limit their policy to the clearing of the seas from pirates, but they will extend it so far, as to leave a free intercourse to the connections subsisting between their respective subjects, during those murderous and destructive hostilities which frequently harass and ravage the globe.

They are fortunately past those deplorable times, when the nations fought for their mutual annihilation. The troubles which at present divide Europe have not so fatal an aim. It is seldom that any other object is proposed, than the reparation of some injustice, or the maintenance of a certain equilibrium between empires. The belligerent powers will undoubtedly endeavour to annoy and to weaken each other as much as possible: but if none of them could do more mischief than they suffered, would it not be generally useful to put a stop to these calamities? This is what constantly happens, when war suspends the operations of commerce.

Then one state rejects the productions and the industry of the adverse state, which, in its turn, rejects her productions and her industry. This is, on both sides, a diminution of labour, of profit, and of enjoy-
ments. The interference of neutral powers, in those circumstances, is not so favourable as we are perhaps accustomed to consider it. Befide that their agency must necessarily be very expensive, they endeavour to raise themselves upon the ruin of those whom they seem to serve. Whatever their soil and their manufactures can furnish is substituted, as much as possible, to the productions of the soil and manufactures of the armed powers, which frequently do not recover at the peace what the hostilities had made them lose. It will therefore be always confident with the interests of the nations which make war against each other, to continue, without restraint, the exchanges they carried on before their dissensions.

All truths hold by each other. Let this truth, the importance of which we have established, direct the conduct of governments; and we shall soon see those innumerable barriers, which, even in times of the most profound tranquillity, separate the nations, whatever may be the affinities which nature or chance hath created between them, will exist no more.

The most sanguinary disputes were formerly no more than transient explosions, after which, each people repaid upon their arms, either defeated or triumphant. Peace, at that time, was peace; but, at present, it is nothing more than a tacit war. Every state rejects foreign productions, either by prohibitions, or by restraints often equivalent to prohibitions. Every state refuses its own, upon such equitable terms which might make them be fought after, or extend their consumption. The desire of mutually annoying each other is extended from one pole to the other. In vain hath nature regulated, that, under her wise laws, every country should be opulent, powerful, and happy, from the wealth, the power, and the felicity of the rest. They have, unanimously as it were, disturbed this plan of universal benevolence, to the detriment of them all. Their ambition hath led them to insulate themselves; and this solitary situation hath made them defirous of an exclusive prosperity. Evil for evil hath then been
Artifices have been opposed to artifices, proscriptions to proscriptions, and fraud to fraud. Nations have become enervated, in attempting to enervate the rival powers; and it was impossible that it should be otherwise. The connections of commerce are all very close. One of its branches cannot experience any opposition, without the others being sensible of it. Commerce connects people and fortunes together, and establishes the intercourse of exchanges. It is one entire whole, the several parts of which attract, support, and balance each other. It resembles the human body, all the parts of which are affected, when one of them doth not fulfil the functions that were designed to it.

Would you wish to put an end to the calamities which ill-contrived plans have brought upon the whole earth, you must pull down the fatal walls with which they have encompassed themselves. You must restore that happy fraternity which constituted the delight of the first ages. Let the people, in whatever country fate may have placed them, to whatever government they may be subject, whatever religion they may profess, communicate as freely with each other, as the inhabitants of a hamlet with those of a neighbouring one; with those of the most contiguous town, and with all those of the same empire; that is to say, free from duties, formalities, or predilections.

Then, but not before, the earth will be filled with productions, and those of an exquisite quality. The frenzy of impositions and prohibitions hath reduced each state to cultivate commodities, which its soil and its climate rejected, and which were never either of good quality, or plentiful. The labours will be directed to another channel. When the earth can satisfy its wants in a more pleasant way, and at a cheaper rate, it will turn all its activity to objects for which nature had designed it; and which being such as they should be, will find an advantageous mart in those places even where an enlightened system of economy shall have determined the people to reject them.
Then, but not before, all nations will attain to that degree of prosperity, to which they are allowed to aspire: they will enjoy both their own riches, and the riches of other nations. The people who had till then had some success in trade, have hitherto imagined that their neighbours could only make their own trade flourish at the expense of theirs. This presumption had made them behold with an anxious and suspicious eye the efforts that were made to improve their situation; and had excited them to interrupt, by the manoeuvres of an active and unjust cupidity, labours the consequences of which they dreaded. They will alter their conduct, when they shall have understood, that the natural and moral order of things is subverted by the present state of them; that the idleness of one country is hurtful to all the rest, either because it condemns them to more labour, or because it deprives them of some enjoyments; that foreign industry, far from confining theirs, will extend it; that the more benefits shall be multiplied around them, the more easy it will be for them to extend their conveniences and their exchanges; that their harvests and their manufactures must necessarily fall to ruin, if the marts, and their returns, are to be deficient; that states, as well as individuals, have a visible interest, habitually, to sell at the highest price possible, and to purchase at the highest price possible; and that this double advantage can be found only in the greatest possible competition, and in the greatest affluence, between the sellers and the purchasers. This is the interest of every government, and it is therefore the interest of all of them.

Let it not be said, that, in the system of a general and unlimited liberty, some people would acquire a too determined ascendant over the rest. The new plans will not deprive any state of its soil or of its genius. Whatever advantages each may have had in times of prohibition, it will prefer, under the guidance of better principles. Its utility will even in-

A a iij
creaſe considerably, because its neighbours, enjoying
more wealth, will more and more extend its conſump-
tions.

If there existed a country which might be allowed
to have some diſlike to the abolition of the prohibi-
tive government, it undoubtedly would be that which improvident nature hath condemned to an eternal po-
verty. Accustomed to reſect, by fumptuary laws, the
delights of more fortunate countries, they might be apprehenfive that a communication entirely free, with
them, might subvert their maxims, corrupt their mo-
rals, and pave the way for their ruin. These alarms
would be ill-founded. Except, perhaps, a few mo-
ments of illusion, every nation would regulate their
wants by their abilities.

Happy, then, and infinitely happy, will be that pow-
er, which ſhall be the firſt to difencumber itſelf of the
reſtraints, the taxes, and the prohibitions, which in
all parts oppreſs and ſtop the progres of commerce.
Attracted by the liberty, the facility, the ſafety, and
the multiplicity of exchanges; the ſhips, the produc-
tions, the commodities, and the merchants of all coun-
tries, will crowd into their ports. The cauſes of fo
ſplendid a proſperity will ſoon be understood; and the
nations, renouncing their ancient erros and their de-
ſtructive prejudices, will haften to adopt principles fo
fertile in favouable events. The revolution will be-
come general. Clouds will be dispelled in all parts;
a ſereene sky will ſhine over the face of the whole globe,
and nature will resume the reins of the world. Then,
or never, will that univerſal peace arise, which a war-
like but humane monarch did not think to be a chi-
merical idea. If fo deſirable and fo little expected a
benefit ſhould not ſissue from this new order of things,
from this great unfolding of reaſon, at leaſt the gen-
eral felicity of men will be eſtablifhed upon a more fo-
lid baſis.

Commerce, which naturally arises from agriculture,
returns to it by its bent and by its circulation. Thus
it is that the rivers return to the sea, which has produced them, by the exhalations of its waters into vapours, and by the fall of those vapours into waters. The flow of gold brought by the circulation and consumption of the fruits of the earth, returns, at length, into the fields, there to produce all the necessaries of life and the materials of commerce. If the lands be not cultivated, all commerce is precarious; because it is deprived of its original supplies, which are the productions of nature. Nations that are only maritime, or commercial, enjoy, it is true, the fruits of commerce; but the tree of it belongs to those people who cultivate it. Agriculture is therefore the first and real opulence of a state.

These benefits were not enjoyed in the infancy of the world. The first inhabitants of the globe relied only upon chance, and upon their dexterity, for procuring to themselves an uncertain subsistence. They wandered from one region to another. Incessantly absorbed in the ideas of want or fear, they reciprocally fled from, or destroyed, each other. The earth was stirred up, and the miseries of a vagabond life were alleviated. In proportion as agriculture was extended, mankind were multiplied with the means of subsistence. Nations, and even great ones, were formed. Some of them disdained the source of their prosperity, and were punished for that senfeless pride by invasions. Upon the ruins of vast monarchies, funk in lethargy, by the neglect of useful labours, new states arose; which having, in their turn, contracted the habit of trusting the care of their subsistence to their slaves, were not able to refit the nations stimulated either by indigence or barbarism.

Such was the fate of Rome. Proud of the spoils of the universe, she held in contempt the rural occupations of her founders, and of her most illustrious citizens. Her country places were filled with delightful retreats. She subsisted only upon foreign contributions. The people, corrupted by perpetual profusions, abandoned the labours of tillage. All the use...
ful or honourable places were purchased with abundant distributions of corn. Hunger gave the law in the comitia. All the orders of the republic were no longer governed by any thing but hunger and amuse-
ment. Then the empire fell to ruin, destroyed rather by its internal vices, than by the barbarians who tore it to pieces.

The contempt which the Romans had for agriculture, in the intoxication of those conquests which had given them the whole world without their cultivating it, was perpetuated. It was adopted by those savage hordes, who, destroying by the sword, a power which was established by it, left to the vassals the clearing of the lands, of which they referred to themselves the fruits and the property. Even in the age subsequent to the discovery of the East and West Indies, this truth was unattended to; whether in Europe the people were too much engaged in wars of ambition or religion to consider it; or whether the conquests made by Portugal and Spain beyond the seas, having brought us treasures without labour, we contented ourselves with enjoying them by encouraging luxury and the arts, before any method had been thought of to secure these riches.

But the time came, when plunder ceased, having no object on which it could be exercised. When the conquered lands in the New World, after having been much contested for, were divided, it became necessary to cultivate them, and to support the colonists who settled there. As these were natives of Europe, they cultivated for that country such productions as it did not furnish, and required in return such provisions as custom had made natural to them. In proportion as the colonies were peopled, and as the number of sailors and manufacturers increased with the increase of productions, the lands must necessarily furnish a greater quantity of subsistence for the increase of population, and an augmentation of indigenous commodities, for foreign articles of exchange and consumption. The laborious employment of navigation, and the spoiling
of provisions in the transport, causing a greater loss of materials and produce, it became necessary to cultivate the earth with the greatest care and affluvity, in order to render it more fruitful. The consumption of American commodities, far from lessening that of European productions, served only to increase and extend it upon all the seas, in all the ports, and in all the cities where commerce and industry prevailed. Thus the people who were the most commercial necessarily became, at the same time, the greatest promoters of agriculture.

England first conceived the idea of this new system. She established and encouraged it by honours and premiums proposed to the planters. A medal was struck, and presented to the duke of Bedford, with the following inscription: For having planted Oak. Triptolemus and Ceres were adored in antiquity only from similar motives; and yet temples and altars are still erected to indolent monks. The God of nature will not suffer that mankind should perish. He hath implanted in all noble and generous minds, in the hearts of all people and of enlightened monarchs, this idea, that labour is the first duty of man, and that the most important of all labours is that of cultivating the land. The reward that attends agriculture, the satisfying of our wants, is the best encomium that can be made of it. If I had a subject who could produce two blades of corn instead of one, said a monarch, I should prefer him to all the men of political genius in the state. How much is it to be lamented, that such a king and such an opinion are merely the fiction of Swift's brain? But a nation that can produce such writers must necessarily confirm the truth of this sublime idea; and accordingly we find that England doubled the produce of its cultivation.

Europe had this great example for more than half a century under her eyes, without its making a sufficient impression upon her to induce her to follow it. The French, who, under the administration of three cardinals, had scarcely been allowed to turn their thoughts to
public affairs, ventured at length, in 1750, to write on subjects of importance and general utility. The undertaking of An Universal Dictionary of Arts and Sciences brought every great object to view, and exercised the thoughts of every man of genius and of knowledge. Montesquieu wrote The Spirit of Laws, and the boundaries of genius were extended. Natural History was written by a French Pliny, who surpassed Greece and Rome in the knowledge and description of nature. This history, bold and sublime as its subject, warmed the imagination of every reader, and powerfully excited them to such inquiries as a nation cannot relinquish without returning into a state of barbarism. It was then that a great number of subjects became sensible of the real wants of their country. Government itself seemed to perceive that all kinds of riches originated from the earth. They granted some encouragement to agriculture, but without having the courage to remove the obstacles which prevented its improvement.

The French husbandman doth not yet enjoy the happiness of being taxed only in proportion to his abilities. Arbitrary imposts still molest and ruin him. Jealous or rapacious neighbours have it always in their power to exercise either their cupidity or their revenge against him. A barbarous collector, a haughty lord, an arrogant and authorised monopolist, a man raised to fortune, and who is a greater despot than all the rest, may humiliate, beat, and plunder him; they may deprive him, in a word, of all the rights of mankind, of property, of safety, and of liberty. Degraded by this kind of abject state, his clothes, his manners, his language, become an object of derision for all the other classes of society; and authority often gives a sanction by its conduct to this excess of extravagance.

I have heard that stupid and ferocious statesman, and the indignation which he excited in me almost prompts me to name him, and to give up his memory to the execration of all honest and sensible men; I have heard him say, that the labours of the field were
inhard, that, if the cultivator were allowed to acquire some ease in his circumstances, he would forfake his plough, and leave the lands unplied. His advice was therefore to perpetuate labour by misery, and to condemn to eternal indigence the man, without the sweat of whose brow he must have been starved to death. He ordered that the oxen should be fattened, while he curtailed the subsistence of the husbandman. He governed a province, and yet he did not conceive that it was the impossibility of acquiring a small degree of ease, and not the danger of fatigue, which disfigured the husbandman of his condition. He did not know that state into which men are anxious to enter, is that which they hope to quit by the acquisition of riches; and that however hard may be the daily labours of agriculture, it will nevertheless find more votaries in proportion as the reward of its labours shall be more certain and more abundant. He had not noticed, that in the towns there were a multitude of employments, which, although they shortened the lives of those who were engaged in them, yet this did not deter others from following them. He did not know, that, in some countries of vast extent, there were miners who voluntarily devoted themselves to destruction in the bowels of the earth, and that even before they were thirty years of age, upon condition of reaping from this sacrifice clothes and provisions for their wives and children. It had never suggested itself to him, that, in all professions, that sort of ease in circumstances, which admits of calling in assistance, alleviates the fatigue of them; and that inhumanly to exclude the peasant from the class of proprietors, was to put a stop to the progress of the first of the arts, which could not become flourishing, as long as the person who tilled the earth was obliged to till it for another. Thiselman had never compared with his own inmenfe vineyards that small portion of vines belonging to his vine-dresser, nor known the difference there is between the soil cultivated for one's self and that which is cultivated for others.
Fortunately for France, all the agents of government have not had such destructive prejudices; and more fortunately still, the obstacles which impeded the improvement of the lands and of agriculture in that country have been often overcome. Germany, and after that the northern climates, have been attracted by the taste of the age, which sensible men had turned towards these great objects. These vast regions have at length understood that the most extensive countries were of no value, if they were not rendered useful by a perseverance in labour; that the clearing of a soil extended it; and that territories the least favoured by nature might become fertile by prudent and skilful expenditures bestowed upon them. A multiplicity and a variety of productions have been the reward of so judicious a proceeding. Nations, who have been in want of the necessaries of life, have been enabled to furnish provisions even to the southern parts of Europe.

But how is it possible that men, situated upon a rich a territory, should have wanted foreign assistance to subsist? The great excellence of the territory hath been perhaps the true reason of this. In the countries which were not so favourably treated by nature, it hath been necessary that the cultivator should have considerable funds, that he should condemn himself to assiduous watchings, in order to acquire from the bottom of an ungrateful or rebellious soil harvests moderately plentiful. Under a more fortunate sky, it was only necessary for him, as it were, to scratch the earth; and this advantage hath plunged him into misery and indolence. The climate hath still increased his misfortunes, which have been completed by religious institutions.

The Sabbath, considering it even only under a political point of view, is an admirable institution. It was proper to give a flated day of rest to mankind, that they might have time to recover themselves, to lift up their eyes to heaven, to enjoy life with reflection, to meditate upon past events, to reason upon pre-
sent transactions, and in some measure to form plans for the future. But by multiplying those days of inactivity, hath not that which was established for the advantage of individuals and of societies, been converted into a calamity for them? Would not a soil, which should be ploughed three hundred days in the year by strong men and vigorous animals, yield double the produce of that which should only be worked one hundred and fifty days in the year? What strange infatuation! Torrents of blood have been shed an infinite number of times to prevent the dismembering of a territory, or to increase its extent; and yet the powers intruded with the maintenance and happiness of empires, have patiently suffered that a priest, sometimes even a foreign priest, should invade successively one third of this territory, by the proportional diminution of labour, which alone could fertilize it. This inconceivable disorder hath ceased in several states, but it continues in the south of Europe. This is one of the greatest obstacles to the increase of its subsistence and of its population. The importance of agriculture begins, however, to be perceived: even Spain hath excited herself; and for want of inhabitants, who would employ themselves in the labours of the field, she hath at last invited foreigners to till her uncultivated provinces.

Notwithstanding this almost universal emulation, it must be acknowledged that agriculture hath not made the same progress as the other arts. Since the revival of letters, the genius of men hath measured the earth, calculated the motion of the stars, and weighed the air. It hath penetrated through the darkness which concealed from it the natural and moral system of the world. By investigating nature, it hath discovered an infinite number of secrets, with which all the sciences have enriched themselves. Its empire hath extended itself over a multitude of objects necessary to the happiness of mankind. In this ferment of men's minds, experimental philosophy, which had but very imperfectly enlightened ancient philosophy, hath too seldom
turned its observations towards the important part of the vegetable system. The different qualities of the soil, the number of which is so various, are still unknown, as well as the kind of soil which is the best adapted to every production; the quantity and the quality of the seeds which it is proper to sow in them; the seasons most propitious for ploughing, sowing, and reaping them; and the species of manure fit to increase their fertility. No better information is procured concerning the most advantageous manner of multiplying flocks, of breeding and of feeding them, and of improving their fleece. No greater light hath been thrown upon the cultivation of trees. We have scarce any but imperfect notions concerning all these articles of primary necessity, such as have been transmitted to us by a blind routine, or by practice followed with little reflection. Europe would be still less advanced in this knowledge, were it not for the observations of a few English writers, who have succeeded in eradicating some prejudices, and in introducing several excellent methods. This zeal for the first of arts hath been communicated to the cultivators of their nation. Fairchild, one of them, hath carried his enthusiasm so far, as to order that the dignity of his profession should be annually celebrated by a public discourse. His will was complied with for the first time in 1760, in St. Leonard's church in London; and this useful ceremony hath never been omitted since that period.

It is a fact somewhat remarkable, though it might naturally be expected, that men should have returned to the exercise of agriculture, the first of the arts, only after they had successively tried the rest. It is the common progress of the human mind not to regain the right path till after it hath exhausted itself in pursuing false tracks. It is always advancing; and as it relinquished agriculture to pursue commerce and the enjoyments of luxury, it soon traversed over the different arts of life, and returned at last to agriculture, which is the source and foundation of all the rest, and to which it devoted its whole attention, from the same
motives of interest that had made it quit it before. B o o k x i x.

Thus the eager and inquisitive man, who voluntarily banishes himself from his own country in his youth, wearied with his constant excursions, returns at last to live and die in his native land.

Every thing, indeed, depends upon, and arises from, the cultivation of land. It forms the internal strength of states, and occasions riches to circulate into them from without. Every power which comes from any other source is artificial and precarious, either considered in a natural or moral light. Industry and commerce, which do not directly affect the agriculture of a country, are in the power of foreign nations, who may either dispute these advantages through competition, or deprive the country of them through envy. This may be effected either by establishing the same branch of industry among themselves, or by suppressing the exportation of their own unwrought materials, or the exportation of those materials when manufactured. But a country well cultivated occasions an increase of population, and riches are the natural consequence of that increase. This is not the teeth which the dragon sows to bring forth soldiers to destroy each other; it is the milk of Juno, which peoples the heavens with an innumerable multitude of stars.

The government, therefore, should rather be attentive to the support of the country places than of great cities. The first may be considered as parents and sufferers always fruitful, the others only as daughters which are often ungrateful and barren. The cities can scarce subsist but from the superfluous part of the population and produce of the countries. Even the fortified places and ports of trade, which seem to be connected with the whole world by their ships, which diffuse more riches than they possess, do not, however, attract all the treasures they dispense, but by means of the produce of the countries that surround them. The tree must, therefore, be watered at its root. The cities will only be flourishing in proportion as the fields are fruitful.
But this fertility depends still less upon the soil than upon the inhabitants. Some countries, though situated under a climate the most favourable to agriculture, produce less than others inferior to them in every respect, because the efforts of nature are impeded in a thousand ways by the form of their government. In all parts where the people are attached to the country by property, by the security of their funds and revenues, the lands will flourish; in all parts where privileges are not confined to the cities, and labour to the countries, every proprietor will be fond of the inheritance of his ancestors, will increase and embellish it by assiduous cultivation, and his children will be multiplied in proportion to his means, and these be increased in proportion to his children.

It is, therefore, the interest of government to favour the husbandman, in preference to all the indolent classes of society. Nobility is but an odious distinction, when it is not founded upon services of real and evident utility to the state; such as the defence of the nation against the encroachments of conquest, and against the enterprises of despotism. The nobles furnish only a precarious, and oftentimes fatal assistance; when, after having led an effeminate and licentious life in the cities, they can only afford a weak defence for their country upon her fleets and in her armies, and afterwards return to court, to solicit, as a reward for their favours, places and honours, which are revolting and burdensome to the nation. The clergy are a set of men useless, at least, to the earth, even when they are employed in prayer. But when, with scandalous morals, they preach a doctrine which is rendered doubly incredible and impracticable from their ignorance and from their example; when, after having disgraced, discredited, and overturned religion, by a variety of abuses, of sophisms, of injustices and usurpations, they wish to support it by persecution; then this privileged, indolent, and turbulent class of men, become the most dreadful enemies of the state and of the nation. The only good and respectable part of them that remains,
is that portion of the clergy who are most despised and most burdened with duty, and who, being situated among the lower classes of people in the country, labour, edify, advife, comfort, and relieve a multitude of unhappy men.

The husbandmen deserve to be preferred by government even to the manufacturers, and the professors of either the mechanical or liberal arts. To encourage and to protect the arts of luxury, and at the same time neglect the cultivation of the land, that source of industry to which they owe their existence and support, is to forget the order of the several relations between nature and society. To favour the arts, and to neglect agriculture, is the same thing as to remove the basis of a pyramid, in order to finish the top. The mechanical arts engage a sufficient number of hands by the allurement of the riches they procure, by the comforts they supply the workmen with, by the ease, pleasures, and conveniences, that arise in cities where the several branches of industry unite. It is the life of the husbandman that flanks in need of encouragement for the hard labours it is exposed to, and of indemnification for the losses and vexations it sustains. The husbandman is placed at a distance from every object that can either excite his ambition or gratify his curiosity. He lives in a state of separation from the distinctions and pleasures of society. He cannot give his children a polite education, without sending them at a distance from him, nor place them in such a situation as may enable them to distinguish and advance themselves by the fortune they may acquire. He does not enjoy the sacrifices he makes for them, while they are educated at a distance from him. In a word, he undergoes all the fatigues that are incident to man, without enjoying his pleasures, unless supported by the paternal care of government. Every thing is burdensome and humiliating to him, even the taxes, the very name of which sometimes makes his condition more wretched than any other.

Men are naturally attached to the liberal arts by
the bent of their talents, which makes this attachment
grow up into a kind of passion; and likewise by the
consideration they reflect on those who distinguish
themselves in the pursuit of them. It is not possible
to admire the works of genius, without esteeming and
carefully the persons endowed with that valuable gift
of nature. But the man devoted to the labours of
husbandry, if he cannot enjoy in quiet what he pos-
seesses, and what he gathers; if he be incapable of im-
proving the benefits of his condition, because the
fruits of it are taken from him; if the military ser-
vice, if vassalage and taxes are to deprive him of his
child, his cattle, and his corn, nothing remains for him
but to imprecate both the sky and the land that tor-
ment him, and to abandon his fields and his country.

A wise government cannot, therefore, refuse to pay
its principal attention to agriculture, without endan-
gering its very existence: the most ready and effectual
means of assisting it, is to favour the multiplication of
every kind of production, by the most free and gene-
ral circulation.

An unrestrained liberty in the exchange of commo-
dities renders a people at the same time commercial
and attentive to agriculture; it extends the views of
the farmer towards trade, and those of the merchant
towards cultivation. It connects them to each other
by such relations as are regular and constant. All
men belong equally to the villages and to the cities,
and there is a reciprocal communication maintained
between the provinces. The circulation of commodi-
ties brings on in reality the golden age, in which
streams of milk and honey are said to have flowed
through the plains. All the lands are cultivated; the
meadows are favourable to tillage by the cattle they
feed; the growth of corn promotes that of vines, by
furnishing a constant and certain subsistence to him
who neither sows nor reaps, but plants, prunes, and
gathers.

Let us now consider the effects of a contrary system,
and attempt to regulate agriculture, and the circula-
tion of its produce, by particular laws; and let us ob-
serve what calamities will ensue. Power will not only
be destrous of observing and being informed of every
action, but will even want to assume every important
act to itself; in consequence of which nothing will suc-
cceed. Men will be led like their cattle, or transported
like their corn; they will be collected and dispersed
at the will of a tyrant, to be slaughtered in war, or pe-
riph upon fleets, or in different colonies. That which
constitutes the life of a state will become its destruc-
tion. Neither the lands nor the people will prosper,
and the states will tend quickly to their dissolution;
that is, to that separation which is always preceded by
the massacre of the people, as well as their tyrants.
What will then become of manufactures?
Agriculture gives birth to the arts, when it is car-
ad to that degree of plenty, which gives men leisure
to invent, and procure themselves the conveniences
of life; and when it has occasioned a population suf-
iciently numerous to be employed in other labours
beside those of the land, then a people must necces-
arily become either soldiers, navigators, or manufactu-
ners. As soon as war has changed the rude and savage
manners of a laborious people; as soon as it has near-
ly circumscribed the extent of their empire; those
men who were before engaged in the exercise of arms
must then apply themselves to the management of the
ear, the ropes, the scissors, or the shuttle; in a word,
of all the instruments of commerce and industry; for
the land, which supported such a number of men with-
out the affluence of their own labour, does not any
more fland in need of it. As the arts ever have a
country of their own, their peculiar place of refuge,
where they are carried on and flourish in tranquillity,
it is easier to repair thither in search of them, than to
wait at home till they shall have grown up, and ad-
vanced with the tardy progression of ages, and the fa-
vour of chance, which presides over the discoveries of
genius. Thus every nation of Europe that has had
any industry, has borrowed the most considerable share
BOOK of the arts from Asia. There invention seems to have been coëval with mankind.

The beauty and fertility of those climates have always produced a most numerous race of people, as well as abundance of fruits of all kinds. There laws and arts, the offspring of genius and tranquillity, have arisen from the stability of empires; and luxury, the source of every enjoyment that attends industry, has sprung out of the richness of the soil. India, China, Persia, and Egypt, were in possession not only of all the treasures of nature, but also of the most brilliant inventions of art. War in these countries hath often destroyed every monument of genius, but they rise again out of their own ruins, as well as mankind. Not unlike those laborious swarms we see perish in their hives by the wintry blast of the north, and which re-produce themselves in spring, retaining still the same love of toil and order; there are certain Asiatic nations which have still preferred the arts of luxury with the materials that supply them, notwithstanding the invasions and conquests of the Tartars.

It was in a country successively subdued by the Scythians, Romans, and Saracens, that the nations of Europe, which not even Christianity nor time could civilize, recovered the arts and sciences, without endeavouring to discover them. The Crusades exhausted the fanatic zeal of those who engaged in them, and changed their barbarous manners at Constantinople. It was by journeying to visit the tomb of their Saviour, who was born in a manger, and died on a cross, that they acquired a taste for magnificence, pomp, and wealth. By them the Asiatic grandeur was introduced into the courts of Europe. Italy, the seat from whence religion spread her empire over other countries, was the first to adopt a species of industry that was of benefit to her temples, the ceremonies of her worship, and those processions which serve to keep up devotion by means of the fountains, when once it has engaged the heart. Christian Rome, after having borrowed her rites from the eastern nations, was still to
draw from thence the wealth by which they are supported.

Venice, whose galleys were ranged under the banner of liberty, could not fail of being industrious. The people of Italy established manufactures, and were a long time in possession of all the arts, even when the conquest of the East and West Indies had caused the treasures of the whole world to circulate in Europe. Flanders derived her manual arts from Italy; England obtained those she established from Flanders; and France borrowed the general industry of all countries. Of the English she purchased her stocking-frames, which work ten times as fast as the needle. The number of hands unoccupied from the introduction of the loom, were employed in making of lace, which was taken from the Flemings. Paris surpassed Persia in her carpets, and Flanders in her tapestry, in the elegance of her patterns, and the beauty of her dyes; and excelled Venice in the transparency and size of her mirrors. France learned to dispense with part of the silks she received from Italy, and with English broad cloths. Germany, together with her iron and copper mines, has always preferred the superiority she had acquired in melting, tempering, and working up those metals. But the art of giving the polish and fashion to every article that can be concerned in the ornaments of luxury and the conveniencies of life, seems to belong peculiarly to the French; whether it be that, from the vanity of pleasing others, they find the means of succeeding by all the outward appearances of brilliant show; or that in reality grace and ease are the constant attendants of a people naturally lively and gay, and who by instinct are in possession of taste.

Every people given to agriculture ought to have arts to employ their materials, and should multiply their productions to maintain their artists. Were they acquainted only with the labours of the field, their industry must be confined in its cause, its means, and its effects. Having but few wants and desires, they
BOOK would exert themselves but little, employ fewer hands, and work less time. Their cultivation would neither be extended nor improved. Should such a people be possessed of more arts than materials, they must be indebted to strangers, who would ruin their manufactures, by sinking the price of their articles of luxury, and raising the value of their subsistence. But when a people, engaged in agriculture, join industry to property, the culture of their produce to the art of working it up, they have then within themselves every thing necessary for their existence and preservation, every source of greatness and prosperity. Such a people is endued with a power of accomplishing every thing they wish, and stimulated with a desire of acquiring every thing that is possible.

Nothing is more favourable to liberty than the arts; it may be said to be their element, and that they are, in their nature, citizens of the world. An able artist may work in every country, because he works for the world in general. Genius and abilities every where avoid slavery, while soldiers find it in all parts. When, through the want of toleration in the clergy, the Protestants were driven out of France, they opened to themselves a refuge in every civilized state in Europe; but priests, banished from their own country, have found no asylum anywhere; not even in Italy, the parent of monachism and intoleration.

The arts multiply the means of acquiring riches, and contribute, by a greater distribution of wealth, to a more equitable repartition of property. Thus is prevented that excessive inequality among men, the unhappy consequence of oppression, tyranny, an lethargic state of a whole people.

How many objects of instruction and admiration doth not the most enlightened man find in manufactures and workshops! To study the productions of nature is undoubtedly beautiful; but is it not more interesting to know the different means made use of by the arts, either to alleviate the misfortunes, or to increase the enjoyments of life? Should we be in
search of genius, let us go into the workshops, and there we shall find it under a thousand different forms. If one man alone had been the inventor of the manufacture for figured stuffs, he would have displayed more intelligence than Leibnitz or Newton: and I may venture to say, that there is no problem in the mathematical principles of the latter, more difficult to be solved, than that of weaving a thread by the assistance of a machine. Is it not a shameful thing to see the objects which surround us, viewing themselves in a glass, while they are unacquainted with the manner in which glass is melted; or clothing themselves in velvet to keep out the cold, while they know not how it is manufactured? Let men who are well informed, go and assist with their knowledge the wretched artisan, condemned blindly to follow the routine he has been used to, and they may be certain of being indemnified by the secrets he will impart to them. The torch of industry serves to enlighten at once a vast horizon. No art is single: the greater part of them have their forms, modes, instruments, and elements, that are peculiar to them. The mechanics themselves have contributed prodigiously to extend the study of mathematics. Every branch of the genealogical tree of science has unfolded itself with the progress of the arts, as well liberal as manual. Mines, mills, the manufacture and dying of cloth, have enlarged the sphere of philosophy and natural history. Luxury has given rise to the art of enjoyment, which is entirely dependent on the liberal arts. As soon as architecture admits of ornaments without, it brings with it decorations for the inside of our houses; while sculpture and painting are at the same time employed in the embellishment and adorning of the edifice. The art of design is applied to our dresses and furniture. The pencil, ever fertile in new designs, is varying without end its sketches and shades on our stuffs and our porcelain. The powers of genius are exerted in composing at leisure master-pieces of poetry and eloquence, or those happy systems of policy and philosophy, which
to the people their natural rights, and to love

reigns all their glory, which consists in reigning over the heart and the mind, over the opinion and will of their subjects, by the means of reason and equity.

Then it is that the arts produce that spirit of society which constitutes the happiness of civil life; which gives relaxation to the more serious occupations, by entertainments, shows, concerts, conversations, in short, by every species of agreeable amusement. Ease gives to every virtuous enjoyment an air of liberty, which connects and mingles the several ranks of men. Employment adds a value or a charm to the pleasures that are its recompense. Every citizen depending upon the produce of his industry for subsistence, has leisure for all the agreeable or toilsome occupations of life, as well as that repose of mind which leads on to the sweets of sleep. Many, indeed, fall victims to avarice, but still less than to war or superstition, the continual scourges of an idle people.

After the cultivation of the land, the encouragement of the arts and sciences is the next object that deserves the attention of man. At present, both serve to constitute the strength of civilized governments. If the arts have tended to weaken mankind, then the weaker people must have prevailed over the strong; for the balance of Europe is in the hands of those nations which are in possession of the arts.

Since manufactures have prevailed in Europe, the human heart, as well as the mind, have changed their bent and disposition. The desire of wealth has arisen in all parts from the love of pleasure. We no longer see any people satisfied with being poor because poverty is no longer the bulwark of liberty. We are obliged, indeed, to confess, that the arts in this world supply the place of virtues. Industry may give birth to vices; but it banishes, however, those of idleness, which are infinitely more dangerous. As information gradually diffuses every species of fanaticism, while men are employed in the gratifications of luxury, they do not destroy one another through superstition. At least,
human blood is never spilt without some appearance of interest; and war, probably, destroys only those violent and turbulent men, who in every state are born to be enemies to, and disturbers of all order, without any other talent, any other propensity, than that of doing mischief. The arts restrain that spirit of diffusion, by subjecting man to stated and daily employments. They flow on every rank of life the means and the hopes of enjoyment, and give even the meanest a kind of estimation and importance, by the advantage that results from them. A workman at forty has been of more real value to the state than a whole family of vassals who were employed in tillage under the old feudal system. An opulent manufacture brings more benefit into a village, than twenty cahiles of ancient barons, whether hunters or warriors, ever conferred on their province.

If it be a fact, that in the present state of things, the people who are the most industrious ought to be the most happy and the most powerful, either because in wars that are unavoidable they furnish of themselves, or purchase by their wealth, more soldiers, more ammunition, more forces, both for sea or land service; or that having a greater interest in maintaining peace, they avoid contests, or terminate them by negotiation; or that, in case of a defeat, they the more readily repair their losses by the effect of labour; or that they are blessed with a milder and more enlightened government, notwithstanding the means of corruption and slavery that slavery is supplied with, by the effeminacy which luxury produces; in a word, if the arts really civilize nations, a state ought to neglect no opportunity of making manufactures flourish.

These opportunities depend on the climate, which, as Polybius says, forms the character, complexion, and manners of nations. The most temperate climate must necessarily be the most favourable to that kind of industry which requires less exertion. If the climate be too hot, it is inconsistent with the establishment of manufactures, which require the concurrence of several
persons together to carry on the same work; and it excludes all those arts which employ furnaces or strong lights. If the climate prove too cold, it is not proper for those arts which can only be carried on in the open air. At too great or too small a distance from the equator, man is unfit for several labours, which seem peculiarly adapted to a mild temperature. In vain did Peter the Great search among the best-regulated states for all such arts as were best calculated to civilize his people; during a period of fifty years, not one of these principles of civilization has been able to flourish among the frozen regions of Russia. All artists are strangers in that land; and if they endeavour to reside there, their talents and their works soon die with them. When Lewis XIV. in his old age (as if that were the time of life for proscriptions) persecuted the Protestants, in vain did they introduce their arts and trades among the people who received them; they were no longer able to work in the same manner as they had done in France. Though they were equally active and laborious, the arts they had introduced were lost, or they declined, from not having the advantage of the same climate and heat to animate them.

To the favourable disposition of climate, for the encouragement of manufactures, should be added the advantage of the political situation of the state. When it is of such extent as to have nothing to fear or want in point of security; when it is in the neighbourhood of the sea for the landing of its materials, and the exportation of its manufactures; when it is situated between powers that have iron mines to employ its industry, and others that have mines of gold to reward it; when it has nations on each side, with ports and roads open on every side; such a state will have all the external advantages necessary to excite a people to open a variety of manufactures.

But one advantage still more essential is fertility of soil. If cultivation should require too many hands, there will be a want of labourers, or the manufacturers will employ too many hands, that there will not be men...
enough to cultivate the fields; and this must occasion a dearth of provisions, which, while it raises the price of workmanship, will also diminish the number of trades.

Where fertility of soil is wanting, manufactures require, at least, as few men to be employed as possible. A nation that should expend much on its mere subsistence, would absorb the whole profits of its industry. When the gratifications of luxury are greater or more expensive than the means of supplying them, the source from which they are derived is lost, and they can no longer be supported. If the workman will feed and clothe himself like the manufacturer who employs him, the manufacture is soon ruined. The degree of frugality that republican nations adhere to from motives of virtue, the manufacturer ought to observe from views of parsimony. This may be the reason, perhaps, that the arts, even those of luxury, are more adapted to republics than monarchies; for, under monarchical indulgences, poverty is not always the sharpest spur with the people to industry. Labour, proceeding from hunger, is narrow and confined, like the appetite it springs from; but the work that arises from ambition spreads and increases as naturally as the vice itself.

National character has considerable influence over the progress of the arts of luxury and ornament. Some people are fitted for invention by that levity which naturally inclines them to novelty. The same nation is fitted for the arts, by their vanity, which inclines them to the ornament of dresses. Another nation, less lively, has less taste for trivial matters, and is not fond of changing fashions. Being of a more serious turn, these people are more inclined to indulge in excesses of the table, and in drinking, which relieves them from all anxiety and apprehension. Of these nations, the one must succeed better than its rival in the arts of decoration, and must have the preference over it among all the other nations which are fond of the same arts.

The advantages which manufactures derive from nature are further seconded by the form of government.
While industry is favourable to national liberty, that in return should assist industry. Excessive privileges are enemies to commerce and the arts, which are to be encouraged only by competition. Even the rights of apprenticeship, and the value set on corporations, are a kind of monopoly. The state is prejudiced by that sort of privilege which favours incorporated trades; that is to say, petty communities are protected at the expence of the greater body. By taking from the lower class of the people the liberty of choosing the profession that suits them, every profession is filled with bad workmen. Such as require greater talents are exercised by those who are the most wealthy; the meaner, and less expensive, fall often to the share of men born to excel in some superior art. As both are engaged in a profession for which they have no taste, they neglect their work, and prejudice the art: the first, because they have no abilities; the latter, because they are convinced that their abilities are superior to it. But if we remove the impediments of corporate bodies, we shall produce a competition in the workmen, and consequently the work will increase, as well as be more perfect.

It may be a question, whether it be beneficial to collect manufactures in large towns, or to disperse them over the country. This point is determined by facts. The arts of primary necessity have remained where they were first produced, in those places which have furnished the materials for them. Forges are in the neighbourhood of the mine, and linen near the flax. But the complicated arts of industry and luxury cannot be carried on in the country. If we disperse over a large extent of territory all the arts which are combined in watch and clock-making, we shall ruin Geneva, with all the works that support it. If we disperse among the different provinces of France the sixty thousand workmen who are employed in the stuff manufactory of Lyons, we shall annihilate taste, which is kept up only by the competition of a great number of rivals, who are constantly employed in endeavour-
ing to surpass each other. The perfection of stuffs requires their being made in a town, where fine dyes may at once be united with beautiful patterns, and the art of working up woollens and silks with that of making gold and silver lace. If there be wanting eighteen hands to make a pin, through how many manual arts, and artificers, must a laced coat, or an embroidered waistcoat, pass? How shall we be able to find, amidst an interior central province, the immense apparatus of arts that contribute to the furnishing of a palace, or the entertainments of a court? Those arts, therefore, that are most simple and unconnected with others, must be confined to the country; and such clothes as are fit for the lower class of people must be made in the provinces. We must establish between the capital and the other towns a reciprocal dependence of wants and conveniences, of materials and works; but still nothing must be done by authority or compulsion; workmen must be left to act for themselves. Let there be freedom of traffic and freedom of industry, and manufactures will prosper, population will increase.

Has the world been more peopled at one time than another? This is not to be ascertained from history, on account of the deficiency of historians in one half of the globe that has been inhabited, and because one half of what is related by historians is fabulous. Who has ever taken, or could at any time take, an account of the inhabitants of the earth? She was, it is said, more fruitful in earlier times. But when was the period of this golden age? Was it when a dry sand arose from the bed of the sea, purged itself in the rays of the sun, and caused the flame to produce vegetables, animals, and human creatures? But the whole surface of the earth must alternately have been covered by the ocean. The earth has then always had, like the individuals of every species, an infant state, a state of weakness and sterility, before she arrived at the age of sterility. All countries have been for a long time buried under water, lying uncultivated beneath sands.
and morasses, wild and overgrown with bushes and forests, till the human species, being thrown by accident on these deserts and solitudes, has cleared, altered, and peopled the land. But as all the causes of population are subordinate to those natural laws which govern the universe, as well as to the influences of soil and atmosphere, which are subject to a number of calamities, it must ever have varied with those periods of nature that have been either adversæ or favourable to the increase of mankind. However, as the lot of every species seems in a manner to depend on its faculties, the history of the progress and improvement of human industry must therefore, in general, supply us with the history of the population of the earth. On this ground of calculation, it is at least doubtful, whether the world was formerly better inhabited and more peopled than it is at present.

Let us leave Asia under the vail of that antiquity which reports it to us ever covered with innumerable nations, and swarms of people so prodigious, that (notwithstanding the fertility of a soil which stands in need but of one ray of the sun to enable it to produce all sorts of fruit) men did but just arise, and succeed one another with the utmost rapidity, and were destroyed either by famine, pestilence, or war. Let us consider with more attention the population of Europe, which seems to have taken the place of Asia, by confining upon all the powers of nature.

In order to determine whether our continent was, in former ages, more inhabited than at present, it would be necessary to know whether public security was better established at that time, whether the arts were in a more flourishing condition, and whether the land was better cultivated. This is what we must investigate.

First, in these distant periods, the political institutions were very defective. Those ill-regulated governments were agitated with continual factions. The civil wars which sprang from these divisions were frequent and cruel. It often happened that one half of the people were massacred by the other half.
citizens who had escaped the sword of the conqueror took refuge upon an unfavourable territory. From that asylum they did every possible mischief to an implacable enemy, till a new revolution enabled them to take memorable and complete vengeance for the calamities which they had endured.

The arts had not more vigour than the laws. Commerce was so limited, as to be reduced to the exchange of a small number of productions peculiar to some territories and to some climates. The manufactures were so little varied, that both the sexes were equally obliged to clothe themselves with a woollen stuff, which even was but seldom dyed. All the branches of industry were so little advanced, that there did not exist a single city which was indebted to them for its increase or its prosperity. This was the effect and the cause of the general contempt in which these several occupations were helden.

It was difficult for commodities to find a certain and advantageous vent, in regions where the arts were in a languid state. Accordingly, agriculture felt the effects of this want of consumption. It is a certain proof, that most of these fine countries remained un till, because the climate was evidently more rude than it hath since been. If immense forests had not deprived the countries of the influence of the beneficent planet which animates every thing, would our ancestors have had more to suffer from the rigour of the season than cureselves?

These facts, which cannot reasonably be called in question, demonstrate that the number of men was then very much limited in Europe; and that, excepting one or two countries, which may have fallen off from their ancient population, all the rest had only a few inhabitants.

What were those multitudes of people which Cæsar reckoned in Gaul, but a set of savage nations, more formidable in name than number? Were all those Britons, who were subdued in their island by two Roman legions, much more numerous than the Coriscans
at present? Must not the North have been still less peopled? Regions where the sun scarce appears above the horizon; where the course of the waters is suspended for eight months in the year; where heaps of snow cover, for the same space of time, a foil frequently barren; where trees are rooted up by the winds; where the corn, the plants, and the springs, everything which contributes to the support of life, is in a state of annihilation; where the bodies of all men are afflicted with pain; where rest, more fatal than the most excessive fatigues, is followed by the most dreadful calamities; where the arms of children are stiffened, while they are stretching them up to their mothers; and where their tears are converted to icicles on their cheeks; where nature... Such regions could only have been inhabited at some late period, and then only by some unfortunate people, flying from slavery or tyranny. They have never multiplied under so temperate a sky. Over the face of the whole globe, numerous societies have always left behind them some durable monuments or ruins, but in the North there are absolutely no remains which bear the impression of human power or industry.

The conquest of the finest part of Europe, in the space of three or four centuries, by the inhabitants of the most northern nations, seems at first sight to argue against what we have been saying. But let us consider, that these were the people of a territory ten times as large, who pollicied themselves of a country inhabited at present by three or four nations only; and that it was not owing to the number of her conquerors, but to the revolt of her subjects, that the Roman empire was destroyed and reduced to subjection. In this astonishing revolution, we may readily admit that the victorious nations did not amount to one twentieth part of those that were conquered; because the former made their attacks with half their numbers of effective men, and the latter employed no more than the hundredth part of their inhabitants in their defence. But a people, who engage entirely in their own de-
fence and support, are more powerful than ten armies raised by kings and princes.

Besides, those long and bloody wars, with the accounts of which ancient history is replete, are destructive of that excessive population they seem to prove. If, on the one hand, the Romans endeavoured to supply the losses their armies sustained in consequence of the victories they obtained, that desire of conquest to which they were devoted, destroyed at least other nations; for as soon as the Romans had subdued any people, they incorporated them into their own armies, and exhausted their strength as much by recruits, as by the tribute they imposed upon them. It is well known with what rage wars were carried on by the ancients; that often in a siege, the whole town was laid in ashes; men, women, and children, perished in the flames, rather than fall under the dominion of the conqueror; that in assaults, every inhabitant was put to the sword; that in regular engagements, it was thought more desirable to die with the sword in hand, than to be led in triumph, and be condemned to perpetual slavery. Were not these barbarous customs of war injurious to population? If, as we must allow, some unhappy men were preferred to be the victims of slavery, this was but of little service to the increase of mankind, as it established in a state an extreme inequality of conditions among beings by nature equal. If the division of societies into small colonies or states, were adapted to multiply families by the partition of lands; it likewise more frequently occasioned contests among the nations; and as these small states touched one another, as it were, in an infinite number of points, in order to defend them, every inhabitant was obliged to take up arms. Large bodies are not easily put into motion on account of their bulk; small ones are in perpetual motion, which entirely destroys them.

If war were destructive of population in ancient times, peace was not always able to promote and restore it. Formerly all nations were ruled by despotic

Vol. VI.

C c
or aristocratic power, and these two forms of government are by no means favourable to the increase of the human species. The free cities of Greece were subject to laws so complicated, that there were continual disensions among the citizens. Even the inferior class of people, who had no right of voting, obtained a superiority in the public assemblies, where a man of talents, by the power of eloquence, might put so many men into commotion. Besides, in these states, population tended to be confined to the city, in conjunction with ambition, power, riches, and, in short, all the effects and springs of liberty. Not but that the lands under the democratical states must have been well cultivated and well peopled. But the democracies were few; and as they were all ambitious, and could only aggrandize themselves by war, if we except Athens, whose commerce, indeed, was also owing to the superiority of its arms, the earth could not long flourish and increase in population. In a word, Greece and Italy were at least the only countries better peopled than they are at present.

Except in Greece, which repelled, restrained, and subdued Asia; in Carthage, which appeared for a moment on the borders of Africa, and soon declined to its former state; and in Rome, which brought into subjection and destroyed the known world; where do we find such a degree of population, as will bear any comparison with what a traveller meets with every day on every sea-coast, along all the great rivers, and on the roads leading to capital cities? What vast forests are turned to tillage? What harvests are waving in the place of reeds that covered marshy grounds? What numbers of civilized people who subsist on dried fish and salted provisions?

Notwithstanding this, there hath arisen, for some years past, an almost general exclamation respecting the depopulation of all states. We think we can discover the cause of these strange exclamations. Men precluding, as it were, one upon the other, have left be-
hind them some regions less inhabited; and the diffe-
rent distribution of mankind hath been taken for a di-
mination of the human race.
During a long series of ages empires were divided
into so many sovereignties, as there were private no-
blemen in them. Then these subjects, or the slaves
of these petty despots, were fixed, and that for ever,
upon the territory where they were born. At the a-
bolition of the feudal system, when there remained no
more than one master, one king, and one court, all
men crowded to that spot, from whence favours,
riches, and honour flowed. Such was the origin of
those proud capitals, where the people have been suc-
cessively heaped one upon another, and which are gra-
dually become, in a manner, the general assembly of
each nation.
Other cities, less extensive, but still very consider-
able, have also been raised in each province, in pro-
portion as the supreme authority hath been confirm-
ed. They have been formed by the tribunals, public
business, and the arts, and they have been constantly
more and more increased, by the taste for the conven-
iencies and pleasures of society.
These new establishments could not be formed but
at the expense of the country places. Accordingly,
there are scarce any inhabitants remaining there, ex-
cept such as were necessary for the tilling of the lands,
and for the employments that are inseparable from it.
The productions have not felt the effect of this revo-
lution; they are even become more abundant, more
varied, and more agreeable, because more of them have
been fought after, and better paid; because the me-
thods and the instruments have acquired a degree of
simplicity and of improvement they had not former-
ly; and because the cultivators, encouraged in a va-
riety of ways, have become more active and more in-
telligent.
In the police, in the morals, and in the politics, of
the moderns, we may discern many causes of propa-
gation that did not exist among the ancients; but at
C c ij
the same time, we observe likewise some impediments which may prevent or diminish among us that sort of progress, which, in our species, should be most conducive to its being raised to the greatest degree of perfection: for population will never be very considerable, unless men are more numerous and more happy.

Population depends, in a great measure, on the distribution of landed property. Families are multiplied in the same manner as possessions; and when these are too large, they are always injurious to population from their inordinate extent. A man of considerable property, working only for himself, sets apart one half of his lands for his income, and the other for his pleasures. All he appropriates to hunting, is a double loss in point of cultivation; for he breeds animals on the land that should be appropriated to men, instead of subsisting men on the land which is appropriated to animals. Wood is necessary in a country for edifices and fuel; but is there any occasion for so many avenues in a park, or for parterres and kitchen-gardens, of such extent as belong to a large estate? In this case, does luxury, which in its magnificence contributes to the support of the arts, prove as favourable to the increase of mankind as it might by employing the land to better purposes? Too many large estates, therefore, and too few small ones, this is the first impediment to population.

The next obstacle is the unalienable domains of the clergy. When so much property remains for ever in the same hands, how shall population flourish, while it entirely depends upon the improvement of lands by the increase of shares among different proprietors? What interest has the incumbent to increase the value of an estate he is not to transmit to any successor, to fow or plant for a posterity not derived from himself? Far from diminishing his income to improve his lands, will he not rather impair the estate, in order to increase the rents which he is to enjoy only for life?

The entail of estates in great families are not less prejudicial to the propagation of mankind. They lef-
fen at once both the nobility and the other ranks of people. As the right of primogeniture among the great sacrifices the younger children to the interest of the elder branch, in the same manner entails destroy several families for the sake of a single one. Almost all entailed estates are ill cultivated, on account of the negligence of a proprietor who is not attached to a possession he is not to dispose of, which has been ceded to him only with regret, and which is already given to his successors, whom he cannot consider as his heirs, because they are not named by him. The right of primogeniture and of entail is therefore a law, one may say, made on purpose to defeat the increase of population in any state.

From these obstacles to population, produced by the defect of legislation, there arises a third, which is the poverty of the people. Wherever the farmers have not the property of the ground-rent, their life is miserable, and their condition precarious. Not being certain of their subsistence, which depends on their health, having but small reliance on their strength, which is not at their own disposal, and weary of their existence, they are afraid of breeding a race of wretched beings. It is an error to imagine that plenty of children are produced in the country, where there die as many, if not more, than are born every year. The toil of the father and the milk of the mother are lost to them and their children; for they will never attain to the flower of their age, or to that period of maturity, which, by its services, will recompense all the pains that have been bestowed upon their education. With a small portion of land, the mother might bring up her child, and cultivate her own little garden, while the father, by his labour abroad, might add to the conveniences of his family. These three beings, without property, languish upon the little that one of them gains, or the child perishes.

What a variety of evils arise from a faulty or defective legislation! Vices and calamities are infinite in their effects; they mutually afflict each other in spread-
BOOKING general destruction, and arise from one another, till they are both exhausted. The indigence of the country produces an increase of troops, a burden ruinous in its nature, destructive of men in time of war, and of land in time of peace. It is certain that the military destroy the fields, which they do not cultivate themselves; because every soldier deprives the state of a husbandman, and burdens it with an idle or useless consumer. He defends the country in time of peace, merely from a pernicious system, which, under the pretext of defence, makes all nations aggressors. If all governments would, as they easily might, let those men, whom they devote to the army, be employed in the labours of husbandry, the number of husbandmen and artisans throughout Europe would in a short time be considerably increased. All the powers of human industry would be exerted in improving the advantages of nature, and in surmounting every obstacle to improvement; every thing would concur in promoting life, not in spreading destruction.

The deserts of Russia would be cleared, and the plains of Poland not laid waste. The vast dominions of the Turks would be cultivated, and the blessings of their prophet would be extended over an immense population. Egypt, Syria, and Palestine, would again become what they were in the times of the Phoenicians, in the days of their shepherd kings, and of the Jews, who enjoyed happiness and peace under their judges. The parched mountains of Sierra Morena would be rendered fertile, the heaths of Aquitaine would be cleared of insects, and be covered with people.

But general good is merely the delusive dream of benevolent men. This brings to my remembrance the virtuous prelate of Cambrai, and the good Abbé of St. Pierre. Their works are composed with a design to make deserts inhabited, not indeed with hermits, who fly from the vices and misfortunes of the world, but with happy families, who would proclaim the glory of God upon earth, as the stars declare it in
the firmament. Their writings abound with social views and sentiments of humanity, and may be considered as truly inspired; for humanity is the gift of Heaven. Kings will infuse the attachment of their people, in proportion as they themselves are attached to such men.

It is scarce necessary to observe, that one of the means to favour population, is to suppress the celibacy of the regular and secular clergy. Monastic institutions have a reference to two eras remarkable in the history of the world. About the year 700 of Rome, Jesus Christ was the founder of a new religion in the East; and the subversion of Paganism was soon attended with that of the Roman empire itself. Two or three hundred years after the death of Christ, Egypt and Palestine were filled with monks. About the year 700 of the Christian era, Mohammed appeared, and established a new religion in the East; and Christianity was transferred to Europe, where it fixed. Three or four hundred years afterwards, there arose multitudes of religious orders. At the time of the birth of Christ, the books of David, and those of the Sybil, foretold the destruction of the world, a deluge, or rather an universal conflagration, and general judgment: and all people, oppressed by the dominion of the Romans, wished for and believed in a general dissolution. A thousand years after the Christian era, the books of David, and those of the Sybil, still announced the last judgment: and several penitents, as ferocious and wild in their extravagant piety as in their vices, sold all their possessioins to go to conquer and die upon the tomb of their Redeemer. The nations groaning under the tyranny of the feudal government, wished for, and still believed in, the end of the world.

While one part of the Christian world, impressed with terror, went to perish in the crusades, another part were burying themselves in cloisters. This was the origin of the monastic life in Europe. Opinion gave rise to monks, and it will be the cause of their destruction. The estates they possessed they will leave.
behind them for the use and increase of society; and, all those hours, that are lost in praying without devotion, will be consecrated to their primitive intention, which is labour. The clergy are to remember, that, in the sacred scriptures, God says to man, in a state of innocence, Increase and multiply; to man, in a fallen state, Till the earth, and work for thy subsistence. If the duties of the priesthood seem yet to allow the priest to incumber himself with the care of a family and an estate, the duties of society more strongly forbid celibacy. If the monks, in earlier times, cleared the deserts they inhabited, they now contribute to depopulate the towns where their number is very great: if the clergy has subsisted on the alms of the people, they in their turn reduce the people to beggary. Among the idle classes of society, the most prejudicial is that which, from its very principles, must tend to promote a general spirit of indolence among men; make them waste at the altar, as well the work of the bees, as the salary of the workmen; which burns in day-time the candles that ought to be reserved for the night, and makes men lose in the church that time they owe to the care of their families; which engages men to ask of Heaven the subsistence that the ground only can give, or produce in return for their toil.

There is still another cause of the depopulation of some states, which is, that want of toleration which persecutes and proscribes every religion but that of the prince on the throne. This is a species of oppression and tyranny peculiar to modern politics, to extend its influence even over men's thoughts and consciences: a barbarous piety, which, for the sake of exterior forms of worship, extinguishes, in some degree, the very idea of the existence of God, by destroying multitudes of his worshippers: it is an impiety still more barbarous, that, on account of things so indifferent as religious ceremonies must appear, destroys the life of man, and impedes the population of states, which should be considered as points of the utmost importance. For neither the number nor the allegi-
ance of subjects is increased by exacting oaths contra-
B. O. O. K
ery to conscience, by forcing into secret perjury those
who are engaged in the marriage ties, or in the diffe-
rent professions of a citizen. Unity in religion is pro-
ger only when it is naturally established by convic-
tion. When once that is at an end, a general liberty,
if granted, would be the means of restoring tranquilli-
ty and peace of mind. When no distinction is made,
but this liberty is fully and equally extended to every
citizen, it can never disturb the peace of families.

Next to the celibacy of the clergy and of the mili-
tary, the former of which arises from profession, the
latter from custom, there is a third, derived from con-
venience, and introduced by luxury: I mean that of
life annuitants. Here we may admire the chain of
causes. At the same time that commerce favours po-
pulation by the means of industry both by land and
sea, by all the objects and operations of navigation,
and by the several arts of cultivation and manufact-
tures, it also decreases it by reason of all those vices
which luxury introduces. When riches have gained
a general ascendant over the minds of men, then opi-
nions and manners alter by the intermixture of ranks.
The arts and the talents of pleasing corrupt society
while they polish it. When the intercourse between
the sexes becomes frequent, they mutually seduce
each other, and the weaker induce the stronger to a-
dopt the frivolous turn for dress and amusement. The
women become children, and the men effeminate. En-
tertainments are the sole topic of their conversation,
and the object of their occupation. The manly and
noble exercises, by which the youth were trained up
to discipline, and prepared for the most important and
dangerous professions, give place to the love of public
shows, where every passion that can render a nation
effeminate is caught, as long as there is no appearance
of a patriotic spirit among them. Indolence prevails
among all persons of easy circumstances, and labour
diminishes among that class of men destined to be em-
ployed in it. The variety of arts multiplies fashions,
and these increase our expences; articles of luxury become necessary; what is superfluous is looked upon as needful; and people in general are better dressed, but do not live so well; and purchase clothes at the expense of the necessaries of life. The lower classes of men become debauched before they are sensible of the passion of love; and, marrying later, have fewer or weaker children. The tradesman seeks a fortune, not a wife; and he prematurely loses both the one and the other, in the excrescences of libertinism. The rich, whether married or not, are continually seducing women of every rank, or debauching girls of low condition. The difficulty of supporting the charges of marriage, and the readiness of finding the joys of it without bearing any of its disagreeable inconveniences, tends to increase the number of unmarried people in every class of life. The man who renounces the hope of being the father of a family, consumes his patrimony, and in concert with the state, which increases his income, by borrowing money from him at a ruinous interest, he lavishes upon one generation the support of many; he extinguishes his own posterity, as well as that of the women by whom he is rewarded, and that of the girls who are paid by him. Every kind of prostitution prevails at the same time. Honour and duty are forfeited in every rank; the ruin of the women is but the forerunner of that of the men.

The nation that is inclined to gallantry, or rather to libertinism, soon loses its power and credit in other countries, and is ruined at home. There is no longer any nobility, no longer any body of men to defend their own or the people’s rights; for everywhere division and self-interest prevail. No one wishes to be ruined alone. The love of riches becomes the general object of attraction. The honest man is apprehensive of losing his fortune, and the man of no honour is intent upon making his: the one retires from the world, the other sets himself up to sale; and thus the state is lost. Such is the constant progress of commerce in a monarchical government. What its effects are in a
republic we know from ancient history. But still it is necessary at this period to excite men to commerce, because the present situation of Europe is favourable to it, and commerce itself promotes population. But it will be asked, whether a great degree of population be useful in promoting the happiness of mankind. This is an idle question. In fact, the point is not to multiply men, in order to make them happy; but it is sufficient to make them happy, that they should multiply. All the means which concur in the prosperity of any state, tend of themselves to the propagation of its people. A legislator desirous of an increase of people, merely to have a great number of soldiers and of subjects, only for the purpose of subduing his neighbours, would be a moniter, and an enemy to the human race, since his plans of political increase would be solely directed to the destruction of others. A legislator, on the contrary, who, like Solon, should form a republic, whose multitudes might people the desert coasts of the sea; or who, like Penn, should make laws for the cultivation of his colony, and forbid war; such a legislator would undoubtedly be considered as a god on earth. Even though his name should not be immortalized, he would live in happiness, and die contented, especially if he could be certain of leaving behind him laws of such wisdom, as to free the people for ever from the vexation of taxes.

It is to be premised, from what we know of the state of the savages, that the advantage of not being confined by the restraints of our ridiculous clothing, the unwholesome inclosure of superb edifices, and the complicated tyranny of our customs, laws, and manners, is not a compensation for a precarious life, for contusions received, and perpetual combats engaged for a portion of a forest, for a cavern, a bow, an arrow, a fruit, a fish, a bird, a quadruped, the skin of a beast, or the possesion of a woman. Let misanthropy exaggerate at pleasure the vices of our cities, it will not succeed in disgusting us of those express or tacit con-
ventions, nor of those artificial virtues, which constitute the security and the charm of our societies.

There are undoubtedly assassins among us, there are violaters of an asylum, there are monsters whole avidity, indigence, or laziness, disquiet the social order. There are other monsters, perhaps more detestable, who, possessed of a plenty which would be sufficient for two or three thousand families, are only occupied in increasing the misery of them. I shall not the less implore benediction upon the public strength, which most commonly infuses my person and my property, in return for the contributions which it requires from me.

A tax may be defined, a sacrifice of a part of a man's property for the defence of the rest: it follows from hence, that there should not be any tax either among people in a state of slavery, or among savages; for the former no longer enjoy any property, and the latter have not yet acquired any.

But when a nation possesses any large and valuable property, when its fortune is sufficiently established, and is considerable enough to make the expenses of government necessary; when it has possessions, trade, and wealth capable of tempting the avidity of its neighbours, who may be poor or ambitious; then, in order to guard its frontiers, or its provinces, to protect its navigation, and keep up its police, there is a necessity for forces and for a revenue. It is but just and requisite, that the persons who are employed in any manner for the public good, should be maintained by all the other orders of the society.

There have been countries and times, in which a portion of the territory was afligned for the public expenses of the state. The government, not being enabled of itself to turn such extensive possessions to advantage, was forced to intrust this charge to administrators, who either neglected the revenues, or appropriated them to their own use. This practice brought on still greater inconveniences. Either the royal do-
mains were too considerable in time of peace, or insufficient for the calls of war. In the first instance, the liberty of the state was oppressed by the ruler of it; and in the latter, by strangers. It has, therefore, been found necessary to have recourse to the contributions of the citizens.

These funds were in early times not considerable. The stipends then allowed were merely an indemnification to those whom public affairs prevented from attending to those employments that were necessary for their subsistence. Their reward arose from that pleasing sensation which we experience from an internal consciousness of our own virtue, and from the view of the homage paid to it by other men. This moral wealth was the greatest treasure of rising societies; a kind of coin which it was equally the interest of government and of morality not to diminish the value of.

Honour held the place of taxes no less in the flourishing periods of Greece, than in the infant state of societies. The patriot, who served his country, did not think he had any right to destroy it. The impost laid by Aristides on all Greece, for the support of the war against Persia, was so moderate, that those who were to contribute of themselves, called it the happy fortune of Greece! What times were these, and what a country, in which taxes made the happiness of the people!

The Romans acquired power and empire almost without any assistance from the public treasury. The love of wealth would have diverted them from the conquest of the world. The public service was attended to without any views of interest, even after their manners had been corrupted.

Under the feudal government, there were no taxes; for on what could they have been levied? The man and the land were both the property of the lord. It was both a real and a personal servitude.

When knowledge began to diffuse its light over Europe, the nations turned their thoughts towards their
book own security. They voluntarily furnished contributions to repress foreign and domestic enemies. But those tributes were moderate, because princes were not yet absolute enough to divert them to purposes of their own caprices, or to the advantage of their ambition.

The New World was discovered, and the passion for conquest engaged every nation. That spirit of aggrandizement was inconsistent with the floveness with which affairs are managed in popular assemblies; and sovereigns succeeded without much difficulty in appropriating to themselves greater rights than they had ever before enjoyed. The imposition of taxes was the most important of their usurpations; and it is that, the consequences of which have been the most pernicious.

Princes have even ventured to render the marks of servitude apparent upon all their subjects, by levying a poll-tax. Independent of the humiliation it is attended with, can any thing be more arbitrary than such a tax?

Is the tax to be levied upon voluntary information? But this would require between the monarch and his subjects an attachment to each other arising from a principle of duty, which should unite them by a mutual love of the general good; or, at least, a regard to public welfare, to inspire the one with confidence in the other, by a sincere and reciprocal communication of their intelligence and of their sentiments. Even then, upon what is this conscientious principle to be founded, which is to serve as an instructor, a guide, and a check in the affairs of government?

Is the sanctuary of families, or the closet of the citizen, to be invaded, in order to gain by surprize, and bring to light, what he does not choose to reveal, what it is of importance to him not to discover? What an inquisition is this! What an injurious violence! Though we should even become acquainted with the resources and means of subsistence of every individual, do they not vary from one year to another with the uncertain and precarious productions of industry? Are
they not lessened by the increase of children, by the decay of strength through sickness, age, and laborious occupations? The very faculties of the human species, which are useful and employed in laborious occupations, do they not change with those vicissitudes occasioned by time in every thing that depends on nature and fortune? The personal tax is a vexation then to the individual, without being a general benefit. A poll-tax is a sort of slavery, oppressive to the man, without being profitable to the state.

After princes had imposed this tax, which is a mark of despotism, or which leads to it sooner or later, imposts were then laid upon articles of consumption. Sovereigns have affected to consider this new tribute as in some measure voluntary, because it rises in proportion to the expences of the subject, which he is at liberty to increase or diminish according to his abilities, or his propensities, which are for the most part faculties.

But if taxation affect the commodities which are of immediate necessity, it must be considered as an act of the greatest cruelty. Previous to all the laws of society, man had a right to subsist. And is he to lose that right by the establishment of laws? To sell the produce of the earth to the people at a high price is in reality to deprive them of it: to wring from them by a tax the natural means of preserving life, is, in fact, to affect the very principle of their existence. By extorting the subsistence of the needy, the state takes from him his strength with his food. It reduces the poor man to a state of beggary, and the labouring man to that of idleness: it makes the unfortunate man become a rogue; that is, it is the cause of bringing the man who is ready to starve to an untimely end, from the extreme distress to which he is reduced.

If the imposts affect commodities less necessary, how many hands, lost to tillage and the arts, are employed, not in guarding the bulwarks of the empire, but in crowding the kingdom with an infinite number of useless barriers; in embarrassing the gates of towns; in-
vesting the highways and roads of commerce; and searching into cellars, granaries, and storehouses! What a state of war between prince and people, between subject and subject! How many prisons, galleys, and gibbets, prepared for a number of unhappy persons who have been urged on to fraudulent practices, to smuggling, and even to piracy, by the iniquity of the revenue laws!

The avidity of sovereigns has extended itself from the articles of consumption to those of traffic carried on from one state to another. Inflation tyrants! will ye never be sensible, that, if ye lay duties on what ye offer to the stranger, he will buy at a cheaper rate, he will give only the price demanded by other states? if even your own subjects were the sole proprietors of that produce you have taxed, they still would never be able to make other nations submit to such exactions; for in that case the demand would be for a less quantity, and the overplus would oblige them to lower the price, in order to find a sale for it.

The duty on merchandise, which one state receives from another, is not less unreasonable. The price of the goods being regulated by the competition of other countries, the duties will be paid by the subjects of that state which buys commodities for its neighbours. Possibly, the increase in the price of foreign produce may diminish the consumption of it. But if a less quantity of merchandise be sold to any country, a less quantity will be purchased of it. The profits of trade are to be estimated in proportion to the quantity of merchandise sold and bought. Commerce is in fact nothing more than exchange of the value of one commodity for that of another. It is not possible then to oppose the course of these exchanges, without lowering the value of the productions that are sold, by restraining the sale of them.

Whether, therefore, duties be laid on our own or on foreign merchandise, the industry of the subject will necessarily suffer by it. The means of payment will be fewer, and there will be less raw materials to work
The greater diminution there is in the annual produce, the greater also will be the decrease of labour. Then all the laws that can be made against beggars will be ineffectual, for man must live on what is given him, if he cannot live by what he earns.

But what then is the mode of taxation the most proper to conciliate the public interest with the rights of individuals? It is the land-tax. An impost is, with respect to the person upon whom it is charged, an annual expence. It can only, therefore, be alleviated on an annual revenue; for nothing but an annual revenue can discharge an annual expence. Now there never can be any annual revenue, except that of the land. It is land only which returns yearly what has been bestowed upon it, with an additional profit that may be disposed of. It is but within these few years that we have begun to be sensible of this important truth. Some men of abilities will one day be able to demonstrate the evidence of it: and that government which first makes this the foundation of its system will necessarily be raised to a degree of prosperity unknown to all nations and all ages.

Perhaps there is no state in Europe at present whose situation admits of so great a change. The taxes are everywhere so heavy, the expences so multiplied, the wants so urgent, the treasury of the state in general so much indebted, that a sudden change in the mode of raising the public revenues would infallibly alter the confidence and disturb the peace of the subject. But an enlightened and provident policy will tend, by slow and gradual steps, towards so salutary an end. With courage and prudence it will remove every obstacle that prejudice, ignorance, and private interest, might have to oppose to a system of administration, the advantages of which appear to us beyond all calculation.

In order that nothing may lessen the benefits of this fortunate innovation, it will be necessary that all lands without distinction should be subjected to taxation. The public weal is a treasure in common, wherein every individual should deposit his tribute, his service,

Vol. VI.
and his abilities. Names and titles will never change
the nature of men and their possessions. It would be
the utmost meanness and folly to avail ourselves of dis-
finctions received from our ancestors, in order to with-
draw ourselves from the burdens of society. Every
mark of distinction that is not of general utility should
be considered as injurious: it can only be equitable,
when it is founded on a formal engagement of devot-
ing our lives and fortunes in, a more particular manner
to the service of our country.

If in our days the tax were laid for the first time up-
on the land, would it not necessarily be supposed that
the contribution should be proportioned to the extent
and value of the estates? Would any one venture to
allege his employments, his services, his dignities, in
order to screen himself from the tributes required for
the public service? What connection have taxes with
ranks, titles, and conditions? They relate only to the
revenue: and this belongs to the state, as soon as it
becomes necessary for the public defence.

The manner in which the tax ought to be laid upon
the lands is more difficult to ascertain. Some writers
have imagined, that ecclesiastical tithes, unfortunately
levied in the greatest part of Europe, would be a pro-
per mode to be adopted. In that system, say they,
there could be no fraud nor mistake. According as
circumstances should require more efforts on the part
of the people, the treasury would take a fourth, a fifth,
a sixth part of the productions at the time of the har-
vest; and everything would be settled without con-
straint, without deceit, without mistrust, and without
oppression.

But, in this mode of levying, how will the tax be
collected, for objects so multiplied, so variable, and so
little known? Would not the form of administration
require enormous expences? Would not the farming
of the tax give occasion to profits too considerable?
If this arrangement should therefore appear most fatal
to citizens, would it not be most fatal to government?
How can any one possibly doubt, that the interest of
the individual is the same as that of the society? Can any one be still ignorant of the close connection there is between the sovereign who asks and the subjects who grant?

Besides, this impost, apparently so equal, would in fact be the most disproportioned of all those which ignorance hath ever suggested. While one contributor should be required to give up only the fourth of his revenue, one half, and sometimes more, would be taken from others, who, in order to obtain the same quantity of productions, will have been obliged, by the nature of an ungrateful soil, or by the difficulty of working it, to support expences infinitely more considerable.

These inconveniences have occasioned an idea to be rejected, which has been proposed or supported by men little versed in political economy, but disgusted, with reason, at the arbitrary manner in which they saw the lands taxed. Suppose the extent of the domain be admitted as a rule, yet it must be considered that there are some lands which can pay a great deal, others which can pay little, and some, even, which can pay nothing, because the profits remaining, after all the expences, are scarce sufficient to determine the most intelligent man to cultivate them. If an exact state of the leafes be demanded, will not the farmers and proprietors act in concert to deceive the government? and what means are there to discover a fraud, planned with consummate art? If you will allow men to give in the account of their own estates, for one of these declarations that shall be honest, will there not be a hundred false ones? and will not the citizen of strict probity be the victim of him who is destitute of principles? In the mode of taking an estimation of the value of the lands, will not the agent of the treasury suffer himself to be suborned by contributors whose interest it is to bribe him? Suppose the care of making the repartitions be left to the inhabitants of each district, it is undoubtedly the most equitable rule, the most conformable to the rights of nature and pro-

D d ij
property; and yet it must necessarily produce so many cabals, altercations, and animosities, so violent a collision between the passions, which will interfere with each other, that it cannot be productive of that system of equity which might ensure the public happiness.

A register book, which would cautiously measure the lands, which would appreciate, with equity, their value, would alone be capable of effecting this fortunate revolution. This principle, so simple and so evident, hath been rarely applied, and then but imperfectly. It is to be hoped, that this fine institution, though warmly opposed by authority and by corruption, will be improved in those states where it has been adopted, and that it will be introduced in the empires where it doth not yet exist. The monarch who shall signalize his reign by this great benefit, will be blessed during his life, his memory will be dear to posterity, and his felicity will be extended beyond ages, if, as it cannot be doubted, there exists a God, the remunerator of good actions.

But let not government, under whatever form it may have been established, or still subsists, ever carry the measure of imports to excess. It is said, that in their origin they rendered men more active, more sober, and more intelligent; and that they have thus contributed to the prosperity of empires. This opinion is not destitute of probability; but it is still more certain, that, when the taxes have been extended beyond the proper limits, they have stopped the labours, extinguished industry, and produced discouragement.

Though man hath been condemned by nature to perpetual watchings, in order to secure a subsistence, this urgent care hath not exerted all his faculties. His desires have been extended much beyond this; and the more numerous are the objects which have entered into his plan of happiness, the more repeated have been his efforts to attain them. If he hath been reduced, by tyranny, to expect nothing more from obstinate labour than articles of primary necessity, his activity hath been diminished; he hath himself con-
IN THE EAST AND WEST INDIES.

trected the sphere of his wants. Troubled, foured, and exhausted by the oppreßive spirit of the treasury, he hath either languished by his wretched fire-side, or hath quitted his country in search of a less unfortunate destiny, or hath led a wandering and vagabond life over defolated provinces. Most societies have, at different periods, suffered these calamities, and exhibited this hideous spectacle.

Accordingly, it is an error, and a very great one, to judge of the power of empires by the revenue of the sovereign. This basis of calculation would be the best that could be established, if the tributes were proportioned to the abilities of the citizens; but when the republic is oppressed by the weight or the variety of the imposts, these riches, far from being a sign of national prosperity, are a mark of decay. The people, unable to furnish any extraordinary assistance to the mother-country, when threatened or invaded, yield to a foreign yoke, and submit to shameful and ruinous laws. The catastrophe is hastened, when the treasury has recourse to the farming of the revenue, in order to collect the taxes.

The contribution of the citizens towards the public treasury is a tribute; they should present it themselves to the sovereign; who, on his part, ought prudently to direct the employment of it. Every intermediate agent destroys these connections, which cannot be too nearly united. His influence becomes an unavoidable source of division and ravage. It is under this odious aspect that the farmers of the taxes have always been considered.

The farmers of the revenue contrive the taxes; and it is their business to multiply them. They enshroud them in obscurity, in order to give them the degree of extension most suitable to themselves. Their interests are supported by judges chosen by themselves. They bribe every accisel to the throne; and they cause at pleasure their zeal to be extolled, or the people to be calumniated, who are dissatisfied, with reason, at their vexations. By those vile artifices they plunge the pro-
vincte into the lowest degree of misery, while their own coffers regurgitate with riches. Then it is that the laws, manners, honour, and the little remains of the blood of the nation, are sold to them at the vilest price. The contractor enjoys, without shame or remorse, these infamous and criminal advantages, till he hath destroyed the state, the prince, and himself.

Free nations have seldom experienced this terrible destiny. Humane and considerate principles have made them prefer an administration almost always of a paternal kind, to receive the contributions of the citizens. It is in absolute governments that the tyrannical custom of farming out the revenue is peculiarly adopted. Government have sometimes been alarmed at the ravages occasioned by this practice; but timid, ignorant, or indolent administrators, have apprehended, that in the confusion in which things were, a total subversion would be the consequence of the least change. Wherefore, then, should not the time of the disease be that of the remedy? Then it is that the minds of men are better disposed to a change, that opposition is less violent, and that the revolution is more easily accomplished.

It is not, however, sufficient that the impost should be levied with equity, and that it should be collected with moderation; it is further necessary that it should be proportioned to the wants of government, which are not always the same. War hath ever required in all countries, and in every age, more considerable expenses than peace. The ancients made a provision for them by their economy in times of tranquillity. Since the advantages of circulation and the principles of industry have been better understood, the method of laying up specie for this purpose has been proscribed, and that of imposing extraordinary taxes has been, with reason, preferred. Every state that should prohibit them would find itself obliged, in order to protract its fall, to have recourse to the methods made use of at Constantinople. The Sultan, who can do every thing but augment his revenues, is constrained
to give up the empire to the extortions of his delegates, that he may afterwards deprive them of what they have plundered from his subjects.

That taxes may not be exorbitant, they should be ordered, regulated, and administered by the representatives of the people. The impost has ever depended on, and must be proportioned to, the property possessed. He who is not master of the produce, is not master of the field. Tributes, therefore, among all nations have always been first imposed upon proprietors only; whether the lands were divided among the conquerors, or the clergy shared them with the nobles; or whether they passed, by means of commerce and industry, into the hands of the generality of the citizens. Everywhere, those who were in possession of them had referred to themselves the natural, unalienable, and sacred right of not being taxed without their own consent. If we do not admit this principle, there is no longer any monarchy or any nation; there is nothing remaining but a despotic master and a herd of slaves.

Ye people, whose kings command every thing at pleasure, read over again the history of your own country. You will see that your ancestors assembled themselves, and deliberated, whenever a subsidy was in agitation. If this custom be neglected, the right is lost; it is recorded in heaven, which has given the earth to mankind to possess: it is written on the field you have taken the pains to enclose, in order to secure to yourselves the enjoyment of it: it is written in your hearts, where the Divinity has impressed the love of liberty. Man, whose head is raised towards heaven, was not made in the image of his Creator to bow before man. No one is greater than another, but by the choice and consent of all. Ye courtiers, your greatness consists in your lands, and is not to be found in your attendance on your master. Be less ambitious, and ye will be richer. Do justice to your vassals, and ye will improve your fortunes by increasing the general happiness. What advantage can ye propose to yourselves by raising the edifice of despotism upon the
ruins of every kind of liberty, virtue, sentiment, and property? Consider that this power will crush you all. Around this formidable Colossus ye are no more than figures of bronze, representing the nations chained at the feet of a statue.

If the right of imposing taxes be in the prince alone, though it may not be for his interest to burden and oppress his people, yet they will be burdened and oppressed. The caprices, profusions, and encroachments of the sovereign, will no longer know any bounds when they meet with no obstacles. A false and cruel system of politics will soon persuade him, that rich subjects will always become insolent; that they must be distressed, in order to be reduced to subjection; and that poverty is the firmest rampart of the throne. He will proceed so far as to believe that everything is at his disposal; that nothing belongs to his slaves; and that he does them a favour in leaving them any thing.

The government will appropriate to itself all the means and resources of industry; and will lay such restraints on the exports and imports of every article of trade, as will entirely absorb the profits arising from it. Commerce will only be circulated by the interference and for the benefit of the treasury. Cultivation will be neglected by mercenaries who can have no hopes of acquiring property. The nobility will serve in the army only for pay. The magistrate will give judgment only for the sake of his fees and his salary. Merchants will keep their fortunes concealed, in order that they may convey them out of a land where there is no spirit of patriotism, nor any security left. The nation, then losing all its importance, will conceive an indifference for its kings; will see its enemies only in those who are its masters; will be induced to hope that a change of slavery will tend to alleviate the yoke of it; will expect its deliverance from a revolution, and the restoration of its tranquillity from an entire overthrow of the state.

"This description is dreadful," said a vizier to me, for there are viziers everywhere. "I am concerned
at it. But without contribution, how can I main-
tain that strength of the state, the necessity and ad-
vantage of which you yourself acknowledge? This
strength should be permanent, and always equal;
otherwise there would be no more security for your
persons, your property, or your industry. Happi-
ness undefended is no more than a chimera. My
expenses are independent of the variety of seasons,
of the inclemency of the elements, and of all acci-
dents. It is therefore necessary that they should be
supplied by you, although a pestilence should have
destroyed your cattle, though insects should have
devoured your vines, and though the hail should
have rooted up your harvests. You must pay, or I
will turn against you that strength of the state, which
hath been created for your safety, and which it is
your business to maintain."

This oppressive system concerned only the proprietors
of lands. The vizier soon informed me of the means
which he employed to render the other members of
the confederacy subservient to the treasury:

"It is chiefly in the cities that the mechanical and
liberal arts, of utility or ornament, of necessity or
fancy, are concentrated, or at least their activity,
their display, or their improvement. There it is
that the rich, and consequently indolent citizens,
attracted or fixed by the charms of society, endeav-
our to delude the wearisomeness of life by facti-
tious wants. There it is, that, in order to gratify
them, they employ the poor, or, which is the same
thing, the industrious man; who, in his turn, in order
to satisfy the wants of primary necessity, which are for
a long time the only wants with which he is torment-
ed, endeavours to multiply the factitious wants of the
rich man; from whence arises between the one and the
other a mutual dependence, founded upon their re-
spective interests; for the industrious man wishes to la-
bour, while the rich man wishes to enjoy. If, there-
fore, I can tax the necessary articles of all the inhabi-
tants of cities, whether industrious or idle, that is to
BOOK XIX.

Say, if I can raise the price, for the state, of all the commodities and merchandise which are consumed there, by the wants of all the individuals; I shall then have taxed all the species of industry, and I shall have brought them to the condition of the industrious husbandman. I shall have done still more; and especially, let not this circumstance escape your notice, I shall have made the rich pay for the poor, because the latter will not fail to raise the price of his productions, in proportion to the multiplication of his wants."

I conjure thee, vizier, to spare, at least, the air, the water, the fire, and even the corn, which is not less than those three elements, the sacred right of every man, without exception. Deprived of light, no one can either live or act, and without life or action there can be no industry.

"I will think of it. But, attend to me in all the different plans, by which I have comprehended all the other objects of necessity, especially in the cities. In the first place, being master of the frontiers of the empire, I suffer nothing to come from foreigners, nor any thing to be conveyed to them, unless they pay in proportion to the number, weight, and value of the thing sent. By this mode, he who hath manufactured, or who exports, yields to me a part of his profits; and he who receives or consumes, gives me something above what belongs to the merchant or to the manufacturer."

I understand, vizier; but by interfering thus between the seller and the purchaser, between the manufacturer, or the merchant, and the consumer, without being called upon, and without your interference being profitable to them; since, on the contrary, you keep it up to their detriment, doth it not happen, that on their parts they endeavour, by deceiving thee somehow or other, to diminish thy share, or even to frustrate thee of it?

"Undoubtedly: but of what use would the strength of the state be to me then, if I did not employ it in
"If you perpetually interrupt me, you will lose the thread of my subtle and marvellous operations. After having laid a tax on merchandise, on its entrance, and on its going out of the empire, on its passage from one province to the other, I follow the track of the traveller, who goes through my districts on account of his affairs, or through motives of curiosity. I follow the peasant who carries to town the produce of the fields, or of his farmyard; and when thrift drives him into a public house, by means of an association with the master..."

What, vizier! An inn-keeper is your associate?

"Certainly. Is there any thing despicable, when..."
the maintenance of the strength of the state, and consequently the wealth of the treasury, is concerned? by means of this association, I receive part of the price of the liquor consumed there."

But, vizier, how does it happen that you come to be the partner of the keeper of an inn or tavern, in the sale of his liquors? Is it possible that you should be his purveyor?

"I his purveyor! this is what I would carefully avoid. Where would be the advantage of selling the wine, which the vine-dresser might have given me as the tribute of his industry? I am better acquainted with the management of my affairs. In the first place, I am in partnership with the vine-keeper or proprietor, with the brewer and the distiller of brandy, by which I obtain part of the price for which they sell them to the inn-holders, or keepers of public houses; and I have afterwards another with the latter, by which they are accountable to me in their turn, for a portion of the price which they receive from the consumer, leaving the seller at liberty to recover from the consumer that share of the price which belongs to me from the consumption."

It must be acknowledged that this is very fine. But, vizier, how do you manage to be present at all the sales of liquors which are made in your empire? How doth it happen that you are not pilfered by these inn-keepers, who have been notoriously dishonest, ever since the times of the Romans, though the questors were not in partnership with them? After what you have intruded to me I do not doubt of any thing, but I am curious. "It is in this instance that I shall appear bold to you, and that you will admire my sagacity. It is impossible to aspire to every kind of merit and of glory. First, no man is allowed to move a hog's head of wine, of cyder, bear, or of brandy, either from the place where it is produced or prepared, or from the warehouse or from the cellar, either to sell or to transport, no matter for what
purposa, without my permission in writing. By book xix.

this I know what becomes of them. If any liquor
be met without this passport I seize upon it; and
the proprietor pays me immediately a third or a
fourth more than the value. Afterwards the same
agents, who are employed night and day, in all
parts, to ascertain to me the honesty of the proprie-
tors, or wholesale merchants, in keeping their com-
 pact of association, enter every day twice rather
than once, into the house of each inn or tavern-
keeper, where they found the vessels, reckon the
bottles; and if there be the least suspicion of pil-
fering upon my share, the punishment is so severe
as to prevent their being tempted a second time.

But, vizier, in order to please you, are not your a-
gents so many petty subaltern tyrants?

"I make no doubt of it; and I reward them well
for it."

Very well; but, vizier, I have one scruple. These
associations with the proprietor and with the mer-
chants, in wholesale and in retail, have a little the ap-
pearance of those which the highwayman contracts
with the passenger whom he robs.

"You do not consider what you say. My associa-
tions are authorised by law, and by the sacred insti-
tution of the strength of the state. Can no circum-
stance then have an influence upon your mind? But
let me now persuade you to come with me to the
gates of the city, where you will not find me less
admirable. Nothing enters there without bringing
some profit to me. Should they be liquors, they
contribute, not in proportion to their value, as in
my other arrangements, but according to their
quantity; and you may be assured that I am not
the dupe. The inn-keeper, or the citizen, have no-
thing to say, although I have besides some concern
with them at the time of the purchase and of the
sale, for it is in a different manner. If they be pro-
visions, I have my agents, not only at the gates, but
at the slaughter-houses and in the fifth markets; and
no one would attempt to plunder me, without ris- 
ing more than he could get by the fraud. Less pre-
cautions are necessary in respect to wood, forage, or 
paper. These mercantile articles cannot be pilfered 
as a flask of wine is. I have, however, my emia-
ries on the roads, and in the bye-places; and woe 
be to those who should be found endeavouring to 
elude my vigilance. You see, therefore, that who-
ever dwells in cities, whether he may live by his in-
dustry, or whether he may employ his income, or a 
part of his profits, in a salary for the industrious man, 
will no one can consume without paying; and that 
all men pay more for the usual and indispensable 
consumptions than for the rest. I have laid every 
kind of industry under contribution, without its per-
ceiving it. There are, however, some branches of it 
with which I have endeavoured to treat more direct-
ly, because their common residence is not in towns, 
and that I have imagined they would be more pro-
fitable to me from a special contribution. For in-
fstance, I have agents in the forges and furnaces, 
where iron, which is put to so many different uses, 
is manufactured and weighed; I have some in the 
workshops of the tanners, where the hides, which 
are of such general utility, are manufactured; I 
have some among all those persons who work in 
gold, silver, plate, and jewels; and you will not ac-
cuse me, in this instance, of attacking objects of pri-
mary necessity. In proportion as my experiments 
succeed, I extend them. I flatter myself that I shall 
one day be able to fix my satellites by the side of 
the linen looms, because they are so universally use-
ful. But do not impart my secret to any one. 
Whenever my speculations get wind, it is always to 
my detriment."

I am truly stricken, vizier, with your sagacity, or 
with that of your sublime predecessors. They have 
dug mines of gold everywhere. They have made 
of your country a Peru, the inhabitants of which have, 
perhaps, had the same destiny as those of the other
continent; but of what concern is it to you? But you say nothing to me of the salt and the tobacco, which you sold ten times above their intrinsic value, though salt be the most necessary article in life, after bread and water. What is the meaning of your silence? Are you sensible of the contradiction in your conduct in selling this article, and refusing to collect the other contributions in kind, under pretence of the trouble of selling again?

"Not in the least. The difference is easily perceived. If I received from the proprietor or cultivator his share of contribution in kind, in order to sell it again afterwards, I become his competitor in the markets. My predecessors have been prudent, in referring to themselves the exclusive distribution of them. This hath been attended with some difficulty. In order to bring those two streams of gold into the treasury, it was necessary to forbid the culture and the manufacture of tobacco in the nation; which doth not dispense me from keeping upon the frontiers, and even in the interior parts of the empire, an army, to prevent the introduction and the competition of any other tobacco with mine."

Have you found these expedients successful, vizier?

"Not so fully as I could have wished, notwithstanding the severity of the penal laws. As for the salt, the difficulty was much greater; I cannot but acknowledge my concern at it. My predecessors committed an irreparable blunder. Under pretence of dispensing a useful favour, necessary to some of the maritime provinces, or, perhaps, induced by the allurement of a considerable sum, though a temporary one, which other provinces paid, to be allowed to furnish themselves with salt as they chose; they gave way to exceptions, the consequences of which are, that it is not I who sell it, in one third of the extent of the empire, or thereabouts. I am indeed in great hopes of altering this; but I must wait for the moment of distress."
Independent, therefore, of the armies which you maintain upon the frontiers, to prevent the importation of tobacco and foreign merchandise, you have still others in the inland parts of the country, to prevent the sale of the salt belonging to the free provinces from coming into competition with the sale of yours.

"It is true. However, I must do justice to our ancient viziers. They have left me a very well contrived system of legislation. For instance, those persons of the free countries bordering upon those provinces where I sell, are allowed to sell as little salt as possible, to prevent them from selling it to my prejudice: and by a consequence of the same wise measures, those who are to purchase of me, and who, being near the free countries, might be tempted to provide themselves at a cheaper rate, are compelled to take more than they can consume."

And is this custom consecrated by law?

"Yes, and supported by the august strength of the state. I am authorized to number the families; and if any one of them should not purchase the quantity of salt that I think necessary for their consumption, they are obliged to pay for it, all the same as if they had."

And every person who shall sell their meat with any other salt than yours will certainly suffer for it.

"Exceedingly. Befide the seizure of this iniquitous salt, it costs him more than he would expend for supplying his family for several years."

And what becomes of the seller?

"The seller! He is of course a robber, a plunderer, a malefactor, whom I reduce to beggary if he has any thing, and whom I send to the galleys if he has nothing."

But are you not, vizier, exposed to incessant lawsuits?

"I have many upon my hands; but there is a particular court of justice, to which the exclusive determination of them is committed."

And how dost thou extricate thyself from them?
Is it by the interference of thy favourite principle, strength of the state?

"With that and with money."

I can but admire, vizier, thy head and thy courage: thy head, which attends to so many objects, and thy courage, which faces so many enemies. You have been typified in the holy scriptures by Ishmael, whose hands were uplifted against all, and those of all raised against him.

"Alas, I own it! But the importance of the strength of the state, and the extent of its wants, are such, that it hath been necessary to have recourse to other expedients. Besides what the proprietor is annually indebted to me for the produce of his estate, if he should resolve to sell it, the purchaser must pay me a sum above the price agreed on with the seller. I have rated all human compacts; and no man enters into any kind of contract without furnishing me a contribution proportioned either to the object or the nature of the convention. This examination implies a set of profound agents. And indeed I am often in want of them. The pleader cannot take one single step, either as plaintiff or defendant, without some benefit arising to me from it: and you will allow that this tribute is very innocent; for no one is yet disgusted of law-suits."

Suffer me to take breath, vizier, although thy calculation should not be at an end. Thou hast wearied out my admiration; and I know not which circumstance should most excite my astonishment, either that perfidious and barbarous science which extends its influence over every thing, and presses upon every thing; or that patience with which so many repeated acts of subtle tyranny, which spares nothing, are supported. The slave receives his subsistence in exchange for his liberty, while thy wretched contributor is deprived of his liberty by furnishing thee with his subsistence.

Hitherto I have so frequently given way to emotions even of indignation, that I have ventured to think I should be excused for indulging myself for 

Vol. VI.

E e
once in ridicule and irony, which have so often decided the most important questions. I resume the character that suits me, and I say,

There undoubtedly must be a degree of public strength in every government, which shall act both within and without: without, to defend the body of the nation against the jealousy, the cupidity, the ambition, the contempt, and violence of other nations; and this protection, or the security which should be the effect of it, requires armies, fleets, fortresses, arsenals, feeble allies to be kept in pay, and powerful allies to be seconded: within, to preserve the citizen, attached to the order of society, from the troubles, oppressions, and injuries he may be exposed to from the wicked man, who suffers himself to be led astray by passions, by personal interest, or by his vices, and who is restrained only by the threats of justice, and by the vigilance of the police.

We shall, moreover, venture to advance, that it is advantageous to the greater number of citizens, that the strength of a state should encourage industry, stimulate talents, and assist those who, from an inconsiderate zeal, unforeseen misfortunes, or false speculations, have lost their own ability. It is from this principle that we trace the necessity of charity-schools and hospitals.

In order to increase the energy of this strength of the state, which, especially in monarchial states, seems to be distinct and separate from the nation, I would even consent that the depositary and director of this public strength should impress awe by a parade of dignity, should attract by mildness, and encourage by rewards, since it is his duty to make it be feared, respected, and cherished.

All these means are expensive. Expenses supposo revenue, and a revenue implies contributions. It is just that those who partake of the advantages of the strength of the state should furnish towards its maintenance. There is a tacit but sacred agreement between the sovereign and his subjects, by which the
former engages to affiht, with a degree of that force proportioned to the portion that has been furnished of it, towards the general mass of contributions; and this distributive justice would be executed of itself by the nature of things, if it were not incessantly disturbed by corruption and vice.

But in every convention there is a proportion between the price and the value of the thing acquired; and this proportion must necessarily be in the ratio of minus on the side of the price, and in that of plus on the side of the advantages. I am ready to purchase a sword to defend myself against the thief; but if, in order to acquire this sword, I am obliged to empty my purse or to sell my house, I would rather compound with the thief.

Now, where then is this analogy, this proportion of advantages, derived from the strength of the state, in favour of a proprietor, when compared with the price which he pays for them, if among the most civilized nations of Europe, the least exposed to excursions and to foreign attacks, after having ceded a part of his possession, he is obliged, when he goes to live in the town, to purchase at an advanced price, for the benefit of this strength of the state, not only the productions of other people, but likewise his own, when he chooses to consume them.

What is this proportion of advantages for the husbandman, if he be compelled, on the one hand, to consume in kind a portion of his time, and of the means of his industry, for the construction and the repairing of the roads; and if he be also obliged to return in money a considerable portion of the productions he hath acquired from the earth by the sweat of his brow and by hard labours?

What is this proportion of advantages for the mechanic, who cannot work without food, lodging, clothing, light, and firing, and who cannot supply himself with all these articles without contributing, since these several means of subsistence are taxed, if he be still obliged to return part of the price of his time and of

E.e i
his talents to the impost which falls directly upon the production of his industry?

What is this proportion of advantages for the merchant, who hath already contributed in a variety of ways, both by his personal consumption, by the consumption of his clerks, as well as by the advanced price of the first materials, if he be still obliged to cede a portion of the price of the merchandize which he sends out, and from which he may perhaps receive nothing, in case of some of those numberless accidents, from which this public strength doth not engage either to screen or indemnify him?

What is this proportion of advantage for all individuals, if, after having contributed in every progression and exertion of our industry to the common mass, on one hand, by an annual and general impost, that of the poll-tax, which hath no connection, no affinity, either with property or with industry, we still contribute, on the other hand, by the salt, a commodity of primary necessity, which is carried to ten times its intrinsic and natural value?

Once again, What proportion of these advantages belongs to all individuals, if we see all these quotas, exacted for the maintenance of the strength of the state, wasted among the extortioners who collect them, while the remainder, which, after several expences of circulation, is poured into the king's treasury, is pillaged in several different manners, or dissipated in extravagance?

We shall also ask, what analogy is there between that strange and complicated variety of contributions, and the advantages which each of us obtains from the strength of the state, if it be true, as certain political calculators pretend, that the sums of those who contribute are equal to those of the revenue of the proprietors?

We can only seek for an answer to this question in the character of the sovereign. If he be cruel, the problem will not be solved; and time, after a long series of oppression, will bring about the ruin of the empire. If the sovereign should have any sensibility,
the problem will be solved in a manner beneficial to his subjects.

The chief of the nation must not, however, flatter himself with effecting any great or lasting good, if he does not make a judicious choice of the man intrusted with the maintenance of the strength of the state. It belongs to that great agent of government to distribute and to render supportable to every individual the enormous weight of the tribute by his equity and by his skill, and to divide it according to the relative degrees of ability or non-ability in the contributors. Without these two circumstances, the oppressed people will fall into a state of despair more or less distant, more or less alarming. With these two circumstances, supported by the expectation of an immediate or approaching relief, they will suffer with patience, and will proceed under their burden with some share of courage.

But where is the minister who will fulfil so difficult a task? Will it be the minister who, from an odious thirst of wealth, shall have eagerly sought the management of the public revenues, and who having attained that important post by dint of servile intrigue, shall have abandoned the treasury a prey to his passions, his friends, his flatterers, and his favourites, and to the detriment of the strength of the state? Perish the memory of such a minister!

Will it be he who shall view, in the power committed to his hands, nothing more but the instrument of his enmity, or of his personal aversions; who shall consider nothing but how to realize the illusion of his ferocious and disordered imagination; who will treat all measures differing from his own as absurdities; whose anger will be excited against real or pretended errors, as if they were so many crimes; to whom the fable of the stomach and the members shall be an object of ridicule; who shall enervate that part of the body politic that shall be displeasing to him, by granting almost exclusive favours to that which his fancy, his interest, or his prejudices shall prefer; to whom every
thing shall bear the stamp of confusion and disorder which shall not be consonant to his singular ideas; who, destitute of the wisdom necessary to correct what is defective, shall substitute chimeras to a regular system, perhaps imperfect; and who, in order to correct pretended abuses, blind to the consequences of an ill-suggested plan of reformation, will subvert every thing with a disdainful smile; an empiric, who is as cruel as ignorant; who, mistaking poison for the remedy, shall announce a speedy cure, when repeated convulsions shall proclaim the impending dissolution of the patient? Perish the memory of such a minister!

Sovereigns, you who are neither exempt from falsehood or seduction, if you have been unfortunate enough to have been directed by such ministers, do not substitute to them a weak and pusillanimous man, who, though well informed, mild, modest, and perhaps incapable of committing any great faults while he acts for himself, will still suffer himself to be misled by others; will fall into the snares that shall be laid for him; and will want that necessary vigour, either to put a stop to, or prevent the evil, or to act in opposition to yourselves, when his conscience and the general interest shall require it.

Do not substitute the morose, disdainful, and austere man, and much less the imperious and harsh minister. The impost is a heavy burden; how, therefore, shall it be supported, if the mode of imposing it be aggravated? It is a bitter cup, which all must swallow; if it be presented hastily or awkwardly, it will certainly be spilt.

Do not substitute the man who is ignorant of the law, or who despises it, to attend to nothing but finance. It is the interest of a sovereign, that property and industry should be protected, against his own authority, against the enterprises of his ministers, often inconsiderate, and sometimes dangerous. A minister who sacrifices every thing to finance will often fill the coffers of his master; he will give to the nation, and to the throne, the splendour of a formidable power;
but this splendour will be momentary as lightning. Defpair will seize upon the minds of the subjects. By reducing induftry to the moft extreme diftreffes, the mi-
miner will have acted the part of the man in the fable,
who killed the hen which brought forth golden eggs.

Do not substitute a villain, armed at all points with
the formalities and subtleties of law, who will keep up
a perpetual quarrel between the treafury and the law,
who will render the former odious, and will relax the
bonds of a hard but neceffary obedience.

Do not substitute that outrageous philanthropifl,
who, giving himfelf up to an ill-judged spirit of pa-
triofm, fhall forget the treafury, while he indifferently
gives way to the feducing impulfes of benevolence and
popularity; an impulf le ever laudable in a philofopher,
but to which a minister ought not to yield without
great circumpefion. For it muft ftill be acknow-
ledged, that the strength of the flate muft be establish-
ed, and that there muft be a treafury to maintain it.

But above all things, reject the prodigal minister.
How is it poifible that a man who hath failed in the
management of his own affairs can administer those of
a great flate? When he hath difpiffated his own eftates,
will he be economical of the public revenue? Let us
fuppose him to have probity, delicacy, knowledge, and
a fincef defire of being ufeful to the flate; yet in a
circumstance, and upon an object fo impor tant as that
in quefion, constitutional virtues are only to be truft-
ed to. How many men are there, who have entered
virtuous into the miniftry, and who, in fix months af-
ter their promotion, appeared in a very different light
to others, and even to themselves? There is, perhaps,
less feduction at the foot of the throne, than in the
antichamber of a minister; and still less at the foot of
the throne, and in the antichambers of other ministers,
than at the entrance of the clofet of the minister of fi-
nance. But we have dwelt too long on impofls: we
muft now fpeak of what hath been fuggested to supply
its place, of public credit.

E e iiij
In general, what is called credit is only a delay granted for payment. This was a custom unknown in the first ages. Every family was satisfied with what uncultivated nature, and some coarse labours, supplied to them. Some exchanges were soon begun, but only between relations and neighbours. These connections were extended in all places, where the progress of society multiplied the wants or the pleasures of men. In process of time, it was no longer possible to purchase provisions of one kind with those of another; metals were substituted, and became insensibly the common representative of all things. It happened, that the agents of trade, which were becoming every day more considerable, wanted the money necessary for their speculations. The merchandise was then delivered, to be paid for at periods more or less distant; and this fortunate custom still obtains, and will last for ever.

Credit supposes double confidence; confidence in the person who is in want of it, and confidence in his abilities to pay. The first is the most necessary. It is too common for a man in debt, who is destitute of honesty, to break his engagements, though he be able to fulfil them; and to dissipate his fortune by irregularity and extravagance. But the sensible and honest man may, by a variety of schemes well conducted, acquire, or replace the means that have failed him for a time.

The mutual advantage of the purchaser and the seller has given rise to the credit which exists among the individuals of one society, or even of several societies. It differs from public credit in this particular, that the latter is the credit of a whole nation, considered as forming one single body.

Between public and private credit there is also this difference, that profit is the end of the one, and expense of the other. From hence it follows, that credit is gain with respect to the merchant, because it furnishes him with the means of acquiring riches; but with respect to governments, it is one cause of impo-
verrying them, since it only supplies them with the means of ruining themselves. A state that borrows alienates a portion of its revenue for a capital, which it spends. It is therefore poorer after these loans, than it was before it had recourse to this destructive expedient.

Notwithstanding the scarcity of gold and silver, the ancient governments were unacquainted with public credit, even at the times of the most fatal and critical events. They formed, during peace, a stock that was reserved for times of distress. The specie being by this method circulated afresh, excited industry, and alleviated, in some measure, the inevitable calamities of war. Since the discovery of the New World has made gold and silver more common, those who have had the administration of public affairs have generally engaged in enterprises above the abilities of the people they governed, and have not scrupled to burden posterity with debts they had ventured to contract. This system of oppression has been continued; it will affect the latest generations, and oppress all nations and all ages.

It is England, Holland, and France, that is to say, the most opulent nations of Europe, who have given to bad an example. These powers have found credit, for the same reason that we do not lend our money to a man who asks charity, but to him who dazzles us with his brilliant equipage. Confidence hath given birth to loans; and confidence arises of itself at the sight of a country where the richness of the soil is increased by the activity of an industrious people, and at the view of those celebrated ports which receive all the productions of the universe.

The situation of these three states hath also encouraged the lender. They are not only the public revenues that are his guarantee, but also the incomes of individuals, in which the treasury finds, in times of necessity, its support and its resources. In countries which, like Germany, are open on all sides, and which have neither barriers, nor natural means of defence, if
the enemy, who can enter into them freely, should
either fix, or only sojourn there for a time; they im-
mediately levy the public revenues for their own be-
nefit, and they even appropriate to themselves, by con-
tributions, a portion of the incomes of individuals.
The creditors of the government then experience the
same thing as happened to those who had annuities in
the Austrian Netherlands, and to whom more than
thirty years arrears were due. With England, France,
and Holland, which are all three somewhat more or
less secured from invasion, there is nothing to fear, ex-
cept the causes which exhaust them, the effect of which
is slower, and consequently more distant.
But should it not be the province of the indigent
man to borrow, and of the rich to lend? Wherefore,
then, are those states which have the most resources
the most in debt? It is because the folly of nations is
the same as that of individuals: it is because, being
more ambitious, they create to themselves more wants;
it is because the confidence they have in their means
renders them inattentive to the expenses they make:
it is because no action at law can be maintained against
them; and that their debts are themselves liquidated,
whenever they have the effrontery to say, we owe no-
thing: it is because subjects cannot bring their fore-
ign to justice: it is because a power hath never been,
nor perhaps never will be seen, to take up arms in fa-
vour of their citizens, robbed and plundered by a for-
ign power: it is because a state renders its neigh-
bours in a manner subject to it by loans: it is because
Holland is in constant apprehension, left the first can-
on-shot which should pierce the side of one of her
ships should acquit England towards her: it is because
an edict dated from Versailles may, without conse-
quences, acquit France to Geneva: it is because these
motives, which it would be shameful to acknowledge,
act secretly in the breasts and in the councils of pow-
ful kings.
The custom of public credit, though ruinous to ev-
ry state, is not equally so to all. A nation that has
several valuable productions of its own; whose reve-


eue is entirely free; which hath always fulfilled its en-
gagements, which hath not been swayed by the ambi-
tion of conquests, and which governs itself; such a
nation will raise money at an easier rate, than an em-


pire, the soil of which is not fertile; which is over-
loaded with debts; which engages in undertakings be-
yond its strength; which has deceived its creditors,
and groans beneath an arbitrary power. The lender,
who of course imposes the law, will always proportion
the terms to the risks he must run. Thus, a people
whose finances are in a state of confusion, will soon fall
into the utmost distress by public credit: but even the
best-regulated government will also experience the de-
cline of its prosperity from it.

But some political arithmeticians have asserted, that
it is advantageous to invite the specie of other nations
into that of our own country, and that public loans
produce that important effect. It is certain, that it is
a method of attracting the specie of other nations; but
merely, as if it were obtained by the sale of one or
more provinces of the empire. Perhaps it would be a
more rational practice to deliver up the soil to them,
than to cultivate it solely for their use.

But if the state borrowed only of its own subjects,
the national revenue would not be given up to foreign-
ess. It certainly would not; but the state would im-
poverish some of its members, in order to enrich one
individual. Must not taxes be increased in proportion
to the interest that is to be paid, and the capital that
is to be replaced? Will not the proprietors of lands,
the husbandmen, and every citizen, find the burden
greater, than if all the money borrowed by the state
had been demanded from them at once? Their situ-
ation is the same, as if they themselves had borrowed
it, instead of retrenching from their ordinary expenses
as much as might enable them to supply an accidental
charge.

But the paper-currency which is introduced by the
loans made to government increases the quantity of wealth in circulation, gives a great extension to trade, and facilitates every commercial transaction. Infatuated men! reflect on the dangerous consequences of your political system. Extend it only as far as possible; let the state borrow all it can; load it with interest to be paid; and by these means reduce it to the necessity of straining every tax to the utmost; ye will soon find, that, with all the wealth you may have in circulation, ye will have no fresh supply for the purposes of consumption and trade. Money, and the paper which represents it, do not circulate of themselves, nor without the assistance of those powers which let them in motion. All the different signs introduced in lieu of coin acquire a value only proportionate to the number of sales and purchases that are made. Let us agree with you, in supposing all Europe filled with gold. If it should have no merchandise to trade with, that gold will have no circulation. Let us only increase commercial effects, and take no concern about these representations of wealth; mutual confidence and necessity will soon occasion them to be established without your assistance. But let your care be principally directed in preventing their increase, by such means as must necessarily diminish the mass of your growing produce.

But the custom of public credit enables one power to give the law to others. Will it never be perceived that this resource is common to all nations? If it be a general mode by which a state may obtain a superiority over its enemies, may it not be serviceable to them for the same purposes? Will not the credit of the two nations be in proportion to their respective wealth? and will they not be ruined without having any other advantages over one another, than those they were in possession of, independent of every loan? When I see monarchs and empires furiously attacking and waging war against each other, with all their debts, with their public funds, and their revenue al-
read deeply mortgaged, it seems to me, says a philo-
al. It would, perhaps, be presumptuous to affirm, that
in no circumstance whatsoever the public service can
ever require an alienation of part of the public reve-
tues. The scenes that disturb the world are so vari-
ous; empires are exposed to such extraordinary revo-
lutions; the field of events is so extensive; political
interests occasion such amazing changes in public af-
fairs, that it is not within the reach of human wisdom
to foresee and calculate every circumstance. But in
this instance, it is the ordinary conduct of govern-
ments that we are attending to, and not an extraordi-
ary situation, which, in all probability, may never
present itself.

Every state which will not be diverted from the
ruinous course of loans, by such considerations as we
have just been offering, will be the cause of its own
destruction. The facility of acquiring large sums of
money at once, will engage a government in every
kind of unreasonable, rash, and expensive undertaking;
will make it mortgage its future expectations for pre-
rent exigencies, and game with the present stock to ac-
quire future supplies. One loan will bring on another;
and to accelerate the lust, the interest will be more
and more raised.

This irregularity will cause the fruits of industry to
pass into some idle hands. The facility of obtaining
every enjoyment without labour will induce every per-
son of fortune, as well as all vicious and intriguing
men, to resort to the capital; who will bring with
them a train of servants, borrowed from the plough;
of young girls, deprived of their innocence, and pre-
vented from marrying; of persons of both sexes, de-
voted to luxury: all of them the instruments, the vic-
tims, the objects, or the sport, of indolence and volup-
tuounfes.

The seducing attraction of public debts will spread
more and more. When men can reap the fruits of the
earth without labour, every individual will engage in
that species of employment which is at once lucrative
and easy. Proprietors of land, and merchants, will all
become annuitants. Money is converted into paper-
currency, established by the state, because it is more
portable than specie, less subject to alteration from
time, and less liable to the injury of seasons and the
rapacity of the farmers of the revenue. The prefe-
rence given to the representative paper, above the real
specie or commodity, will be injurious to agriculture,
trade, and industry. As the state always expends what
has been wrongfully acquired in an improper manner,
in proportion as its debts increase, the taxes must be
augmented, in order to pay the interest. Thus all the
active and useful classes of society are plundered and
exhausted by the idle, useless class of annuitants. The
increase of taxes raises the price of commodities, and
consequently that of industry. By these means, con-
fumption is lessened; because exportation ceases, as
soon as merchandize is too dear to stand the competi-
tion of other nations. The lands and manufactures
are equally affected.

The inability the state then finds itself in to answer
its engagements forces it to extricate itself by bank-
ruptcy; a method the most destructive of the freedom
of the people, and of the power of the sovereign.
Then the decrees for loans are paid by edicts of re-
duction. Then the oaths of the monarch, and the
rights of the subjects, will be betrayed. Then the
surest basis of all governments, public confidence, will
be irrecoverably lost. Then the fortune of the rich
man is overthrown, and the poor man is deprived of
the fruits of his long-continued labours, which he had
trusted to the treasury, in order to secure a subsis-
tence in his old age. Then the labour and the salaries
are suspended, and the multitude of laborious persons
fall into a kind of palsy, and are reduced to beggary.
Then the manufactures are empty, and the hospitals
are filled, as they are in times of a pestilence. Then
the minds of all men are exasperated against the prince,
while his agents are everywhere loaded with impreca-
tions. Then the feeble man, who can submit to lead a life of misery, is condemned to tears; while he to whom nature has given an impatient and stronger mind, arms himself with a dagger, which he turns ei-
ther against himself or against his fellow-citizen. Then the spirit, the manners, and the health of the inhabi-
tants of the nation are destroyed; the spirit, by de-
position and affliction; the manners, by the necessity of having recourse to resources which are always cri-
minal or dishonest; health, by the same consequn-
ce which would follow a sudden famine. Sovereign mi-
isters, is it possible that the image of such calamity
should be presented to you, without disturbing your tranquillity, or exciting your remorse? If there be a
great Judge who waits for you, how will you dare to appear before him, and what sentence can you possibly
expect from him? Doubt not but that it will be the
same as that which those wretches whom you have
made, and whose sole avenger he was, shall have called
down upon you. Accursed in this world, you will
still be so in the next.

Such is the end of loans; from whence we may judge of the principles upon which they are founded.

After having examined the springs and support of every civilized society, let us take a view of the orna-
ments and decorations of the edifice. These are the
fine arts, and polite literature.

Nature is the model of both the one and the other. To study nature, and to study her with propriety, to
detect her best appearances, to copy her faithfully, to
correct her defects, and to embellish or collect her
marvellous beauties, in order to compose of them one
classical object: these are so many talents infinitely
rare. Some of them may accompany the man of ge-

The fine arts, and belles

O K

XIX.

nus; others may be the result of study, and of the la-

bours of several great men. Sublimity of thought and
expression may prevail, where there is a want of taste.

Imagination and invention may display its powers in a
man who is impetuous and incorrect. Ages pass away,
before there appears an orator, a poet, a painter, of a
flatuary, in whom judgment, which reflects upon its
operations, moderates that ardour which is impatient
of advancing in its career.

It is chiefly utility which hath given birth to litera-
ture, while the fine arts have owed their origin to the
allurements of pleasure.

In Greece they were the offspring of the soil itself.
The Greeks, favoured with the most fortunate climate,
had a scene of nature incessantly before them, replete
with wonderful objects of delight or of horror, rapid
streams, craggy mountains, ancient forests, fertile plains,
agreeable valleys, and delightful lopes; the sea some-
times calm and sometimes agitated; every thing, in a
word, which infuses ardour into the soul, every thing
which awakens sensibility, and extends the imagina-
tion. These people, being scrupulous imitators, co-
pied nature at first, such as they saw her. They soon
adapted a spirit of discrimination to their models. At-
tention to the principal functions of the limbs pointed
out to them their grossest defects, which they corrected.
They afterwards discovered the more trifling imperfec-
tions of a figure, which they likewise altered: and thus
they raised themselves gradually to the conception of
ideal beauty, that is, to the conception of a being, the
existence of which is perhaps possible, though not real,
for nature makes nothing perfect. Nothing is regular
in it, and yet nothing is out of its place. There are
too many causes combined at once in the creation, not
merely of an entire animal, but even of the smallest si-
milar parts of an animal, that we should expect to find
exact symmetry in them. The beautiful of nature con-
stitutes a precise series of imperfections. The whole
may be censured, but in that whole every part is pre-
cisely what it should be. The attentive consideration
of a flower, of the branch of a tree, or of a leaf, are
sufficient to confirm this opinion.

It was by this slow and laborious mode that paint-
ing and sculpture acquired that degree of perfection
which astonishes us, in the Gladiator, the Antinous,
and Venus of Medicis. To these fortunate causes may be added a language harmonious from its origin, a poetry sublime and full of agreeable as well as terrible images, previous to the birth of the arts; the spirit of liberty; the exercise of the fine arts forbidden to slaves; the intercourse of artists with philosophers; their emulation kept up by labours, rewards, and encomiums; the continual view of the human frame in baths and in the Gymnasia, which is a continual lesson for the artist, and the principle of refined taste in the nation; the large and flowing garments which did not deform any part of the body, by pressing and confining it; numberless temples to decorate the statues of the gods and goddesses, and consequently the inestimable value set on beauty, which was to serve as the model; and the custom of consecrating, by monuments, the memorable actions of great men.

Homer had set the example of epic poetry. The Olympic games hastened the progress of lyric poetry, of music, and of tragedy. The concatenation of the arts, one with the other, exerted its influence on architecture. Eloquence assumed dignity and vigour, while it was discussing the public interests.

The Romans, who copied the Greeks in every thing, were inferior to their models, having neither the same gracefulness nor the same originality. In such of their works as were really beautiful, the efforts of an able copyist were frequently observed, a circumstance which was almost unavoidable. If the masterpieces which they had perpetually before them had been destroyed, their genius, left to its own powers and its natural energy, after some trials and after some deviations, would have soared to a very high degree of perfection, and their works would have had that character of truth which they could not possess, when executed partly from nature and partly from the productions of a school, the spirit of which was unknown to them. These originals were to them as were the works of the Creator; they were ignorant of the manner in which they were produced.
A rigid taste, however, presided over all the performances of the Romans. It guided equally their artists and their writers. Their works were either the image or the copy of truth. The genius of invention, and that of execution, never infringed the proper limits. In the midst of profusion and magnificence the graces were distributed with a prudent hand. Every thing that went beyond the beautiful was skilfully re-trenched.

The experience of all nations and of all ages demonstrates, that whatever hath attained to perfection is not long before it degenerates. The revolution is more or less rapid, but always infallible. Among the Romans it was the work of a few ambitious writers, who, despairing to excel, or even equal their predecessors, contrived to open to themselves a new career. To plans closely arranged, to ideas luminous and profound, to images full of dignity, to phrases of great energy, and to expressions suited to every subject, were substituted the spirit of wit, analogies more singular than precise, a continual contrast of words or ideas, a broken and loose style, more striking than natural; in a word, all the faults that are produced from an habitual desire of being brilliant and of pleasing. The arts were drawn into the same vortex; they were carried to excess, too much refined and affected, as eloquence and poetry were. All the productions of genius bore the same mark of degradation.

They emerged from this, but only to fall into one still more fatal. The first men to whom it was given to cultivate the arts, intended to make impressions that should be lively and durable. In order to attain their end with greater certainty, they thought it necessary to enlarge every object. This mistake, which was a necessary consequence of their want of experience, led them to exaggeration. What had been done in the first instance from ignorance, was afterwards revived from flattery. The emperors, who had raised an unlimited power upon the ruins of Roman liberty, would no longer be mere mortals. To gratify this extrava-
gant pride, it was necessary to bestow upon them the attributes of the Divinity. Their images, their statues, and their palaces, no longer appeared in their true proportions, but all of them assumed a colossal magnitude. The nations prostrated themselves before these idols, and incense was burnt upon their altars. The people and the artists seduced the poets, the orators, and the historians, whose persons would have been exposed to insult, and whose writings would have appeared satirical, had they confined themselves within the boundaries of truth, taste, and decency.

Such was the deplorable state of the arts and of letters in the south of Europe, when some barbarous hordes, pouring from the northern regions, annihilated what had been only corrupted. These people, after having covered the country-places with human bones, and after having strewed the provinces with dead bodies, attacked the towns with that fury which was natural to them. They totally demolished several of those superb cities, in which were collected all the most perfect productions of the industry and genius of man in books, pictures, and statues. Such of those precious monuments as had neither been destroyed nor burnt, were either mutilated or devoted to the meanest uses. The little that had escaped the devastation was obscurely buried under heaps of ruins and ashes. Even Rome herself, so often pillaged by ferocious robbers, was at length become their residence. This mistress of nations, so long the terror and the admiration of the universe, was no more than an object of contempt and pity. In the midst of the ruins of the empire, a few unfortunate persons, who had escaped the ravages of the sword or of famine, dragged on a disgraceful existence, the slaves of those savages, to whose name even they were strangers, or whom they had enslaved or trampled under foot.

History has preferred the memory of several war-like people, who, after having subdued enlightened nations, had adopted their customs, their laws, and
their knowledge. At the too fatal period which we
are now describing, they were the vanquished who
basely assimilated themselves to their barbarous con-
querors. The reason of this is, that those mean per-
fsons who submitted to the foreign yoke, had lost a
great deal of the knowledge and of the taste of their
ancestors; and that the small remains of them they
had preserved were not sufficient to enlighten a con-
queror plunged in the grossest ignorance, and who,
from the facility of their conquests, had accustomed
themselves to consider the arts as a frivolous occu-
pation, and as the instrument of servitude.

Before this age of darkness, Christianity had de-
stroyed in Europe the idols of Pagan antiquity, and
had only preserved some of the arts to assist the power
of persuasion, and to favour the preaching of the go-
spel. Instead of a religion embellished with the gay
divinities of Greece and Rome, it had substituted mo-
numents of terror and gloominess, suited to the tragic
events which signalized its birth and its progress. The
Gothic ages have left us some monuments, the bold-
ness and majesty of which still strike the eye amidst
the ruins of taste and elegance. All their temples
were built in the shape of the cross, which was also
placed on the top of them; and they were filled with
crucifixes, and decorated with horrid and gloomy
images, with scaffolds, tortures, martyrs, and execu-
tioners.

What then became of the arts, condemned as they
were to terrify the imagination by continual spectacles
of blood, death, and future punishments? They be-
came as hideous as the models they were formed up-
on; ferocious as the princes and pontiffs that made
use of them; mean and base as those who worshipped
the productions of them; they frightened children
from their very cradles; they aggravated the horrors
of the grave by an eternal perspective of terrible
shades; they spread melancholy over the whole face
of the earth.
At length the period arrived for lessening those scaffoldings of religion and social policy; and this was accomplished by the inhabitants of Greece.

This country is at present barbarous to a great degree. It groans under the yoke of slavery and ignorance. Its climate and some ruins are all it preserves. There is no vestige left of urbanity, emulation, or industry. There are no more enterprises for the public good, no more objects for the productions of genius, no more enthusiasm for the restoration of arts, no more zeal for the recovery of liberty. The glory of Themistocles and of Alcibiades, the talents of Sophocles and Demosthenes, the learning of Lycurgus and of Plato, the policy of Pisistratus and of Pericles, and the labours of Phidias and of Apelles, are all forgotten; every thing hath been destroyed; and a profound darkness covers the region, formerly so productive of miraculous events.

The slaves who walk over the ruins of statues, columns, palaces, temples, and amphitheatres, and who blindly trample to many riches under foot, have lost even the remembrance of the great exploits of which their country was the scene. They have even disfigured the names of the towns and the provinces. They are astonished that the desire of acquiring knowledge should attract into their country learned men and artists. Become insensible to the invaluable remains of their annihilated splendour, they would wish that the same spirit of indifference should be diffused over the whole world. To be allowed to visit this interesting spot, it is necessary to be at great expences, to run great risks, and, beside this, to obtain the protection of government.

These people, though during ten or twelve centuries the interior part of their empire was the prey of civil, religious, and scholastic wars, and though exposed from without to bloody combats, destructive invasions, and continual loffles, still preferred some taste and some knowledge; when the disciples of Mahom-
med, who, armed with the sword and the coran, had subdued with rapidity all the parts of so vast a dominion, seized upon the capital itself.

At this period the fine arts returned with literature from Greece into Italy by the Mediterranean, which maintained the commerce between Asia and Europe. The Hunns, under the name of Goths, had driven them from Rome to Constantinople; and the very same people, under the name of Turks, expelled them again from Constantinople to Rome. That city, defined as it was to rule by force or by stratagem, cultivated and revived the arts, which had been a long time buried in oblivion.

Walls, columns, statues, and vases, were drawn forth from the dust of ages, and from the ruins of Italy, to serve as models of the fine arts at their revival. The genius which prevails over design raised three of the arts at once; I mean architecture, sculpture, and painting. Architecture, in which convenience itself regulated those proportions of symmetry that contribute to give pleasure to the eye; sculpture, which flatters princes, and is the reward of great men; and painting, which perpetuates the remembrance of noble actions, and the examples of mutual tenderness. Italy alone had more superb cities, more magnificent edifices, than all the rest of Europe. Rome, Florence, and Venice, gave rise to three schools of original painters: so much does genius depend upon the imagination, and imagination upon the climate. Had Italy possessed the treasures of Mexico and the productions of Asia, how much more would the arts have been enriched by the discovery of the East and West Indies?

That country, of old so fruitful in heroes, and since in artists, beheld literature, which is the inseparable companion of the arts, flourish a second time. It had been overwhelmed by the barbarism of a latinity corrupted and disfigured by religious enthusiasm. A mixture of Egyptian theology, Grecian philosophy, and
Hebrew poetry; such was the Latin language in the book mouths of monks, who chanted all night, and taught by day things and words they did not understand.

The mythology of the Romans revived in literature the graces of antiquity. The spirit of imitation borrowed them at first indiscriminately. Custom introduced taste in the choice of those rich treasures. The Italian genius, too fertile not to invent, blended its enthusiasm and caprice with the rules and examples of its old masters, and joined even the fictions of fairy land with those of fable. The works of imagination partook of the manners of the age and of the national character. Petrarch had drawn that celestial virgin, Beauty, which served as a model for the heroines of chivalry. Armida was the emblem of the coquetry which reigned in her time in Italy. Ariosto confounded every species of poetry, in a work, which may rather be called the labyrinth of poetry, than a regular poem. That author will stand alone in the history of literature, like the enchanted palaces of his own construction in the deferts.

Letters and arts, after crossing the sea, passed the Alps. In the same manner as the Crusades had brought the oriental romances into Italy, the wars of Charles VIII. and Lewis XII. introduced into France some principles of good literature. Francis I. if he had not been into Italy in order to contend for the Milanesi with Charles V. would never, perhaps, have been ambitious of the title of the Father of letters: but these seeds of knowledge and improvement in the arts were lost in the religious wars. They were recovered again, if I may be allowed the expression, in scenes of war and destruction; and the time came when they were again to revive and flourish. Italy was as much distinguished in the 16th century, as France was in the succeeding one, which by the victories of Lewis XIV. or rather by the genius of the great men that flourished together under his reign, deserves to make an epocha in the history of the fine arts.

In France all the efforts of the human mind were

F f iiij
at once exerted in producing works of genius, as they had before been in Italy. Its powers were displayed in the marble and on the canvas, in public edifices and gardens, as well as in eloquence and poetry. Every thing was submitted to its influence, not only the arts of ingenuity, which are mechanical, and require manual labour, but those also which depend solely on the mind. Every thing bore the stamp of genius. The colours displayed in natural objects enlivened the works of imagination; and the human passions animated the designs of the pencil. Man gave spirit to matter, and body to spirit. But it deserves to be particularly observed that this happened at a time when a passion for glory animated a nation, great and powerful by its situation, and the extent of its empire. The sense of honour which raised it in its own estimation, and which then distinguished it in the eyes of all Europe, was its soul, its instinct, and supplied the place of that liberty which had formerly given rise to the arts of genius in the republics of Athens and of Rome, which had revived them in that of Florence, and compelled them to flourish on the bleak and cloudy borders of the Thames.

What would not genius have effected in France, had it been under the influence of laws only, when its exertions were so great under the dominion of the most absolute of kings? When we see what energy patriotism has given to the English, in spite of the inactivity of their climate, we may judge what it might have produced among the French, where a most mild temperature of season leads a people, naturally sensible and lively, to invention and enjoyment. We may conceive what its effects would have been in a country, where, as in ancient Greece, are to be found men of active and lively genius, fitted for invention, from being warmed by the most powerful and enlivening rays of the sun; where there are men strong and robust in a climate, in which even the cold excites to labour; in which we meet with temperate provinces between north and south; sea-ports, together with na-
vigable rivers; vast plains abounding in corn; hills beded with vineyards and fruits of all sorts; salt pits which may be increased at pleasure; pastures covered with horses; mountains clothed with the finest woods; a country every where peopled with laborious hands, which are the first resources for subsistence; the common materials for the arts, and the superfluities of luxury; in a word, where we meet with the commerce of Athens, the industry of Corinth, the soldiery of Sparta, and the flocks of Arcadia. With all these advantages, which Greece once possessed, France might have carried the fine arts to as great a height as that parent of genius, had she been subject to the same laws, and given a scope to the same exercise of reason and liberty, by which great men, and the rulers of powerful nations, are produced.

Next to the superiority of legislation among modern nations, to raise them to an equality with the ancients in works of genius, there has, perhaps, been wanting only an improvement in language. The Romans, who, like the Greeks, knew the influence of dialect over the manners, had endeavoured to extend their language with their arms; and they had succeeded in causing it to be adopted in all places where they had established their dominion. Almost all Europe spoke Latin, except only a few obscure men, who had taken refuge among inaccessible mountains: but the invasion of the barbarians soon changed the nature of this language. With the harmonious sounds of an idiom polished by genius and by delicate organs, these people, who were warriors and hunters, blended the rude accents and the coarse expressions they brought along with them from their gloomy forests and severe climate. There were soon as many different languages as forms of governments. At the revival of letters, these languages must naturally have acquired a more sublime and a more agreeable pronunciation. This improvement took place but very slowly, because all those who had any talents for writing, disdaining a language destitute of graces, strength,
and amenity, employed in their performances, with greater or less propriety, the language of the ancient Romans.

The Italians were the first who shook off this humilitating yoke. Their language, with harmony, accent, and quantity, is peculiarly adapted to express all the images of poetry, and convey all the delightful impressions of music. These two arts have consecrated this language to the harmony of sound, it being the most proper to express it.

The French language holds the superiority in prose; if it be not the language of the gods, it is, at least, that of reason and of truth. Prose is peculiarly adapted to convince the understanding in philosophical researches. It enlightens the minds of those whom nature has blessed with superior talents, who seem placed between princes and their subjects to instruct and direct mankind. At a period when liberty has no longer her tribunes nor amphitheatres to excite commotions in vast assemblies of the people, a language which spreads itself in books, which is read in all countries, which serves as the common interpreter of all other languages, and as the vehicle of all sorts of ideas; a language ennobled, refined, softened, and above all, settled by the genius of writers and the polish of courts, becomes at length universally prevailing.

The English language has likewise had its poets and its prose-writers, who have gained it the character of energy and boldness, sufficient to render it immortal. May it be learned among all nations who aspire not to be slaves! They will dare to think, act, and govern themselves. It is not the language of words, but of ideas; and the English have none but such as are strong and forcible; they are the first who ever made use of the expression, the majesty of the people, and that alone is sufficient to consecrate a language.

The Spaniards have hitherto properly had neither prose nor verle, though they have a language formed to excel in both. Brilliant and sonorous as pure gold,
is pronunciation is grave and regular like the dances of that nation; it is grand and decent, like the manners of ancient chivalry. This language may claim some distinction, and even acquire a superior degree of perfection, whenever there shall be found in it many such writers as Cervantes and Mariana. When its academy shall have put to silence the inquisition and its universities, that language will raised itself to great ideas, and to sublime truths, to which it is invited by the natural pride of the people who speak it.

Prior to all other living languages is the German, that mother tongue, that original native language of Europe. From thence the English and French too have been formed, by the mixture of the German with the Latin. However, as it seems little calculated to please the eye, or to be pronounced by delicate organs, it has been spoken only by the people, and has been introduced but of late into books. The few writers that have appeared in it, seemed to show that it belonged to a country where the fine arts, poetry, and eloquence, were not destined to flourish. But on a sudden, genius has exerted her powers; and originals, in more than one species of poetry, have appeared rather in considerable numbers sufficient to enter into competition with other nations.

Languages could not be cultivated and refined to a certain degree, but the arts of every kind must at the same time acquire an equal degree of perfection; and indeed the monuments of these arts have so much increased throughout Europe, that the barbarism of succeeding people and of future ages will find it difficult entirely to destroy them.

But as commotions and revolutions are so natural to mankind, there is only wanting some glowing genius, some enthusiasm, to set the world again in flames. The people of the East, or of the North, are still ready to enslave and plunge all Europe into its former darkness. Would not an irruption of Tartars or Africans into Italy, be sufficient to overturn churches and palaces, to
BOOK confound in one general ruin the idols of religion and
the master-pieces of art? And as we are so much at-
tached to these works of luxury, we should have the
less spirit to defend them. A city, which it has cost
two centuries to decorate, is burnt and ravaged in a
single day. Perhaps, with one stroke of his axe, a
Tartar may dash in pieces the statue of Voltaire, that
Pigalle could not finish within the compass of ten
years; and we still labour for immortality; vain atoms
as we are, impelled, the one by the others, into that
obscurety from whence we came. Ye nations, wheth-
er artificers or soldiers, what are ye in the hands of
nature, but the sport of her laws, destined by turns to
set dust in motion, and to reduce the work again to
dust?

But it is by means of the arts that man enjoys his
existence, and survives himself. Ages of ignorance
never emerge from their oblivion. There remains no
more trace of them after their existence, than before
they began to exist. There is no possibility of indi-
cating the place or time of their passage, nor can we
mark on the ground belonging to a barbarous people,
it is here they lived; for they leave not even ruins to
lead us to collect that they have ever existed. It is in-
vention alone that gives man power over matter and
time. The genius of Homer has rendered the Greek
language indelible. Harmony and reason have placed
the eloquence of Cicero above all the sacred orators.
The pontiffs themselves, polished and enlightened by
the information and attractive influence of the arts,
by being admirers and protectors of them, have af-
flicted the human mind to break the chains of super-
stitious. Commerce has hastened the progress of art
by means of the luxury which wealth has diffused.
All the efforts of the mind, and the exertions of ma-
nual labour have been united to embellish and to im-
prove the condition of the human species. Industry
and invention, together with the enjoyments procur-
ed by the New World, have penetrated as far as the
polar circle, and the fine arts are attempting to rife
superior to the obstacles of nature even at Peter-
burg.

Orators, poets, historians, painters, and sculptors, are made to be the friends of great men. Heralds of their fame during their life, they are the eternal pres-
ervers of it when they no longer exist. In rendering their names immortal, they immortalise themselves. It is by these several orders of men, that the nations distinguishe among contemporary nations. The arts, after having rendered them illustrious, also restore wealth to them, when they are become indigent. It is ancient Rome which at present subsists.

modern Rome. Let the people whom they honour, both at the present and at future times, if they be not ungrateful, honour them in their turn. Ye nations, you will pass away, but their productions will remain. The torch of genius, which enlightens you, will be extinguished if you neglect it; and after having walked in darkness for some ages, you will fall in the abyss of oblivion, which hath swallowed up so many nations that have preceded you, not because they have been defective of virtues, but of a sacred voice to celebrate them.

Beware especially of adding persecution to indiffer-
ence. It is certainly enough for a writer to brave the resentment of the intolerant magistrate, of the fanat-
ical spirit, of the suspicious nobleman, and of all ranks of men proud of their prerogatives, without being also exposed to the severities of government. To in-
dict upon a philosopher an infamous or capital punish-
ment, is to condemn him to pusillanimity or to silence: it is to stifle or to banish genius; it is to put a stop to national information, and to the progress of know-
ledge.

It will be said, that these reflections are those of a man who is thoroughly determined to speak without circumlocution of persons and things; of persons, whom one scarce dares to address with frankness; of things, concerning which a writer endowed with a lit-
tle share of sense neither thinks nor expresses himself
as the vulgar, and who yet would wish to escape pro-
scription. This may possibly be the case, and where-
fore should it not be? Nevertheless, whatever may
happen, I will never betray the honourable cause of
liberty. If I experience nothing but misfortunes from
it, which I neither expect nor dread, so much the
worse for the author of those misfortunes. He will be
detested during life, for one instant of my existence
which he shall have disposed of with injustice and vi-
olence. His name will be handed down to future ages
branded with ignominy; and this cruel sentence would
be independent of the small value, or of the little me-
rit of my writings.

Philosophy.
To the train of letters and fine arts philosophy is an-
nexed, which one would imagine ought rather to di-
rect them; but appearing later than they did, can on-
ly be considered as their attendant. Arts arise from
the very necessities of mankind in the earliest state of
the human mind. Letters are the flowers of its youth;
children of the imagination, being themselves fond of
ornament, they decorate every thing they approach;
and this turn for embellishment produces what are pro-
perly called the fine arts, or the arts of luxury and e-
egance, which give the polish to the primary arts of ne-
cessity. It is then we see the winged genii of sculp-
ture fluttering over the porticos of architecture; and
the genii of painting entering palaces, representing the
heavens upon a ceiling, sketching out upon wool and
fibre all the animated scenes of rural life, and tracing to
the mind upon canvas the useful truths of history, as
well as the agreeable chimeras of fable.

When the mind has been employed on the pleasures
of the imagination and of the senses, when governments
have arrived to a degree of maturity, reason arises and
beflows on the nations a certain turn for reflection;
this is the age of philosophy. She advances with gra-
dual steps, and proceeds silently along, announcing
the decline of empires which she attempts in vain to
support. She closed the latter ages of the celebrated
republics of Greece and Rome. Athens had no phi-
sophers till the eve of her ruin, which they seemed to foretel: Cicero and Lucretius did not compose their writings on the nature of the gods, and the system of the world, till the confusion of the civil wars arose, and hastened the destruction of liberty.

Thales, Anaximander, Anaximenes, Anaxagoras, had however laid the foundations of natural philosophy in the theories of the elements of matter; but the age of forming systems successively subverted these several principles. Socrates then appeared, who brought back philosophy to the principles of true wisdom and virtue: it was that alone he loved, practised, and taught, persuaded that morality, and not science, was conducive to the happiness of man. Plato, his disciple, though a natural philosopher, and instructed in the mysteries of nature by his travels into Egypt, ascribed every thing to the soul, and scarce any thing to nature; he confounded philosophy with theological speculations, and the knowledge of the universe with the ideas of the divinity. Aristotle, the disciple of Plato, turned his inquiries less on the nature of the Deity, than on that of man and of animals. His natural history has been transmitted to posterity, though it was held only in moderate estimation by his contemporaries. Epicurus, who lived nearly about the same period, revived the atoms of Democritus; a system, which doubtless balanced that of the four elements of Aristotle: and as these were the two prevailing systems at that time, no improvements were made in natural philosophy. The moral philosophers engaged the attention of the people, who understood their system better than that of the natural philosopher. They established schools; for as soon as opinions gain a degree of reputation, parties are immediately formed to support them.

In these circumstances, Greece, agitated by interior commotions, after having been torn with an intestine war, was subdued by Macedonia, and its government dissolved by the Romans. Then public calamities turned the hearts and understandings of men to mora.
 BOOK XIX.

...lity. Zeno and Democritus, who had been only na-
tural philosophers, became, a considerable time after
their death, the heads of two sects of moral philo-
phers, more addicted to theology than physics, rather
casuists than philosophers; or it might rather be affir-
med, that philosophy was given up and confined entirely
to the sophists. The Romans, who had borrowed ev-
ry thing from the Greeks, made no discoveries in the
true system of philosophy. Among the ancients it
made little progress; because it was entirely confined
to morality: among the moderns, its first steps have
been more fortunate, because they have been guided
by the light of natural knowledge.

We must not reckon the interval of near a thousand
years, during which period philosophy, science, arts,
and letters, were buried in the ruins of the Roman
empire, among the ashes of ancient Italy, and the dust
of the cloisters. In Asia, their monuments were still
preferred, though not attended to; and in Europe,
some fragments of them remained which she did not
know. The world was divided into Christian and Mo-
hammedan, and everywhere covered with the blood of
nations: ignorance alone triumphed under the stand-
ard of the cross or the crescent. Before these dread-
ed signs, every knee was bent, every spirit trembled.

Philosophy continued in a state of infancy, pronounc-
ing only the names of God and of the soul: her at-
tention was solely engaged on matters of which she
should for ever have remained ignorant. Time, argu-
ment, and all her application, were wasted on que-
tions that were, at least, idle; questions, for the most
part, void of sense, not to be defined, and not to be
determined from the nature of their object; and which,
therefore, proved an eternal source of disputes, schisms,
sects, hatred, persecution, and national as well as reli-
gious wars.

In the mean time, the Arabs, after their conquests,
carried away, as it were in triumph, the spoils of ge-
nius and philosophy. Aristotle fell into their hands,
preserved from the ruins of ancient Greece. These de-
tyroiers of empires had some sciences of which they had been the inventors; among which arithmetic is to be numbered. By the knowledge of astronomy and geometry, they discovered the coasts of Africa, which they laid waste, and peopled again; and they were always great proficients in medicine. That science, which has, perhaps, no greater recommendation in its favour, than its affinity with chemistry and natural knowledge, rendered them as celebrated as astrology, which is another support of empirical imposition. Avicenna and Averroës, who were equally skilled in physic, mathematics, and philosophy, preserved the tradition of true science by translations and commentaries. But let us imagine what must become of Aristotle, translated from Greek into Arabic, and after that, from Arabic into Latin, under the hands of monks, who wanted to adapt the philosophy of paganism to the systems of Moses and Christ. This confusion of opinions, ideas, and language, stopped for a considerable time the progress of science, and the reducing of it into a regular system. The divine overturned the materials brought by the philosopher, who sapped the very foundations laid by his rival. However, with a few stones from one, and much sand from the other, some wretched architects raised a strange Gothic monument, called the philosophy of the schools. Continually amended, renewed, and supported, from age to age, by Irish or Spanish metaphysicians, it maintained itself till about the time of the discovery of the New World, which was destined to change the face of the Old one.

Light sprang from the midst of darkness. An English monk applied himself to the practice of chemistry, and paving the way for the invention of gunpowder, which was to bring America into subjection to Europe, opened the avenues of true science by experimental philosophy. Thus philosophy issued out of the cloister, where ignorance remained. When Boccacio had exposed the debauched lives of the regular and secular clergy, Galileo ventured to form conjectures upon the figure of the earth. Superstition was alarmed at it;
BOOK and its clamours, as well as its menaces, were heard: but philosophy tore off the mask from the monster, and rent the vail under which truth had been hidden. The weakness and falsehood of popular opinions was perceived, on which society was then founded; but in order to put an effectual stop to error, it was necessary to be acquainted with the laws of nature, and the causes of her various phenomena: and that was the object philosophy had in view.

As soon as Copernicus was dead, after he had, by the power of reason, conjectured that the sun was in the centre of our world, Galileo arose, and confirmed, by the invention of the telescope, the true system of astronomy, which either had been unknown, or lay in oblivion ever since Pythagoras had conceived it. While Gassendi was reviving the elements of ancient philosophy, or the atoms of Epicurus, Descartes imagined and combined the elements of a new philosophy, or his ingenious and subtle vortexes. Almost about the same time, Toricelli invented, at Florence, the barometer, to determine the weight of the air; Pascal measured the height of the mountains of Auvergne; and Boyle, in England, verified and confirmed the various experiments of both.

Descartes had taught the art of doubting, in order to undeceive the mind previous to instruction. The method of doubting proposed by him was the grand instrument of science, and the most signal service that could be rendered to the human mind under the darkness which surrounded, and the chains which fettered it. Bayle, by applying that method to opinions the best authorized by the sanction of time and power, has made us sensible of its importance.

Chancellor Bacon, a philosopher, but unsuccessful at court, as friar Bacon had been in the cloister, like him the harbinger rather than the establishment of the new philosophy, had protested equally against the prejudices of the senses and the schools, as against those phantoms he styled the idols of the understanding. He had foretold truths he could not discover. In confor-
mity to the result of his reasoning, which might be considered as oracular; while experimental philosophy was discovering facts, rational philosophy was in search of causes. Both contributed to the study of mathematics, which were to guide the efforts of the mind, and insure their success. It was, in fact, the science of algebra applied to geometry, and the application of geometry to natural philosophy, which made Newton conjecture the true system of the world. Upon taking a view of the heavens, he perceived in the fall of bodies to the earth, and in the motions of the heavenly bodies, a certain analogy which implied an universal principle, differing from impulse, the only visible cause of all their movements. From the study of astronomy he next applied himself to that of optics, and this led him to conjecture the origin of light; and the experiments which he made in consequence of this inquiry, reduced it into a system.

At the time when Descartes died, Newton and Leibnitz were but just born, who were to finish, correct, and bring to perfection, what he had begun; that is to say, the establishing of found philosophy. These two men alone greatly contributed to its quick and rapid progress. One carried the knowledge of God and the soul as far as reason could lead it; and the unsuccessfulness of his attempts undeceived the human mind for ever with respect to such false systems of metaphysics. The other extended the principles of natural philosophy and the mathematics much further than the genius of many ages had been able to carry them, and pointed out the road to truth. At the same time, Locke, preceded by Hobbes, a man on whom nature had bestowed an uncommon understanding, and who had remained obscure from the very boldness of his principles, which ought to have had a contrary effect; Locke, I say, attacked scientific prejudices, even into the intrenchments of the schools: he dissipated all those phantoms of the imagination, which Malebranche suffered to spring up again, after he had pointed out...
their absurdity, because he did not attack the foundation on which they were supported.

But we are not to suppose that philosophers alone have discovered and imagined every thing. It is the course of events which has given a certain tendency to the actions and thoughts of mankind. A complication of natural or moral causes, a gradual improvement in politics, joined to the progress of study and of the sciences, a combination of circumstances which it was impossible to hasten as to foresee, must have contributed to the revolution that has prevailed in the understandings of men. Among nations, as among individuals, the body and soul act and react alternately upon each other. Popular opinions infect even philosophers, and philosophers are guides to the people. Galileo had asserted, that as the earth turned round the sun, there must be Antipodes; and Drake proved the fact, by a voyage round the world. The church styled itself universal, and the pope called himself master of the earth: and yet, more than two-thirds of its inhabitants did not so much as know there was any Catholic religion, and particularly that there was a pope. Europeans, who have travelled and trafficked everywhere, taught Europe that one portion of the globe adopted the visionary opinions of Mohammed, and a still larger one lived in the darkness of idolatry, or in the total ignorance and unenlightened state of atheism. Thus philosophy extended the empire of human knowledge, by the discovery of the errors of superstition, and of the truths of nature.

Italy, whose impatient genius penetrated through the obstacles that surrounded it, was the first that founded an academy of natural philosophy. France and England, who were to aggrandize themselves even by their competition, raised at one time two everlasting monuments to the improvement of philosophy: two academies, from whence all the learned men of Europe derive their information, and in which they deposit all their stores of knowledge. From hence
have been brought to light a great number of the mys-
terious points in nature; experiments, phenomena, dis-
coveries in the arts and sciences, the secrets of electri-
city, and the causes of the Aurora Borealis. Hence
have proceeded the instruments and means of purify-
ing air on board of ships, for making sea-water fit to
be drunk, for determining the figure of the earth, and
ascertaining the longitudes; for improving agriculture,
and for producing more grain, with less seed and less
labour.

Aristotle had reigned ten centuries in all the schools
of Europe; and the Christians, after losing the gui-
dance of reason, were able to recover it again only by
following his footsteps. Their implicit attachment to
that philosopher had, for a considerable time, caused
them to err, in blindly following him through the
darkness of theological doctrines. But at length De-
cartes pointed out the way, and Newton supplied the
power of extricating them out of that labyrinth.
Doubt had dissipated prejudices, and the method of
analysis had found out the truth. After the two Ba-
cons, Galileo, Descartes, Hobbes, Locke, and Bayle,
Leibnitz and Newton, after the memoirs of the aca-
demies of Florence and Leipsic, of Paris and London,
there still remained a great work to be composed, in
order to perpetuate the sciences and philosophy. This
work hath now appeared.

This book, which contains all the errors and all the
truths that have issued from the human mind, from the
doctrines of theology to the speculations on infec-
ts; which contains an account of every work of the hands
of men from a ship to a pin; this repository of the in-
telligence of all nations, which would have been more
perfect, had it not been executed in the midst of all
kinds of persecutions and of obstacles; this repository
will, in future ages, characterize that of philosophy,
which, after so many advantages procured to mankind,
ought to be considered as a divinity on earth. It is she
who unites, enlightens, aids, and comforts mankind.
She bestows every thing upon them, without exacting
any worship in return. She requires of them, not the 
sacrifice of their passions, but a reasonable, useful, and 
moderate exercise of all their faculties. Daughter of 
Nature, dispenser of her gifts, interpreter of her rights, 
she consecrates her intelligence and her labour to the 
use of man. She renders him better, that he may be 
happier. She detests only tyranny and imposture, be-
cause they oppress mankind. She does not desire to 
rule; but she exacts of such as govern, to consider 
public happiness as the only source of their enjoyment. 
She avoids contests, and the name of sects; but she 
tolerates them all. The blind and the wicked calum-
niate her; the former are afraid of perceiving their 
errors, and the latter of having them detected. Un-
grateful children, who rebel against a tender mother, 
when she wishes to free them from their errors and 
VICES, which occasion the calamities of mankind!

Light, however, spreads insensibly over a more ex-
tensive horizon. Literature has formed a kind of em-
pire which prepares the way for making Europe be 
considered as one single republican power. In truth, 
if philosophy be ever enabled to infuse itself into 
the minds of sovereigns, or their ministers, the system 
of politics will be improved, and rendered simple. Hu-
manity will be more regarded in all plans; the public 
good will enter into negotiations, not merely as an ex-
pression, but as an object of utility even to kings.

Printing has already made such a progress, that it 
can never be put a stop to in any state, without lowering 
the people, in order to advance the authority of 
government. Books enlighten the body of the peo-
ple, humanize the great, are the delight of the leisure 
hours of the rich, and inform all the classes of society. 
The sciences bring to perfection the different branches 
of political economy. Even the errors of systematical 
persons are dispelled by the productions of the press, 
because reasoning and discussion try them by the test 
of truth.

An intercourse of knowledge is become necessary 
for industry, and literature alone maintains that com-
The reading of a voyage round the world has, perhaps, occasioned more attempts of that kind: for interest alone cannot find the means of enterprise. At present nothing can be cultivated without some study, or without the knowledge that has been handed down and diffused by reading. Princes themselves have not recovered their rights from the usurpations of the clergy, but by the assistance of that knowledge which has undeceived the people with respect to the abuses of all spiritual power.

But it would be the greatest folly of the human mind to have employed all its powers to increase the authority of kings, and to break the several chains that held it in subjection, in order to become the slave of despotism. The same courage that religion inspires to withdraw conscience from the tyranny exercised over opinion, the honest man, the citizen, and friend of the people ought to maintain, to free the nations from the tyranny of such powers as conspire against the liberty of mankind. Woe to that state in which there is not to be found one single defender of the public rights of the nation. The kingdom, with all its riches, its trade, its nobles, and its citizens, must soon fall into unavoidable anarchy. It is the laws that are to save a nation from destruction, and the freedom of writing is to support and preserve laws. But what is the foundation and bulwark of the laws? It is morality.

Attempts have too long been made to degrade man. His detractors have made a monster of him. In their spleen they have loaded him with outrages; the guilty satisfaction of lowering the human species hath alone conducted their gloomy pencils. Who art thou then who darest thus to insult thy fellow-creatures? What place gave thee birth? Is it from the inmost recesses of thy heart that thou hast poured forth so many blasphemies? If thy pride had been less infatuated, or thy disposition less ferocious and barbarous, thou wouldst have seen only in man a being always feeble, often seduced by error, sometimes carried away by

G g iiij
imagination, but produced from the hands of nature with virtuous propensities.

Man is born with the seeds of virtue, although he be not born virtuous. He does not attain to this sublime state till after he hath studied himself, till after he hath become acquainted with his duties, and contracted the habit of fulfilling them. The science which leads to that high degree of perfection is called morality. It is the rule of actions, and, if one may be allowed the expression, the art of virtue. Encouragements and praises are due for all the labours undertaken to remove the calamities which surround us, to increase the number of our enjoyments, to embellish the dream of our life, to exalt, to improve, and to illustrate our species. Eternal blessings upon those who by their studies and by their genius have procured any of these advantages to human nature! But the first crown will be for that wise man whose affecting and enlightened writings will have had a more noble aim, that of making us better.

The hope of obtaining so great a glory hath given rise to useless productions. What a variety of useless and even pernicious books! They are in general the work of priests and their disciples, who, not choosing to see that religion should consider men only in the relation they stand in to the Divinity, made it necessary to look for another ground for the relations they bear to one another. If there be an universal system of morality, it cannot be the effect of a particular cause. It has been the same in past ages, and it will continue the same in future times: it cannot then be grounded on religious opinions, which, ever since the beginning of the world, and from one pole to the other, have continually varied. Greece had vicious deities, the Romans had them likewise: the senseless worshipper of the Fetiches adores rather a devil than a god. Every people made gods for themselves, and gave them such attributes as they chose: to some they ascribed goodnes, to others cruelty, to some immorality, and to others the greatest sanctity and severity of
manner. One would imagine, that every nation in-
tended to deify its own passions and opinions. Not-
withstanding this diversity in religious systems and
modes of worship, all nations have perceived that
men ought to be just; they have all honoured as vir-
tues, goodness, pity, friendship, fidelity, paternal ten-
derness, filial respect, sincerity, gratitude, patriotism;
in a word, all those sentiments which may be con-
dered as so many ties adapted to unite men more
closely to one another. The origin of that uniformity
of judgment, so constant, so general, ought not then
to be looked for in the midst of contradictory and
transient opinions. If the ministers of religion have
appeared to think otherwise, it is because by their sys-
tem they were enabled to regulate all the actions of
mankind, to dispose of their fortunes and command
their wills, and to secure to themselves, in the name
of Heaven, the attributary government of the world.

Their empire was so absolute, that they had suc-
cceeded in establishing that barbarous system of mora-
ity, which placed the only pleasures that make life
supportable in the rank of the greatest crimes; an ab-
ject morality, which imposed the obligation of being
pleased with humiliation and shame; an extravagant
morality, which threatened with the same punishments
both the foibles of love and the most atrocious ac-
tions; a superstitious morality, which enjoined to mur-
der, without compasion, all those who swerved from
the prevailing opinions; a puerile morality, which
founded the most essential duties upon tales equally
digusting and ridiculous; an interested morality,
which admitted no other virtues than those which
were useful to priesthood, nor no other crimes than
those which were contrary to it. If priests had only
encouraged men to observe natural morality by the
hope or the fear of future rewards and punishments,
they would have deserved well of society; but in en-
deavouring to support by violence useful tenets, which
had only been introduced by the mild way of persua-
founder's, compassion, honour, and benevolence, be
principles of morality in the refinements of friendship.
Secret writers have endeavored to place the law
above or communion to intercourse, to
make that of nature, and that of the laws, the
forms most important to them. There are two
parts between individuals, and all law—
life, and of public virtue: Such is the source of the
4
donative virtues: Such is the origin of general duties,
proceeds from nature, honor, and interests man on all
proverbs from nature, honor, and interests which,
when they are equally incident to each individual, with
the necessity of a common opposition against each.
Society, or on a common opposition against the necessity of
rules; a similarity from whence arise the necessity of
force and weak—

Sion: a principle which originated morality from life.
Sion: a principle which originated morality from life.
life, their natural, common, and eternal principle.
life, the principles by which we are governed, and which
we are governed, and which are the object of which is the
morality, is a science, that of which is the
accordingly, at the tribunal of philosophy and

474

4 XIX.

XION. They have removed the veil which concealed the
depth of their ambition: the manner is fallen of

HISTORY OF SETTLMENTS AND TRADE
caufe they found them engraven on the human heart. But did they not also find there hatred, jealousy, re-
venge, pride, and the love of dominion? For what reason, therefore, have they founded morality on the
former principles rather than on the latter? It is be-
cause they have understood that the former were of
general advantage to society, and the others fatal to
it. Those philosophers have perceived the necessity
of morality, they have conceived what it ought to be,
but have not discovered its leading and fundamental
principle. The very sentiments, indeed, which they
adopt as the groundwork of morality, because they
appear to be serviceable to the common good, if left
to themselves, would be very prejudicial to it. How
can we determine to punish the guilty, if we listen on-
ly to the pleas of compassion? How shall we guard
against partiality, if we consult only the dictates of
friendship? How shall we avoid being favourable to
idleness, if we attend only to the sentiments of bene-
volence? All these virtues have their limits, beyond
which they degenerate into vices; and those limits
are settled by the invariable rules of essential justice,
or, which is the same thing, by the common interests
of men united together in society, and the constant
object of that union.

Is it on its own account that valour is ranked am-
ong the number of virtues? No; it is on account
of the service it is of to society. This is evident from
the circumstance of its being punished as a crime in a
man who makes use of it to disturb the public peace.
Wherefore is drunkenness a vice? Because every man
is bound to contribute to the common good; and, to
fulfil that obligation, he must maintain the free exer-
cise of his faculties. Wherefore are certain actions
more blameable in a magistrate or general than in a
private man? Because greater inconveniences result
from them to society.

The obligations of the man separated from society
are unknown to me, since I can neither perceive the
source nor the end of them. As he lives by himself,
he is certainly at liberty to live for himself alone. No being has a right to require succours from him which he does not implore for himself. It is quite the contrary with respect to a person who lives in the social state. He is nothing by himself, and is supported only by what surrounds him. His possessions, his enjoyments, his powers, and even his own existence, all belong entirely to the body of the state: he owes them all to the body politic, of which he is a member.

The misfortunes of society become those of the citizen; he runs the risk of being crushed, whatever part of the edifice may fall down. If he should commit an injustice, he is threatened with a similar one. If he should give himself up to crimes, others may become criminal to his prejudice. He must therefore tend constantly to the general good, since it is upon this prosperity that his own depends.

If one single individual should attend only to his interest, without any concern for those of the public; if he should exempt himself from the common duty, under pretence that the actions of one individual cannot have a determined influence upon the general order, other persons will also be desirous of indulging their personal propensities. Then all the members of the republic will become alternately executioners and victims. Every one will commit and receive injuries, every one will rob and be robbed, every one will strike and receive a blow. A state of warfare will prevail between all sorts of individuals. The state will be ruined, and the citizens will be ruined with the state.

The first men who collected themselves into society were undoubtedly not immediately sensible of these truths. The idea of their strength being most prevalent in them, they were probably desirous of obtaining every thing by the exertion of it. Repeated calamities warned them in process of time of the necessity of forming conventions. Reciprocal obligations increased in proportion as the necessity of them was felt: thus it is that duty began with society. Duty may therefore be defined to be the rigid obli-
gation of doing whatever is suitable to society. It in-
cludes the practice of all the virtues, since there is not
one of them which is not useful to a civilized body;
and it excludes all the vices, because there is not one
which is not prejudicial to it.

It would be reasoning pitifully to imagine, with
some corrupt persons, that men have a right to de-
spise all the virtues, under pretence that they are on-
ly institutions of convenience. Wretch that thou art,
wouldst thou live in a society which cannot subsist with-
out them; wouldst thou enjoy the advantages which
result from them, and wouldst thou think thyself dif-
ferent from practising, or even from holding them in
estimation? What could possibly be the object of them
if they were not connected with man? Would this
great name have been given to acts that were merely
barren? On the contrary, it is their necessity which
constitutes their essence and their merit. Let me once
more repeat, that all morality consists in the mainte-
nance of order. Its principles are steady and uniform,
but the application of them varies sometimes accord-
ing to the climate, and to the local or political situa-
tion of the people. Polygamy is in general more na-
tural to hot than to cold climates. Circumstances,
however, of the times, in opposition to the rule of the
cclimate, may order monogamy in one island of Africa,
and permit polygamy in Kamtschatka, if one be a
means of putting a stop to the excess of population at
Madagascar, and the other of hastening its progress
upon the coasts of the frozen sea. But nothing can
authorize adultery and fornication in those two zones,
when conventions have established the laws of marri-
ge or of property in the use of women.

It is the same thing with respect to all the lands
and to property. What would be a robbery in a state,
where property is justly distributed, becomes subsis-
tence for life in a state where property is in common.
Thus it is that theft and adultery were not permitted
at Sparta; but the public right allowed what would
be considered elsewhere as theft and adultery. It was
not the wife or the property of another person that was then taken, but the wife and the property of all, when the laws granted as a reward to dexterity every advantage it could procure to itself.

It is everywhere known what is just and unjust; but the same ideas are not universally attached to the same actions. In hot countries, where the climate requires no clothing, modesty is not offended by nakedness; but the abuse, whatever it may be, of the intercourse between the sexes, and premature attempts upon virginity, are crimes which must disgust. In India, where every thing conspires to make a virtue even of the act itself of generation, it is a cruelty to put the cow to death which nourishes man with her milk, and to destroy those animals whose life is not prejudicial, nor their death useful, to the human species. The Iroquois, or the Huron, who kill their father with a stroke of a club, rather than expose him to perish of hunger, or upon the pile of the enemy, think they do an act of filial piety in obeying the last wishes of their parent, who asks for death from them as a favour. The means the most opposite in appearance tend all equally to the same end, the maintenance and the prosperity of the body politic.

Such is that universal morality, which, being inherent in the nature of man, is also inherent in the nature of societies; that morality which may vary only in its application, but never in its essence; that morality, in a word, to which all the laws must refer and be subordinate. According to this common rule of all our public and private actions, let us examine whether there ever were, or ever can be, good morals in Europe.

We live under the influence of three codes, the natural, the civil, and the religious code. It is evident, that as long as these three sorts of legislations shall be contradictory to each other, it will be impossible to be virtuous. It will sometimes be necessary to trample upon nature in order to obey social institutions, and to counteract social institutions to conform to the pre-
cepts of religion. The consequence of this will be, that while we are alternately infringing upon these several authorities, we shall respect neither of them, and that we shall neither be men, nor citizens, nor pious persons.

Good morals would therefore require previous reform, which should reduce these codes to identity. Religion ought neither to forbid nor to prescribe anything to us but what is prescribed or forbidden by the civil law; and the civil and religious laws ought to model themselves upon natural law, which hath been, is, and will always be the strongest. From whence it appears, that a true legislator hath not yet existed; that it was neither Moses, nor Solon, nor Numa, nor Mohammed, nor even Confucius; that it is not only in Athens, but also over all the globe, that the best legislation they could receive hath been given to man, not the best which could have been given to them; that in considering only morality, mankind would perhaps be less distant from happiness had they remained in the simple and innocent state of some savages; for nothing is so difficult as to eradicate inveterate and sanctified prejudice. For the architect who draws the plan of a great edifice, an even area is better than one covered with bad materials, heaped upon one another without method and without plan, and unfortunately connected together by the most durable cements of time, of custom, and of the authority of sovereigns and of priests. Then the wise man advances in his work only with timidity; he is exposed to greater risks, and loses more time in demolishing than in constructing.

Since the invasion of the barbarians in this part of the world, almost all governments have had no other foundation than the interest of one single man, or of a single corporate body, to the prejudice of society in general. Founded upon conquest, the effect of superior strength, they have only varied in the mode of keeping the people in subjection. At first war made victims of them, devoted either to the sword of their
enemies or to that of their masters. How many ages have passed away in scenes of blood and in the carnage of nations, that is to say, in the distribution of empires, before the terms of peace had devised that state of intestine war, which is called society or government?

When the feudal government had for ever excluded those who tilled the ground from the right of possessing it; when, by a sacrilegious collusion between the altar and the throne, the authority of God had been enforced by that of the sword; what effect had the morality of the gospel, but to authorize tyranny by the doctrine of passive obedience, but to confirm slavery by a contempt of the sciences; in a word, to add to the terror of the great, that of evil spirits? And what were morals with such laws? What they are at present in Poland, where the people, being without lands and without arms, are left to be massacred by the Russians, or enlisted by the Prussians, and having neither courage nor sentiment, think it is sufficient if they are Christians, and remain neutral between their neighbours and their lords palatine.

To a similar state of anarchy wherein morals had no distinguishing character, nor any degree of stability, succeeded the epidemic fury of the holy wars, by which nations were corrupted and degraded, by communicating to each other the contagion of vices with that of fanaticism. Morals were changed with the change of climate. All the passions were inflamed and heightened between the tombs of Jesus and Mohammed. From Palestine was imported a principle of luxury and ostentation, an inordinate taste for the spices of the East, a romantic spirit which civilized the nobility, without rendering the people more happy, consequently more virtuous: for if there be no happiness without virtue, virtue, on the other hand, will never support itself without a fund of happiness.

About two centuries after Europe had been depopulated by Asiatic expeditions, its transmigration in America happened. This revolution introduced an
universal confusion, and blended the vices and productions of every climate with our own. Neither was any improvement made in the science of morality, because men were then destroyed through avarice, instead of being massacred on account of religion. Those nations which had made the largest acquisitions in the New World, seemed to acquire at the same time all the stupidity, ferocity, and ignorance of the Old. They became the channel through which the vices and diseases of their country were communicated. They were poor and dirty in the midst of their wealth, debauched though surrounded with temples and with priests; they were idle and superstitious with all the sources of commerce, and the facility of acquiring information. But the love of riches likewise corrupted all other nations.

Whether it be war or commerce which introduces great riches into a state, they soon become the object of public ambition. At first men of the greatest power feize upon them: and as riches come into the hands of those who have the management of public affairs, wealth is confounded with honour in the minds of the people; and the virtuous citizen, who aspired to employments only for the sake of glory, aspires, without knowing it, to honour for the sake of advantage. Neither lands nor treasure, any more than conquests, are obtained with any other view but to enjoy them; and riches are enjoyed only for pleasure and the ostentation of luxury. Under these different ideas, they equally corrupt the citizen who possesses them, and the people who are seduced by their attraction. As soon as men labour only from a motive of gain, and not from a regard to their duty, the most advantageous situations are preferred to the most honourable. It is then we see the honour of a profession diverted, obscured, and lost in the paths that lead to wealth.

To the advantage of that false consideration at which riches arrive, are to be added the natural conveniences of opulence, a fresh source of corruption. The man who is in a public situation is deftious of having peo-
ple about him; the honours he receives in public are
not sufficient for him; he wants admirers, either of his
talents, his luxury, or his profusion. If riches be the
means of corruption, by leading to honours, how
much more will they be so, by diffusing a taste for
pleasure! Mifery offers its chastity to sale, and idle-
ness its liberty; the prince sets the magistracy up to
auction, and the magistrates set a price upon justice:
the court sells employments, and placemen sell the
people to the prince, who sells them again to the
neighbouring powers, either in treaties of war, or sub-
сиды; of peace, or exchange of territory. But in this
fordid traffic, introduced by the love of wealth, the
most evident alteration is that which it makes in the
morals of women.

There is no vice which owes its origin to so many
other vices, and which produces a greater number of
them, than the incontinence of a sex, whose true at-
tendant, and most beautiful ornament, is bashfulness
and modesty.

I do not understand by incontinence, the promiscu-
ous of women; the wife Cato advised it in his repub-
lic; nor do I mean a plurality of them, which is the
result of the ardent and voluptuous countries of the
East; neither do I mean the liberty, whether inde-
finite or limited, which custom in different countries,
grants to the sex, of yielding to the desires of several
men. This, among some people, is one of the duties
of hospitality, among others, a means of improving
the human race, and in other places an offering made
to the gods, an act of piety consecrated by religion.
I call incontinence, all intercourse between the two
sexes forbidden by the laws of the state.

Why should this midemeanour, so pardonable in
itself, this action of so little consequence in its nature,
so much confined in the gratification, have so pemi-
cious an influence upon the morals of women? This
is, I believe, a consequence of the importance we
have attached to it. What will be the restraint of a
woman, dishonoured in her own eyes, and in those of
her fellow-citizens? What support will other virtues find in her soul, when nothing can aggravate her shame? The contempt of public opinion, one of the greatest efforts of wisdom, is seldom separated, in a feeble and timid mind, from the contempt of one's self. This degree of heroism cannot exist with a conscience of vice. The woman who no longer respects herself, soon becomes insensible to censure and praise; and without standing in awe of these two respectable phantoms, I know not what will be the rule of her conduct. There remains nothing but the rage of voluptuousness, that can indemnify her for the sacrifice she has made. This she feels, and this she persuades herself of; and thus, free from the constraint of the public consideration, she gives herself up to it without reserve.

Women take their resolution with much more difficulty than men, but when once they have taken it, they are much more determined. A woman never blushes when once she has ceased to blush. What will she not trample upon, when she hath triumphed over virtue? What idea can she have of that dignity, that decency, and that delicacy of sentiment, which, in the days of her innocence, directed and dictated her conversation, constituted her behaviour, and directed her dress? These will be considered only as childishness, as pusillanimity, or as the little intrigue of a pretended innocent person, who has parents to satisfy, and a husband to deceive; but a change of times brings on a change of manners.

To whatever degree of perversity she may have attained, it will not lead her to great enormities. Her weakness deprives her of the boldness to commit atrocious acts; but her habitual hypocrisy, if she hath not entirely thrown off the mask, will cast a tint of falsity upon her whole character. Those things which a man dares to attempt by force, she will attempt and obtain by artifice. A corrupt woman propagates corruption. She propagates it by bad example, by injurious counsels, and sometimes by ridicule. She hath

H h i j
begun by coquetry, which was addressed to all men; the hath continued by gallantry, so volatile in its propensities, that it is more easy to find a woman who hath never had any passions, than to find one who hath only been once impassioned; and at last she reckons as many lovers as she hath acquaintances, whom she recalls, expels, and recalls again, according to the want she hath of them, and to the nature of intrigues of all kinds into which she hath plunged herself. This is what she means by having known how to enjoy her best years, and to avail herself of her charms. It was one of these women, who had entered into the depths of the art, and who declared upon her death-bed, that she regretted only the pains she had taken to deceive the men; and that the most honest among them were the greatest dupes.

Under the influence of such manners, conjugal love is disdained, and that contempt weakens the sentiment of maternal tenderness, if it doth not even extinguish it. The most sacred and the most pleasing duties become troublesome; and when they have been neglected or broken, nature never renews them. The woman who suffers any man but her husband to approach her, hath no more regard for her family, and can be no more respected by them. The ties of blood are slackened; births become uncertain; and the son knows no more his father, nor the father his son.

I will therefore maintain it, that connections of gallantry complete the depravity of manners, and indicate it more strongly than public prostitution. Religion is extinct, when the priest leads a scandalous life; in the same manner virtue hath no asylum, when the sanctuary of marriage is profaned. Bathfulness is under the protection of the timid sex. Who is it that shall blush, when a woman doth not? It is not prostitution which multiplies acts of adultery; it is gallantry which extends prostitution. The ancient moralists, who pitied the unfortunate victims of libertinism, condemned without mercy the infidelity of married women; and not without reason. If we were
to throw all the blame of vice upon the class of common women, other women would not fail soon to take honour to themselves from a limited intercourse, although it would be so much more criminal, as it was more voluntary and more illicit. The honest and virtuous women will no more be distinguished from the women of strong passions; a frivolous disposition will be established between the woman of gallantry and the courtezan; between gratuitous vice, and vice reduced by misery to the necessity of requiring a stipend; and these subtleties will betray a system of depravation. O fortunate and rude times of our forefathers, when there were none but virtuous or bad women; when all who were not virtuous were corrupted; and where an established system of vice was not excused by persevering in it.

But finally, what is the source of those delicate passions, formed by the mind, by sentiment, and by sympathy of character? the manner in which those passions always terminate, shows plainly, that those fine expressions are only employed to shorten the defence and justify the defeat. Equally at the service of revered and dissolute women, they become almost ridiculous.

What is the result of this national gallantry? A premature libertinism, which ruins the health of young men before they are arrived to maturity, and destroys the beauty of the women in the prime of their life; a race of men without information, without strength, and without courage; incapable of serving their country; magistrates destitute of dignity and of principles; a preference of wit to good sense; of pleasures to duty; of politeness to the feelings of humanity; of the art of pleasing to talents, to virtue; men absorbed in self-consideration, substituted to men who are serviceable; offers without reality; innumerable acquaintances, and no friends; mistresses, and no wives; lovers, and no husbands; separations and divorces; children without education; fortunes in disorder; jealous...
mothers, and hysterical women; nervous disorders; peevish old age, and premature death.

It is with difficulty that women of gallantry escape the dangers of the critical period of life. The vexation at the neglect which threatens them, completes the depravation of the blood and of the humours, at a time when the calm which arises from consciousness of an honest life might be salutary. It is dreadful to seek in vain, in one's self, the consolations of virtue, when the calamities of nature surround us.

Let us therefore, talk no more of morality among modern nations; and if we wish to discover the cause of this degradation, let us search for it in its true principle. Gold doth not become the idol of a people, and virtue does not fall into contempt, unless the bad constitution of the government leads on to such a corruption. Unfortunately it will always have this effect, if the government be so constituted, that the temporary interest of a single person, or of a small number, can with impunity prevail over the common and invariable interest of the whole. It will always produce this corruption, if those in whose hands authority is lodged can make an arbitrary use of it; can place themselves above the reach of justice; can make their power administer to plundering, and their plunder to the continuance of abuses occasioned by their power. Good laws are maintained by good morals, but good morals are established by good laws. Men are what government makes them. To modify them, it is always armed with an irresistible force, that of public opinion; and the government will always make use of corruption, when by its nature it is itself corrupt. In a word, the nations of Europe will have good morals when they have good governments. Let us conclude. But let us previously give a rapid sketch of the good and of the evil produced by the discovery of the East and West Indies.

This great event hath improved the construction of ships, navigation, geography, astronomy, medicine, na-
tural history, and some other branches of knowledge; and these advantages have not been attended with any known inconvenience.

It hath procured to some empires vast domains, which have given splendour, power, and wealth, to the states which have founded them. But what expenses have not been lavished to clear, to govern, or to defend these distant possessions? When these colonies shall have acquired that degree of culture, knowledge, and population, which is suitable for them, will they not detach themselves from a country which hath founded its splendour upon their prosperity? We know not at what period this revolution will happen, but it must certainly take place.

Europe is indebted to the New World for a few conveniences and a few luxuries. But before these enjoyments were obtained, were we less healthy, less robust, less intelligent, or less happy? Are these frivolous advantages, so cruelly obtained, so unequally distributed, and so obstinately disputed, worth one drop of that blood which hath been spilt, and which will still be spilt for them? Are they to be compared to the life of a single man? And yet, how many lives have hitherto been destroyed, how many are at present devoted, and how many will not hereafter be sacrificed, to supply chimerical wants, which we shall never be persuaded to get rid of, either by authority or reason.

The voyages undertaken upon all the seas have weakened the principle of national pride; they have inspired civil and religious toleration; they have revived the ties of original fraternity; they have inspired the true principles of an universal system of morality, founded upon the identity of wants, of calamities, of pleasures, and of the analogies common to mankind under every latitude; they have induced the practice of benevolence towards every individual who appeals to it, whatever his manners, his country, his laws, and his religion may be. But at the same time, the minds of men have been turned to lucrative speculation. The
sentiment of glory hath been weakened; riches have been preferred to fame; and every thing which tended to the elevation of mankind hath visibly inclined to decay.

The New World hath multiplied specie amongst us. An earnest desire of obtaining it hath occasioned much exertion upon the face of the globe; but exertion is not happiness. Whose destiny hath been meliorated by gold and silver? Do not the nations who dig them from the bowels of the earth languish in ignorance, superstition, and pride, and all those vices which it is most difficult to eradicate, when they have taken deep root? Have they not lost their agriculture and their manufactures? Their existence, is it not precarious? If an industrious people, proprietors of a fertile soil, should one day reprefent to the other people that they have too long carried on a losing trade with them, and that they will no longer give the thing for the representation, would not this frumentary law be a sentence of death against that region, which hath none but riches of convention, unless the latter, driven by despair, should shut up its mines, in order to open furrows in the ground?

The other powers of Europe may perhaps have acquired no greater advantage from the treasures of America. If the repartition of them hath been equal or proportionate between them, neither of them have decreased in opulence or increased in strength. The analogies which existed in ancient times still exist. Let us suppose that some nations should have acquired a greater quantity of metals than the rival nations, they will either bury them, or throw them into circulation. In the first instance, this is nothing more than the barren property of a superfluous mass of gold. In the second, they will acquire only a temporary superiority, because in a short space of time all vendible commodities will bear a price proportionate to the abundance of the signs which represent them.

Such are then the evils attached even to the advantages which we owe to the discovery of the East and
West Indies. But how many calamities, which cannot be compensated, have not attended the conquest of these regions?

Have the devastators of them lost nothing by depopulating them for a long series of ages? If all the blood that hath been spilt in those countries had been collected into one common reservoir, if the dead bodies had been heaped up in the same plain, would not the blood and the carcases of the Europeans have occupied a great space in it? Hath it been possible speedily to fill up the void which these emigrants had left in their native land, infected with a shameful and cruel poison from the New World, which attacks even the sources of reproduction?

Since the bold attempts of Columbus and of Gama, a spirit of fanaticism, till then unknown, hath been established in our countries, which is that of making discoveries. We have traversed, and still continue to traverse, all the climates from one pole to another, in order to discover some continents to invade, some islands to ravage, and some people to spoil, to subdue, and to massacre. Would not the person who should put an end to this frenzy deserve to be reckoned among the benefactors of mankind?

The sedentary life is the only favourable one to population. The man who travels leaves no politerity behind him. The land forces have created a multitude of persons devoted to celibacy. The naval forces have almost doubled them, with this difference, that the latter are destroyed by illnesses on board of ship, by shipwrecks, by fatigue, by bad food, and by the change of climate. A soldier may return to some of the professions useful to society. A sailor is a sailor forever. When he is discharged from the service, he is of no further use to his country, which is under the necessity of providing an hospital for him.

Long voyages have introduced a new species of anomalous savages: I mean those men who traverse so many countries, and who in the end belong to none; who take wives wherever they find them, and that
from motives of animal necessity; those amphibious creatures, who live upon the surface of the waters; who come on shore only for a moment; to whom every habitable latitude is equal; who have, in reality, neither fathers, mothers, children, brothers, relations, friends, nor fellow-citizens; in whom the most pleasing and the most sacred ties are extinct; who quit their country without regret; who never return to it without being impatient of going out again; and to whom the habit of living upon a dreadful element gives a character of ferociouiness. Their probity is not proof against the crossing of the line; and they acquire riches in exchange for their virtue and their health.

This inextricable thirst of gold hath given birth to the most infamous and the most atrocious of all traffics, that of slaves. Crimes against nature are spoken of, and yet this is not instanced as the most execrable of them. Most of the European nations have been stained with it, and a base motive of interest hath extinguished in their hearts all the sentiments due to our fellow-creatures. But, without these assistances, these countries, the acquisition of which hath cost so dear, would still be uncultivated. Let them then remain fallow, if, in order to cultivate them, it be necessary that man should be reduced to the condition of the brute, in the person of the buyer, of the seller, and of him who is sold.

Shall we not take into our account the complication which the settlements in the East and West Indies have introduced in the machine of government? Before that period, the persons proper to hold the reins of government were infinitely scarce. An administration more embarrased, hath required a more extensive genius, and greater depth of knowledge. The cares of sovereignty, divided between the citizens placed at the foot of the throne, and the subjects settled under the equator, or near the pole, have been insufficient for both the one and the other. Every thing hath fallen into confusion. The several states have languished under the yoke of oppression; and endless wars, or such
as were incessantly renewed, have harassed the globe, and stained it with blood.

Let us stop here, and consider ourselves as existing at the time when America and India were unknown. Let me suppose that I address myself to the most cruel of the Europeans in the following terms: There exist regions which will furnish thee with rich metals, agreeable clothing, and delicious food; but read this history, and behold at what price the discovery is promised to thee. Dost thou wish or not that it should be made? Is it to be imagined that there exists a being infernal enough to answer this question in the affirmative? Let it be remembered, that there will not be a single instant in futurity when my question will not have the same force.

Nations, I have discoursed to you on your dearest interests. I have placed before your eyes the benefits of nature, and the fruits of industry. As ye are too frequently the occasion of your mutual unhappiness, you must have felt how the jealousy of avarice, how pride and ambition, remove far from your common weal the happiness that presents itself to you by peace and commerce. I have recalled that happiness which has been removed from you. The sentiments of my heart have been warmly expressed in favour of all mankind, without distinction of sect or country. Men are all equal in my sight, by the reciprocal relation of the same wants and the same calamities, as they are all equal in the eyes of the Supreme Being through the connection between their weakness and his power. I have not been ignorant that, subject, as ye were, to matters, your destiny must principally depend upon them; and that while I was speaking to you of your calamities, I was cenfuring them for their errors or their crimes. This reflection hath not depressed my courage. I have never conceived, that the sacred respect due to humanity could possibly be irreconcilable with that which is due to those who should be its natural protectors. I have been transported in idea into the councils of the ruling powers. I have spoken
without disguise and without fear, and have no reason to accuse myself of having betrayed the great cause I have ventured to plead. I have informed princes of their duties, and of the rights of the people. I have traced to them the fatal effects of that inhuman power which is guilty of oppression, and of that whose indolence and weakness suffers it. I have sketched all around them portraits of your misfortunes, and they cannot but have been sensibly affected by them. I have warned them, that if they turned their eyes away, those true but dreadful pictures would be engraved on the marble of their tombs, and accuse their ashes, while posterity trampled on them.

But talents are not always equal to our zeal. Undoubtedly I have stood in need of a greater share of that penetration which discovers expedients, and of that eloquence which enforces truth. Sometimes, perhaps, the sentiments of my heart have contributed to raise my genius; but most frequently I have perceived myself overwhelmed with my subject, and conscious of my own inability.

May writers, on whom nature has bestowed greater abilities, complete by their masterpieces what my essays have begun! Under the auspices of philosophy, may there be one day extended, from one extremity of the world to the other, that chain of union and benevolence which ought to connect all civilized people! May they never more carry among savage nations the example of vice and oppression! I do not flatter myself that, at the period of that happy revolution, my name will be still in remembrance. This feeble work, which will have only the merit of having brought forth others better than itself, will doubtless be forgotten. But I shall, at least, be able to say, that I have contributed as much as was in my power to the happiness of my fellow-creatures, and pointed out the way, though perhaps at a distance, to improve their destiny. This agreeable thought will stand me in the stead of glory. It will be the delight of my old age, and the consolation of my latest moments.
INDEX.

N.B. The Roman Numerals refer to the Volume, and the Figures to the Page.

A.

Abenakry, Indians of Nova Scotia, are invadited by the French to ravage the English settlements in New England, v. 346. Absolute monarchs, a succession of wife and good ones, tends to destroy the spirit of a people, i. 306. Abulia, See Nova Scotia. Acapulo, account of the annual galleon which arrives at that port from Manilla, ii. 454. This port described, ib. Acuaba, Trifitan de, seizes the island of Sociotara for the crown of Portugal, i. 97. Aen, one of the most flourishing factories in Asia, before the Portuguese intercepted the navigation of the Red Sea, i. 350. Adventurers, naval, their character, iii. 264. Agans of Candahar, the manners of that people described, i. 348. Their cruel ravages in Persia, ib. Are driven out of Persia by Koulai Khan, 349. Africa, was first visited by the Normans, i. 31. Portuguese expeditions to the western coasts of that continent, ib. Portuguese settlements formed on the coasts, 155. The staple of their trade fixed at Moambique, ib. General view of the situation and extent of this vast continent, iv. 3. Description of Egypt, 4. History of Lybia, 12. Foundation of the states of Algiers, Tunis, and Tripoli, 15. Empire of Morocco, 27. Plan proposed for suppressing the piratical states of Barbary, and civilizing the country, 37. Inquiry into the causes of the black colour of Negroes, 36. Description of Guinea, 44. Account of the Africans on the banks of the Niger, 55, 56. On the Gold-Coast, 57. River Senegal, and its trade, 67, 68. River Gambia, 69. Cape Verd Islands, ib. Sierra Leone, 70. Islands of Currao, 71. River Gabon, 73. Loango, 76. Inquiry into the causes and remedy of the unhealthy parts of the climate on their coasts, 76.

Ager, middle, of Europe characterised, i. 9. Agriculture, abundantly followed in China, i. 315, 316. Is recommended to the people by the example of the emperors, 139, 140.

Revived in France by Charlemagne, ii. 5. The source of commerce is in turn promoted by commerce, vi. 374. Is the spring of population, 375. Ancient Rome ruined by a contempt of, ib. England the first European nation that encouraged agriculture by honours and premiums, 377. Husbandmen oppressed and deplited in France, 378. Cultivation pursued in Germany and other northern nations, 380. Why the most fertile territories produce the least, ib. Pernicious tendency of religious faiths and festivities, ib. The arts of cultivation have not been studied to attentively as other arts, 381. Is the only source of wealth of which a country cannot be deprived by rapine, 383. The welfare of cities dependent upon agriculture, ib. Husbandmen the most deliering of encouragement of any class in the state, 385. A free trade the means of promoting agriculture, 386. Gives birth to the arts, 387. Improves the climate of a country, 399.

Ais la Chapelle, remarks on the peace of, iii. 455, 456. Akbar Maimond, Emperor, his scheme to acquire a knowledge of the religion of the Bramins, i. 45. Reduces Guzarates, ii. 27. Albury, a fort erected there by the Dutch, to carry on a far trade with the Indians, v. 374.

Alémarré, Lord, examination of his conduct at the siege of Havana, iii. 478, 479.

Alberoni, Cardinal, his plan of colonization, ii. 474.

Albuquerque, Alphonso, is invested by the court of Lisbon, with the regulation of their interests in the East Indies, i. 79. Seizes the city of Goa, 80. Takes it again and fortifies it, 81. His bold schemes to destroy the Venetian commerce with India, 93. Reduces and fortifies the city of Ormus in the Persian Gulf, 97. Reduces the city of Malacca 104. His death and character, 109.

Alcaldes, his office in Mexico, iii. 203.

INDEX.

Alexander the Great, causes that facilitated his conquest of India, ii. 190.

Alexandria rendered the mart for eastern commerce under Ptolemy, the successor to Alexander, i. 82. Account of the intended navigable communication between this city and Berenice, ib. Manner of carrying on the trade on its failure, 83. Its commerce transferred to Constan tinople, 55. The harbour of, described, iv. 9.


Amauro, Diego de, his character, iii. 9. Associates with Pizarro in his scheme of subduing Peru, ib. His disputes with him, 32. Is defeated and beheaded by Pizarro, 33.

Amauro the younger, avenges the death of his father, by the massacre of Pizarro and his adherents, iii. 32. His character and brutal proceedings, 34. Is reduced and put to death by Castro, 35.

Aloe, succourine, manner of preparing this drug, i. 90.

Aloes wood, account of that procured from Cochinchina, ii. 55. Utes of, ib.

Amazon, sources and prodigious course of that great river in South America, iii. 300. First discovery of by the Spaniards, 301. Examination into the fabulous stories of a nation of women called Amazonas, 302. Voyage of Pedro Teixeira up the river, 305. Hazardous mission of the Jesuits up that river, 306. Account of the bordering natives, 308.

Ambassadors, why kept resident at the several European courts, vi. 315.

Ambassadores, address of one of the natives of, to the Portuguese on their profliacy, i. 162. Gloves cultivated there under Dutch authority, 197. Dutch account of a conspiracy formed against them by the English, 317. The accusation denied by the English on circumstances, 312.

America, the honour of giving name to this immense region due to Columbus, though capriciously reserved for Velcucius, ii. 371. The prosperity of the natives to an unnatural vice accounted for, 377. The conquests of the Spaniards there greatly facilitated by the women, 378. Conquest of Mexico by Cortez, 382, 383. Conquest of Peru by Pizarro, iii. 9. A philosophical inquiry into the right of establishing colonies in distant countries, 142. Application to the conduct of Europeans in this quarter of the world, 144, 145. Great importation of Negroes into Spanish America, 190, 191. Review of the forms of government established in Spanish America, 203. Ecclesiastical government in Spanish America, 204. Articles proper for Spain to cultivate in the colonies, 246. The colonies ought to be opened to foreigners, 247. Great contraband trade there, 250. Whether the Spanish empire there is permanent or not, 252, 253. Description of the Caribbee Islands, iii. 387. History of the Buccaneers, 411. Peaceable state of, after the peace of Utrecht, 448, 449. Hints for abolishing slavery in America, iv. 126. The northern parts of probably visited by the Norwegians long before the time of Columbus, 254. The population of the British American Islands principally owing to the civil war under Charles I. v. 10. Both the continents of America have been covered by the sea, 292. Reflections on the good and evil which result to Europe from the discovery of the New World, vi. 486.

INDEX.

over from Europe, and are continually in-
creasing, 86. Was destinat of all domestic
animals till stocked with them from Eu-
rope, 87. Supplies England with naval
stores, 89. Abounds with iron mines 91.
American iron allowed to be freely im-
ported into England, 92. The vines there
incapable of making wine, 94. Ineftec-
tual attempts to produce silk in Carolina,
ib. General observations on the popula-
tion of this continent, 95. Review of
the three principal classes of inhabi-
tants, 96. Speech of a Quaker, reproving
the custom of retaining Negroes in slavery,
104. Aggregate number of its white and
black inhabitants, 106. Causes of the ra-
pid population there inquired into, ib.
General character of the inhabitants 108.
The preservation of national distinctions
among the colonists ought to be dropped,
109. No ecclesiastical power allowed in
the British colony governments, ib. The
distinctions among the colony governments,
in Remarks on the imperfections of the
colony constitutions, 112. Their present
government only a reformation of the fe-
dal systern, 116. Inconveniences introdu-
ced by paper currency, 117. Restrictions
imposed on their first rude manufactures,
119. Restrictions on importation and ex-
portation, ib. The British colonies called
upon to contribute to the expenses of
the mother-country, 122. The foundation
of their opposition to this claim stated, 124,
125. Stamp Act imposed on them, 126.
And repealed, ib. Other duties imposed
in its stead, ib. And repealed except in
the article of tea, 131. The port of Boston
shut up, 132. Commencement of the war
with Britain, 136. Arguments employed
to justify the American claim to indepen-
dence, 138, 160. Declaration of indepen-
dence, 167. Allegations in their manifi-
esto, 168. The constitution of their new-
formed government, 170. Progress of
the war with Britain, 173, 174. Why it
was not more vigorously prosecuted on the
part of the new states, 184. A treaty of
alliance concluded with France, 190. The
independence of the American states ac-
nowledged by the court of France, 191.
The mediation of Spain offered between
the contending powers, 201. Spain joins
in the war against Britain, 202. Conduct
of the American states explained, 207.
Probable consequences of their independ-
ency, 208. Innate seeds of dissension a-
mong them, ib. All mankind interested
in the success of their efforts, 209. Re-
view of their territorial possessions, and
their natural productions, 220, 211. Emi-
grators to them not likely to gain much
by removal, 212. Probable extent of their
future population, 213. Exhortation to
them, ib. The discovery of, instrumen-
tal to the decline of the power of the church
of Rome, 222.

American, islands. See Bahama, Bermuda,
Caribbee, &c. islands; and see also the most
considerable of them under their proper
names.

Austrofista are first distinguished in Ger-
mansy by outrageous acts of rebellion,
before they had digested their religious te-
ents into a system, vi. 3. The leading
principles of the sect, ib. Are reduced
to submission, 5. Are sunk into obscurity,
ib.

Analogy, the method of reasoning by, fal-
lacious, iv. 42.

Anamabou, on the gold coast of Africa, the
French driven from thence by the English,
iv. 71.

Anarchy, the consequences of, in a state, iii.
33.

Anhalt, Ferdinand, commands the first Por-
tuguese ships sent to China, i. 113.

Angola, on the coast of Africa, singular cus-
tom remarked there, iv. 77. Account of
the Portuguese settlement of St. Paul de
Loango, 79.

Angria, the pirate, establishes an independ-
ent state, i. 572. How reduced, 573.

Anguilla, the island and its cultivation de-
scribed, v. 33.

Anian, the report circulated concerning the
strait of, found to be fabulous, v. 315.

Anjengo, on the coast of Malabar, account
of the English factory there, i. 361. A-
potrophe to the memory of Eliza Draper,
ib.

Annapolis, in Nova Scotia, built, v. 347.

Annuities for lives, an obstacle to popula-
tion, vi. 409.

Anson, Commodore, cause of the failure of
his South Sea expedition, iii. 256, 454.

Anthropophagy, moral considerations on, iii.
279.

Antigua, first settlement of that island, v.
22. Its present population and produc-
tions, 23. Its military strength and re-
venue, ib. Governor Park killed by the
inhabitants, 24. Jurisdiction of the go-
vernor, 25.

Antilles. See Caribbee Islands.

Antwerp, reflections on its present, compar-
ed with its former state, ii. 192.

Arabia, geographical description of, i. 327.
Its three principal divisions, 328. Its an-
cient inhabitants, ib. Their conquests and
improvements in arts under the influence
of Mohammed, 329. Observations on their

Arabs, the first revivers of commerce in Europe, i. 11. And the refiners of arts and sciences, 12. Were the first who failed over the Atlantic Ocean, 25. Extend themselves over the East Indies, 75. Sciences cultivated by them, vi. 464. Achebanga, the English, under Queen Elizabeth, trade to Macouy, at that port, soon after its discovery, i. 364. Architecture, Gothic, origin and principles of, i. 10.

Arco, Nabob of, his court where kept, i. 392. His connections with the English, 393.

Arceca, a fruit purchased by the Dutch at Ceylon, description of the tree that produces it, with its uses, i. 220. Is used by the Indians with betel, ib.

Aristo, his character, vi. 455.

Aristocracy, the arguments for and against this mode of government stated, vi. 74. 75.

Aristote, his character, vi. 463. Is studied by the Arabs, 404. Is converted by the monks into the father of the philosophy of the schools, 405. Is at length better understood, and found to teach true philosophy, 460.

Aritmetic, invented by the Arabs, vi. 465.

Armada, Spanish, for the conquest of England, brief history of, vi. 335.

Armida, her character, vi. 455.

Armenian merchants, the nature of the trade they carry on at Giombrone, i. 326. At Pegu, 405. In Bengal, 406.

Army, poisoned, the use of, very ancient, iv. 171. Abolished by the laws of war, ib.

Army, standing, the dangers of, how guarded against in the British government, vi. 258.

Arona, description of the tree that produces this dye, iv. 139. Its preparation for use, 140.

Arrack, how made at Batavia, i. 259.

Arts, originally derived from Asia, vi. 388. Introduced into Europe by the Crusaders, ib. Progress of, in the European states, ib. Are favourable to liberty, 390. The complicated nature of the arts exerted in various kinds of manufactures, 391. Are better adapted to republics than to monarchies, 395. Fine, the origin of, 488. Why Greece excelled in them, ib. Why the Romans were inferior to the Greeks in them, 449. Revolutions of, traced, 452. At first driven from Rome, and afterward brought back again by the same people, 454. The splendour of their revival in Italy, ib. Their rapid progress in France, 455. Will not again be easily destroyed, 459. Perpetuate the genius of nations, 461. Lead to philosophy, 462.

Arts and Sciences subject to fashion, iv. 38. 39.

Aja, a geographical description of, i. 32.

Ajfrolade, an instrument partly invented by Prince Henry of Portugal, i. 25.

Ajyrum, or place of protection for criminals, philosophical reflections on, ii. 442. That resulting from professional character, 453.

Atahilpa, Inca of Peru, unsettled state of his government when invaded by Pizarro, iii. 13. His interview with Pizarro, 13. His retinue massacred, and himself taken prisoner, 14. His large offers of ransom, ib. Is barely put to death, 16.

Atala, his vigilant defence of the Portuguese possessions in India against the country powers, i. 167. Reforms the administration of affairs there, 166.

Atlantis, the supposed existence of an ancient island so called, inquired into, i. 25.

Atlantic, the first commercial efforts of, i. 6.

Atlantic Ocean, formerly supposed to be impassable, i. 24. First crossed by the Moors and Arabs, 25.

Audience in Spanish America, the nature of those tribunals, iii. 204.

Aurengzebe reduces the English who had inducted his ships at Bombay, i. 321, 322.

Australia, the coast of, more intent on war and conquest, than on trade and government, ii. 192. The internal resources of the country not adequate to the pride and insolent spirit of the house of, 192. Establishment of an East India Company at Odend, 192. This Company far exceeded to other efforts, 194.

Authority in government, its prejudicial effects, vi. 302.

Auto de Fe, celebrated at Mexico, on account of the loss of a fleet, ii. 416. Reflections on this horrible act of expiation, ib. 417.

Azuors, present state of those islands, iii. 371.
INDEX.

B. Bahar, King of Samarcand, how induced to undertake the conquest of Indoistan, ii. 102. Lays the foundation of the empire of Mogul Tartars, 103. His plan of government, 104.

Bacon, Friar, important confusions that resulted from his experimental discoveries, vi. 466. — Chancellor, his character, vi. 466.

Babana Islands, their situation and number, v. 63. Are settled by Captain Woods Rogers, ib.

Babar, that province the principal place for the cultivation of poppies, and making of opium, i. 406.

Bakaren, in the Persian Gulf, revolutions of that island, i. 358. Is considerable for its pearl fishery, ib.

Babia, the government of, in Brazil, described, iii. 332. Whale fishery there, 334. Culture of tobacco, 335. Amount of the tobacco trade there, 356.

Balambangan, on the island of Borneo, a new English settlement there, destroyed, i. 396.

Balboa, Vasco Nunez de, arrives at the province of Darien, iii. 5. His character, ib. Advances into the mountains, ib. Destroys and disperses the inhabitants, 6. Discovers the Southern Ocean, 7. Is superceded and put to death by Pedrarias, 8.

Ballad of the Dutch expedition to, iii. 254.

Ballad of the Dutch settlement, account of, iii. 256. Their dress and dances, 37.

Batallare, the duties paid in the Sound, by ships passing in or out, iv. 268.

Baltimore, Lord. See Maryland.

Banana, description of that tree, and its fruit, iii. 394.

Bandar Islands, distinguished as the only places which produce nutmegs, i. 198. Are barren in every other respect, 199. The original inhabitants exterminated, and now peopled by white men, 299.

Bande, a Portuguese settlement on the river Ganges, its present forlorn state, i. 413.

Banian, the trade of Mocha carried on by a succession of that class of people, i. 341. Are the principal merchants of Surat, ii. 29. Their mode of dealing, ib. Their women, 30.

Bantan, how the Dutch acquired the exclusive trade with that kingdom, i. 247.


Barbary, the ancient Lybia, review of the history of this country, 192. Is subject by the Saracens, 193. By the Turks, 195. Foundation of the states of Algiers, Tunis, and Tripoli, ib. Empire of Morocco, 27. Origin of these piratical states, 31. Means for suppressing them, 33. And civilizing the natives, 34.

Barkuda, description of that island, v. 32. The purposes for which it is cultivated, 33.

Bark, Peruvian, description of the tree that produces it, iii. 80. Three species or varieties of, 81. The virtues of, when first published, 82. Is supposed to have been anciently used in fevers by the natives of Peru, ib.

Baroque, under the feudal system of government, their character, i. 17.

Bartholomew, St. account of that island, iv. 354, 353.

Barfona, the city, inhabitants, and trade of, described, i. 349. The various commodities imported and exported there, 351. Ill treatment of the Dutch there, how retaliated, 353.

Bataavia, the capital of all the Dutch East India settlements, described, i. 251. Causes of its unwholesomeness, 252. Expedients of the inhabitants to rectify the infectious qualities of the air, 253. The diversity of its inhabitants, 254. Their luxury, 255. The nature of the intercourse between this city and the other Dutch settlements, 257. Intercourse with China, ib. Trade carried on with other nations, 258, 259. Revenue and government of, 260. Is easy to be taken by any invader, 287.

Batte, settle in, and give name to Bataavia, i. 172. Are particularly distinguished by Julius Caesar, 173. Are overrun by the Franks, 174. Their country obtains the name of Holland, 175. For the continuation of their history, see Holland, and Dutch.

Bear of Canada described, v. 167.


Bees carried over from Europe to North America, where they are continually increasing, vi. 86.

Beggars encouraged by public charities, iv. 191.

Belem, the capital of the government of Para in Brazil, account of, iii. 247.

Vol. VI.
INDEX.

Bencoolen, on the island of Sumatra, a settlement formed there by the English, i. 395. Fort Marlborough built, and a trade for pepper established, ib.

Bengal, boundaries and description of that province, i. 397. Its revolutions and present government, ib. Is the richest and most populous province in the Mogul empire, 457. Trade carried on with the neighbouring provinces, 453. Its trade in salt, and in silk particularly, 454. All foreign commerce engrossed by the Europeans, ib. Exports of, 472, 473. Cruel treatment of the English at Calcutta, by the Soubah, 472, 473. Rapid successes of the English under Admiral Watson and Colonel Clive, 473. They obtain a formal grant of the sovereignty over the whole province, 456. The old form of government adhered to under English influence, 'ib. The English empire over, precarious, 458. Their administration there corrupted, 457. Commercial oppressions exerted over the province, 452. Frauds practised with the coin of the country, 454. Terrible famine there, 455. A fourth part of the inhabitants die, 457. Present circumstances of the French there, ii. 455.

Benguela, St. Philip des, on the coast of Africa, a Portuguese settlement, account of, iv. 790.

Bensoin, gum, where found, i. 277.

Beccar's, in Egypt, its harbour described, iv. 10.

Berbice, boundaries and extent of this settlement, iv. 255. History of, 236. Produce and trade of the country, 238.

Berkeley, Governor of Virginia, protects the refuge royalists there, vii. 38.

Bermudas Islands, first discovery and settlement of, v. 65. General description of, 66. Are distinguished by the manufacture of silk-cloth and cedar-built ships, 67. A society formed there for the promotion of agriculture and mechanical arts, ib.

Bessa, Captain, his engagement with the Portuguese fleet at Surat, i. 313.

Betz, a description of this plant, and its use among the Indians, i. 221.

Beys of Egypt, their promotion and authority described, iv. 8.

Biloxi, in Louisiana, description of that district, v. 200. A large colony left there to destruction by the famous Millipedi Company, 203.

Birds, doubts suggested as to the nature of their language, i. 270. Needs, why an article of East India trade, 258.

Bisnagar, causes of the decline of the empire of, i. 374.

Bisbon, the nature and properties of this ani-

mal well calculated for the use of the Caribbee islands, iv. 12.

Bissenpou, a district in the province of Bengal, the primitive system of Indian government and manners preferred there unadulterated, i. 398. Natural strength of the country against invasion, 399. Liberty and property sacred there, and beneficence to strangers universal, ib. 400. The reality of this beautiful character doubtful, after all that has been said, 402.

Bombay, the island described, i. 377. The unwholesomeness of the climate corrected by the English, 378. Number and industry of the inhabitants, ib. Its present improvements and commercial intercourse, 379. Its revenue, ib.

Bones of China, how restrained from propagating superstition, i. 146.

Borax, the nature and uses of this mineral, i. 412.

Borneo, general account of that island, and ill success of the Portuguese in their attempts to settle on it, i. 209. A trade for pepper established there by the Dutch, ib. A new English settlement at Balamangan destroyed, 356.

Boefbouwer, a Dutch factor, becomes prime minister to the king of Ceylon, ii. 176. Engages the Danes in a trading voyage to that island, and dies, ib.

Boston, the capital of New England, described, v. 572. The harbour, 573. The port flung up, for riots on account of the tea tax, vi. 132.

Bourbon, the island of, settled by the French, ii. 93. Present state of, 153.

Bourdonnais is sent by the French government to improve the Isle of France, ii. 93. His great naval abilities and experience, 94. His judicious regulations for the support of the colony, ib. His scheme to secure the sovereignty of the Indian seas, 97. Takes Madras, 98. Returns to Europe, and is imprisoned, 99.

Boyle, Mr. curious reason given by him for preaching Christianity to savages, iii. 459.

Bradstock, General, account of his unfortunate expedition to Fort Duquesne, v. 263.

Brams, the legislator of Indostan, mythological account of him, i. 42. His institutions, 56. Remarks on his policy, 67. His religion divided into numerous sects, 73.

Bramius, instance of the inviolable secrecy they preserve with regard to their religious tenets, i. 40. Communicate them to Mr. Hastings, the British governor-general of Bengal, 41. Summary of their religious principles, 42. Foundation of the distinction of castes, 44. Their chronological account of the ages of the world, 45. Their
INDEX.

language, ib. Civil law, 47. Character- 

istics, remarks on their doctrines and pol- 

cy, 55. The different orders of, 57. Are 

addicted to metaphysical controversies, ib. 

58. Account of the ancient Brahmans, 

from whom they are descended, 55. 

Brandy, inordinate love of the North Ame-

ricans for, and its pernicious effects 

on them, v. 181. 

Brazil, first discovery of, and its boundaries, 

i. 265. How it obtained its present name, 

266. Is despised, and made a receptacle 

for felons, 268. Grants in, made to Por-

tuguese noblemen, 270. Manners and cus-

toms of the natives, 272. Were destitute 

of religion, 273. Summary method of pu-

nishing murder there, 274. Their mar-

riages and women, ib. Their hospita-

lity, 275. Their motives to war, 278. 

Their treatment of prisoners, ib. Are ci-

7ilized by the Jesuits, 280. Attempts 

made by the French to found settlements, 

283. Dialogue between a Brazilian and a 

Frenchman, 284. Incurion of the Dutch, 

286. Fernambucca taken, 288. The whole 

coast reduced by Prince Maurice, ib. Af-

fairs of, under the Dutch administration, 

296. A conspiracy formed against the 

Dutch, 297. They are expelled, 299. Hi-

story of the trade of this province, 314. 

The trade subjected to a monopoly, 317. 

Civil, military, and religious government 

of Brazil, ib. Condition of the Negro 

slaves there, 320. Historical view of the 

situation of the Indian natives, 321. The 

natives declared free citizens, 322. This 

emancipation little attended to, 324. De-

scription of the government of Para, 325. 


Of Bahia, 332. Account of the whale 

fishery, 334. Culture and trade of tobacco, 


Island of St. Catharine, 340. Town of St. 

Paul, 342. Three interior governments, 

344. The gold mines, 345. Diamonds 

discovered there, 344. Regulations imposed 

on the search of, and trade with, ib. 

In what state they are found, 356. Other 

gems found, 357. Other mines neglected, 

ib. Impostions by which this province is 

depressed, ib. Commercial intercourse of, 

with other countries, 358. With Africa, 

359. With Madeira, ib. Improvements 

recommended in this colony, 374. Amount 

of the population there, 377. The province 

might be improved by receiving foreigners, 

ib. But the Inquisition must then be abo-

dlied, 378. 

Brazil wood, description of the tree that pro-

duces it, iii. 330, 331. The trade of this 

wood monopolized, ib.

Bread tree of the Marianne Islands described, 

ii. 456. 

Breezes, land and sea, in the Caribbee Islands, 

described, with their causes, iii. 397. 

Brittish Islands, anciently traded to by the 

Phoenicians, Carthaginians, and Gauls, i. 

298. Why the natives were not much im-

proved under the dominion of the Romans, 

399. Are afterwards ravaged by a success-

ion of northern invaders, 300. See Eng-

land. 

Brunswich, the only port of North Carolina, 

vi. 58. 

Buccaneers, who, derivation of their name, 

and their plan of association, iii. 411. Their 

dress and employments, 412. Are harassed 

by the Spaniards, 413. Are reduced to 

cultivate their lands for subsistence, 414. 

Receive a governor from France, ib. Their 

manner of addressing the women lente them, 

ib. Narrative of some of their remarkable 

exploits against the Spaniards, 420. Their 

riotous course of life, 423. History of some 

of the most distinguished Buccaneers, 424. 

Remarks on this singular community of 

plunderers, 441. 

Budista, a Japanese fect, their tenets, i. 

152. 

Buenos Ayres, the foundation of that town 

laid by Mendoza, iii. 160. Is rebuilt, 161. 

The province of, separated from Paraguay, 

164. Description of the town and inhabi-

tants, 165. Great trade carried on by the 

isle of frutes, 168. Its intercourse with 

Paraguay, how conducted, 169. A packet-

boat and post established, 170. 

Buffalo described, iv. 134. Recommended 

for propagation in the Caribbee Islands, 

135. 

Buffon, a character of his Natural History, 

iv. 431. 

Bygum, General, his daring expedition 

from Canada, through the interior parts of 

North America, to New York, vi. 173. Is 

reduced by General Gates at Saratoga, ib. 

Burial of the living with the dead, a prac-

tice probably derived from the doctrine of 

the resurrection, i. 68. 

Burning of living wives with their dead 

husbands, in India, a practice founded in 

their civil code, i. 52, 69. 

Buffet. M. establishes Salbat Jsv in the go-

vernment of the Deccan, ii. 119. 

Bying, Admiral, remarks on his execution, iii. 

465, 466. 

C. 

Caban, Sebastian, discovers the river Platas, 

iii. 159. 

Cabeo, Alvares, his expedition to the East 

I i i j
Indies, i. 78. Was the first discoverer of Brazil, iii. 264.

Cacao tree described, iii. 53. Method of gathering the nuts, and preparing the kernels for making chocolate, 54. Culture of the tree, and where chiefly propagated, 55.

Calcutta, the principal English settlement in Bengal, described, i. 410. Cruel treatment of the English there by the Soubah, 122, 123.

Calicut, formerly the richest staple of the East, i. 76. Is discovered by Vasco de Gama, 77. Arrival and transactions of Alvarez Cabral, 78. The government of that country described, 365.

California, the gulf and coast of, explored in 1746, by the Jesuit Ferdinand Conflan, ii. 422. This peninsula described, 424. Its climate and produce, ib. Account of the inhabitants, 425. An unsuccessful expedition undertaken by Cortez to this country, 426. The natives civilized by the Jesuits, ib. The Jesuits expelled by the Spaniards, 471.

Callos, the port of, destroyed by an earthquake and inundation, iii. 147.

Camel, how educated and treated in Arabia, and its qualities described, i. 333.

Camphor is produced in the northern parts of the island of Sumatra, i. 211. Botanical description of the tree which produces it, 212. How the camphor is extracted, with its properties, ib.

Campeachy, the logwood there superior to that in the gulf of Honduras, ii. 485.

Canada, or New France, general description of the country, as it appeared at the first settlement of it, v. 121. Character and manners of the original natives, 122. Their languages, 126. Their modes of government, 127. Their disposition toward Europeans, 129. Their marriages, and treatment of their women, 131. The reason of their not increasing in numbers inquired into, 132. Their affection for their children, 135. Their warmth of friendship, 136. Their fongs and dances, 137. Their propensity to gaming, 138. Their religious notions, 139. Their wars, 141. Their method of choosing a chief to command them, 142. Their military harangues, 143. Their weapons, 144. Their sagacity in circumventing their enemies, 145. Their treatment of prisoners, 146. Account of the war between the Iroquos and Algonquins, 151. Gaule of the small progress made by the French in settling this country, 154. The colony reinforced by troops, to protect the settlers against the savages, 157. Account of the fur trade carried on with the Indians, and description of the various animals hunted for their skins, 162.


Cavara, on the confines of Malabar, causes of the decline of that country, i. 371.

Caynary Islands described, ii. 356. Why Problem fixed the first meridian there, 357. Are feized by Bethencourt, ib. Their productions, 358. Number of their inhabitants, ib. Their trade, 359. The inhabitants how depressed, ib.

Candleberry myrtle, description of this tree, and its fruit, vi. 83. Its uses, ib.

Canton, the harbour of, described, with the nature of the intercourse carried on there between Europeans and the Chinese, ii. 279.

Cape Breton the settlement of, by the French opposed by the English, v. 187. The
INDEX.

relinquished the intention of conquering them, 406. St. Christopher's settled by the English and French, ib. Partition of the other islands between the English and French, 411. The native Caribs collected in Dominica and St. Vincent's, ib. Origin and history of the Buccaneers, ib. These islands cannot thrive in time of war, 449. Motives that led to the scheme of cultivating them by Negro slaves, iv. 1. Remarks on the soil of these islands, 120. A general use of the plough recommended in them, 130. How to provide manure for them, 132. Management of cattle there, ib. How the degeneracy of European animals might be prevented, 133. The bison and buffalo recommended for propagation there, 134. Vegetable productions common there, 136. Principal articles of cultivation for commerce, 139. Sugar the principal article of exportation from these islands, 151. Europeans degenerate there no less than other animals, 152. Description and character of the Creoles, 154. General character of the inhabitants of these islands, ib. The women, 155. Distinction between the black and red Caribs, 82. Origin of the flat-headed Caribs, 83. General character and review of the circumstances of the British islands, 99. Summary view of the riches which Europe derives from the possession and cultivation of these islands, 106. Extensive operations of the trade with them, 107. Anticipation of their future destiny, 169. A navy the only security for the possession of these islands, 111. See these islands under their respective names.

Carnatic, contests between the English and French about the appointment of a nabob, ii. 120.

Carolina, discovered by the Spaniards, but neglected, vi. 48. Is granted by Charles II. to certain proprietors, ib. A plan of government for, drawn up by Mr. Locke, 49. Remarks on this plan, 50. The province bought out of the hands of the proprietors, and its government regulated, 52. Is divided into North and South Carolina 53. Description of the country and i i
INDEX.

climate, ib. North Carolina, and its inhabitants, ib. Present number of the people, 54. Is chiefly peopled by Scots Highlanders, ib. Their first employments, 57. Brunswick the only port on the coast, 58. Rice and indigo the chief productions of South Carolina, ib. Number of inhabitants in South Carolina, and the amount of their exports, 60. Their ostentatious funerals, and purchased eulogiums on the dead, ib. Towns in South Carolina, 61. Present state of the two Carolinas, 62. Inefficacious attempts to produce silk there, 94, 95.

Carthage, its advantage over Tyre, its mother, 36, 118. Cause of its subversion, ib. Extended its trade to Britain, 298.

Carthage, province of, in America, described, and its productions, iii, 44. History of, since its discovery by the Spaniards, 45. The capital city of, and its inhabitants, described, ib. Unwholesomeness of the climate, 46. Account of the harbour, 48. Trade carried on there by the galleons, 49.

Cartier, James, a Frenchman, first sails up the river St. Lawrence in North America, v, 120.

Cardinal, the confidant of Gonzales Pizarro, his character and death, iii, 40.

Cañas, Bartholomeu de Las, his benevolent character and conduct, iii, 62. His plan for a colony, ib. Obtains the district of Cararca to carry it into execution, 63. Causes of his ill success, ib. His zealous solicitations in favour of the native Indians, 106.

Caspian Sea, a philosophical account of, i, 39. Ancestry of the track of communication between Europe and Asia, ii, 254. Motives that induced the English to attempt a passage to Persia by this sea, 255. Projected canal to connect this with the Euxine Sea, 262.

Cassava, a dangerous article of food, iv, 100.

Cassir signea, the tree described, and the qualities of the bark, i, 369.

Cassimbercar, the general market for Bengal silk, i, 413.

Caste, Indian, foundation of those distinctions, i, 43, 63.

Castro, Don Juan de, the Portuguese viceroy in India, his character and wife administration, i, 159. Raisies the siege of Diu, 163. His triumphal return to Goa, ib.

Castro, Valce di, is sent out from Spain to regulate the administration of affairs in Peru, iii, 35. Reduces, and puts to death Almagro the younger, ib.

Catherine, St. island of, in the government of Rio Janeiro, described, iii, 340. Becomes a nest of pirates, 341. Who have at length submitted to an orderly government, 342.

Catherine II. Empress of Russia, the wife and politic principles of her government, ii, 270. Examination of the measures taken by her to civilize her subjects, vi, 241.

Cato the Elder, the first subverter of the liberty of ancient Rome, vi, 209.

Cayenne, the island of, settled by some French adventurers, iv, 286. Revolutions of, 288. Description of, ib. Its productions and trade, 289. Is not in a prosperous state, 308. Amount of its exports to France, 400.

Chyae, the town of, in St. Domingo, described, iv, 380. Improvements suggested for this town, 381.

Caylus, Count, attributes the invention of porcelain to the ancient Egyptians, ii, 284.

Celebes, description of that island and its inhabitants, i, 284. Conduct of the king on the arrival of Christian and Mahometan missionaries, 206. The dominion of the island seized by the Dutch, 208. Their motive for retaining it, 209.

Celebry, clerical, a great obstacle to population, vi, 417.

Ceylon, the island, government and inhabitants described, i, 98. The Dutch affit the king of Candy to drive out the Portuguese, 213. The various productions of that island, 219. Revenue and customs of, 224. The terms to which the Dutch have reduced the king of Candy, 225. Hints of policy recommended to the Dutch for improving their settlements there, 226.

Chao, in South America, extent of that province, iii, 164. Its rivers and inhabitants, 164.

Chandernagore, a French settlement in Bengal, described, i, 410. Its great improvements under the government of Duplex, ii, 96.

Chapetons in Spanish America, who, iii, 189.

Charities, public, reflections on the abuse of, iv, 397.

Charlemagne, his contests with the Normans and Arabs, i, 11. Revives a spirit of industry and trade in his subjects, i, 5. His empire diminished, 6.

Charles I. of England succeeds to his father's contests with his subjects on prerogative, v, 7. Review of the civil war between him and his parliament, 9. Promotes the episcopal splendour of the clergy, 257. Attempts the establishment of prelacy in Scotland, 288.

Charles II. King of England, his character, and injudicious conduct toward his East India Company, i, 320.

Charles V. Emperor, his rivalry with Fraq-
cis I. the origin of the present system of
European policy, vi. 306. Compared with
Lewis XIV. 308.

Charles VII. of France, the first who retain-
ed a standing army, vi. 322. Ought to
have been attacked by all the princes in
Europe for this innovation, 373.

Charles XI. King of Sweden, his character
and administration of government, ii. 214.

Charleston, South Carolina, described, vi. 61.

Chattagrin, on the coast of Bengal, described,
ii. 246. An exchange of, for Chendernagore,
recommending to the French and
English, 147.

Cheribon, in the island of Java, view of the
profitable trade carried on by the Dutch
with that state, i. 247, 248.

Chezy, general description of, vi. 34.

Ceylon, the financiers of Indostan, an account
of, i. 428.

Chilca de los Indios, a city in Mexico, charac-
ter of its inhabitants, ii. 475.

Chica, a Peruvian liquor, how made, iii. 104.

Chickefau, native Indians of Louisiana, ac-
count of, and their war with the French,
v. 216.

Child, Sir Jofias, inquisitive conduct of him
and his brother toward the English East
India Company, i. 324.

Child-birth, why the consequences of, not so
bad among savages as in civilized society,
iii. 274.

Chili, extent and situation of, iii. 145. Is
first penetrated by Almagro, ib. Who is
followed by Valdivia, 146. Valdivia and
his men cut off, 147. Continual hostilities
between the natives and the Spaniards, ib.
Manners of the natives, ib. Their anti-
gathy to the Spaniards, 148. Settlements
formed by the Spaniards in the country,
149. Serenity of the climate, and fertility
of the soil, 152. Revenues derived from,
ib. Trade of, 153. Its intercourse with
Peru and Paraguay, 156. How deprived
of an immediate connection with Spain,
157. Free trade now allowed with Spain,
ib.

Chiloe, the islands of, settled, and the natives
civilized, by the Jesuits, iii. 150.

China, the first knowledge of, communicated
to Europe by Mark Paul the Venetian,
i. 113. Arrival of an ambassador from Por-
tugal there, ib. Contrary characters given
of their country, and first by the admirers
of it, 114. Its circuit, ib. Indefatigable
industry of the inhabitants, 115. Their
attention to agriculture, ib. 116. Agri-
culture recommended to the people by the
example of the emperor, 118. Liberty of
the political institutions, 119. Taxes,

The emperor cautious of a wanton exercis-
e of authority, ib. His government pa-
trarchal, 123. Paternal affection, and fil-
lial affection, the springs of the empire, ib.
Nobility not hereditary, 124. Nature of
the title of Mandarin, 125. All officers of
state chosen from the order of Mandarins,
ib. Principles taught by Confucius, 126.
Foundation of the national religion, 127.
Manner of educating children, ib. Char-
acter of the natives, 128. Are strongly
actuated by a spirit of patriotism, 129.
Are recovering from the influence of their
Tartarian government, ib. The spirit of
invention among them, now stifled, 130.
The low state of learning and arts among
them accounted for, ib. The character of
the Chinee as given by those who judge
unfavourably of them, 131. Their laws
not proved to be wise by being adopted
by their Tartar conquerors, 132. Its pop-
pulation, to what owing, 133. Usual with
parents to destroy their children, 134. The
moral of the people depriveted, ib. Their
cruelty, 135. Despotism of the govern-
ment, ib. Their mode of educating chil-
dren shifurd, 140. Are fraudulent in their
dealings, 141. The population of the
country a calamity, 144. Their religious
toleration partial, 145. The accounts
given of the Chinee hyperbolical and incon-
sistent, 146. Conclusions from the whole,
147. Factories established by the Portu-
guese, 149. The island of Macao granted
to the Portuguese, ib. Intercourse between
the Chinese and Batavia, 157. Account of
the great wall of China, ii. 249. The in-
dustry and fraudulent disposition of the
Chinese referred to their country being
too populous, 275. Expedients of the go-
vernment to furnish current coin, ib. Their
trade with Corea, and with the Tartars,
276. Their great fondness for the root
ginseng, ib. Their trade with Japan, and
other eastern nations, 277. Remarks on
their contempt for other nations, 278.
Their trade with Europeans limited to the
port of Canton, 279. Description, culture,
and varieties of the tea plant, 280. The
antiquity of this empire compared with
that of Egypt, 284. A particular account
of the manufacture, and different kinds of
porcelain, ib. Chinese account of the dis-
cover of silk, 293. Their silk superior to
that produced in Europe, 295. The two
principal kinds of, brought over, ib. Ex-
cellence and defects of their silk manufactu-
tures, 296. Natural biliary of the Chinese
varnish, 297. How used, 298. Its prop-
erties, 299. Their paper, 300. Their
drawing and painting, 301. Their sculpt-
ures, 311.
ture and models, 302. Character of their rhubarb, 305. Inquiry into the gold and silver trade with, ib. Their treatment of the Portuguese at Macao, 306. Present state of their intercourse with the Dutch, 307. Their trade with the English, 308. With France, ib. With the Danes and Swedes, 309. Summary view of the amount of their commercial dealings with Europeans, ib. General remarks on, 310. Political inquiry into the merits of the trade with China, and into the proper mode of conducting it, 311.

Chivalry, reflections on the tendency of the spirit of, i. 110.

Chocolate, description of the tree and the nuts from which it is made, iii. 53.

Christianity, causes which favoured the reception of, among the Romans, vi. 216. Sources of its corruption, 218. Leading causes of the Reformation, 219. Requires support from the civil magistrate, 221. Historical view of the system of ecclesiastical policy founded upon, 284. Ought to be subordinate to the civil power, 295.

Christopher's, St. the island settled jointly by the English and French, iii. 455. The native Caribs expelled, 459. Is reigned to by the English by the peace of Utrecht, iv. 384. Occasion of the diffusion between the first French and English inhabitants, v. 27. Is long neglected by the English after the expulsion of the French, 28. The island and its inhabitants described, ib. Its produce, 29. Anecdotes of Negro slaves there, ib.

Cinabror, the constituent parts of that mineral, iii. 122. Quicksilver, how separated from it, 123.

Cinnamon tree, botanical description of, i. 222. Methods of taking off the bark, and its qualities, 223.

Cities made free by commerce, i. 15, 16. The support of, derived from agriculture, vi. 383. Origin of, 403.

Civil Law of Great Britain, cause of its difficult and perplexity, vi. 316.

Civil wars, the origin of, iii. 32. The issues of, when victorious, suitable to the motives, 37.

Clergy, inquiry into the best mode of maintaining them, iii. 378. Most be made subordinate to the civil magistrate, to prevent the subversion of a state, 379. A set of men useless, at best, to the earth, and the most dreadful enemies to a nation when they disgrace their profession, vi. 384. The most respectable of them, those who are most deified, and burdened with duty, 385. Their unalienable domains an obstruction to population, 404.

Climate, its influence on religion, i. 36, 37. Philosophical remarks on, and inferences from, v. 293. Forms the character, composition, and manners of nations, vi. 393. Determines the species of manufactures in a country, ib. Is improved by agriculture, 399.


Cloisters, anciently the seats of manufactures, ii. 3. Naturally tend to accumulate wealth, 4.

Cochin, on the Malabar coast, account of that kingdom, i. 364.

Colchin-ebina, French account of that empire and its inhabitants, ii. 51. Productions and manufactures of the country, 52. Amiable disposition of the natives, ib. Equity of their first system of government, 53. Progress of corruption in their government, 54. View of their trade, 55. Causes of the French losing the advantages of this market, 56.


Cocoa tree, natural history of, i. 166. Its fruit, and the properties of it, 107.

Cod, the fish described, v. 329. A fishery for, carried on in the northern seas of Europe, ib. Account of the fishery at Newfoundland, 330. Method of curing the cod, 336. Rife of the English, and decline of the French fisheries, 343.

Coffee, where originally found, with an account of the discovery of its properties, i. 336. Where now cultivated, 339. Much used in, and great exports of from, Arabia, 349. Introduced into the Carribbean Islands from the East, iv. 141. The tree and its berries described, 144. Method of cultivating it, ib. Manner of preparing the berries for sale, 143.

Coffee-house, the origin of, i. 336. Ineffec­tual attempt to suppress them at Constantinople, 337. Are opened in London, 339.

Colbert, M. forms a French East India Company, ii. 16. His character as a financier, 71. Mistakes in his administration pointed out, iv. 276. Subjects the French colonies to the oppressions of an exclusive company, 277.

Cold, the various effects produced by, in Hudson's Bay, v. 303, 304.
Offsky, Admiral, first directed the attention of the French to settle in North America, v. 115.

Colonies, why they submit readily to an invader, iii. 471. Difficult, ought not to be left in the hands of chartered companies, iv. 242. General remarks on the establishment of, 271. Difficult colonies cannot long be retained by any government, 272. Reflections on the neglect shown by mother-countries to their difficult settlements, 391. Different motives of colonization, 445-446. The best plan for establishing a new colony, v. 78. The first objects of attention in the formation of, vi. 115. The moral system of, ib. Remarks on the defects in the political constitutions of the British American colonies, 116.


Comely, faced, the origin of, i. 23.

Comets, have probably given this earth occasional shocks in traversing its orbit, ii. 379. And produced those great alterations that have taken place on its surface, 380. Superstition traced from such extraordinary events, ib.

Commerce, the source of all improvements and civilization, i. 3, 4. Produces its own destruction, 6. Was revived first in Europe by the Arabs, ii. 11. Greatly depressed under the feudal system of government, 13. Formation of the Hanseatic league, 15. Historical account of the commerce to India, 51, 82. The operations of, philosophically considered, ii. 373. The spirit of finance always injurious to, iv. 261. Defined, vi. 347. Historical deduction of the progress of, ib. Consequences of the discovery of the East and West Indies to Spain, Portugal, and Holland, 348. Rife of the Dutch commerce, 349. How improved by the English, 351. Complexion of the French commerce, 352. Nature of the German commerce, with the obstacles to it, 353. Iron, an advantageous article of commerce to the northern nations, ib. The happy operations of commercial in-

dustry, 355. Character of a merchant, with his necessary objects of attention, ib. Instructions to merchants, 359. Remarks on the political shackles imposed on trade, 367. A free trade among all nations would cause all nations to prosper, 373. The mutual correspondence between trade and agriculture, 374, 375.

Commons, house of, in England, origin and growth of, vi. 254. Advantages of this representative body to the people, 259. Its defects pointed out, 262.

Comora Islands, in the Mozambique channel, described, i. 417.

Compas, the invention of, first applied to navigation by prince Henry of Portugal, i. 45. Great improvements in navigation produced by, vi. 334.

Conception, town of, in Chili, described, iii. 115.

Condamin, M. his account of Peruvian fortifications, iii. 27.

Confucius, the Chinese legislator, an account of his religious and political principles, i. 126.

Conquest is only made to be lost again, vi. 81.

Confiantine the Great the founder of the ecclesiastical dominion of the church of Rome, vi. 218.

Confiantinople, the Indian commerce transferred from Alexandria to that city, i. 85. Causes that produced its destruction, 98. Inheritance how secured there, iii. 136.

Contraband trade originates in tyranny, vi. 121.

Cook, Captain, the result of his last voyage referred to, for determining the question of a north-west passage to the East Indies, vi. 316.

Cooles, an account of that people, i. 76.

Copenhagen, general account of that city, iv. 265, 266.

Copists of Egypt, account of those people, iv. 5.

Copper, peculiar art of the ancient Peruvians in manufacturing it, iii. 37.

Cordelearias: mountains, the course of, described, ii. 443. Give rise to the great river Oroonoko, ii. 64. Their stupendous fize a source of astonishment, 84. Philosophical inquiry after their origin, 85. Exhibit evidences of having been volcanos, 89. Descriptive particulars relating to them, ib. Their vegetable productions, 90, 91. Animals peculiar to these mountains, 106.

Coromandel, coast of, general account of its productions and inhabitants, i. 101. Progress of the Dutch settlements there, 226. This country, why neglected by Euro-
peans at their first arrival in India, 381. On what ideas the first European colonies there were established, 382. Account of their cotton manufactures, 383. Nature and amount of the trade carried on there by Europeans, 386. Possessions of the English on this coast, 388. Cadore, ib. Malampatkan, 389. Territories in the Deccan, 390. Account of Madras, 392. The province of Bengal, 397. English method of collecting revenues there, 430.

Corporations, trading, injurious to industry, i. 393.

Corregidor, his office in Peru, iii. 222.

Corocho, Fernando, is deputed by Velasquez to undertake the conquest of Mexico, ii. 375. His force in ships and men, 376. Reduces the natives of Tabasco, ib. Account of his Indian mistress Marina, 375. His negotiations with Montezuma, 382. Burns his ships, and marches towards the city of Mexico, 382. Meets with opposition from the natives of Tlaxcala, ib. Makes an alliance with the Tlaxcalans, who assist him with men, 385. Is charmed with the glittering ornaments of the Mexican buildings, ib. Arrests the emperor, 386. Defeats Narvaez, who was sent to supercede him, and associates his men, 387. Inurrection of the Mexicans against the Spaniards, 389. Dangers attending his retreat to Tlaxcala, 390. Owe his safety to seizing the Mexican royal standard, 391, 392. Reduces the Mexican provinces, 394. Discovers a conspiracy among his troops to assassinate him, ib. Reduces the capital city of Mexico, 395. His brutal treatment of the emperor Guatimuizin, 396. Regulations made by him on subduing the country, 429. His character estimated, ib.

Cotton manufacture and trade on the coast of Coromandel, curious particulars relative to, i. 383, 447.

Cotton shrub, method of cultivating it, iv. 140. Description of its flowers and pods, 141. The cotton, how freed from the seeds, ib.

Country, native, the love of, a facilitous sentiment, iii. 273.

Courage is diminished by the increase of soldiers, vi. 331.

Couriets, a principal article of export from the Maldivia Islands, i. 359. Why used as coin by the Chinefs, ii. 275.

Coral Islands described, iv. 258. English and Danish attempts to settle on it prevented by the Spaniards, who make no use of it themselves, 259.

Credit defined, and its operations explained, vi. 440. Private and public distinguished, ib. Why England, Holland, and France, are the nations that owe the greatest sums on public credit, 441. Why those nations which have most resources are most in debt, 444. Arguments in favour of contracting public debts considered, 443. The ruinous tendency of borrowing on public credit shown, 445. Consequences of national bankruptcy, 446.

Creoles in Spanish America, who, and their character, iii. 189. Of the Caribee Islands, description and character of, iv. 154, 156.

Cromwell, Oliver, the motives of his entering into a war with the Dutch, i. 318. His negotiations with them regarding East India affairs, 370. His motives for attacking the Spaniards in the West Indies, i. 445.

Crookshall, the harbour of Peterburgh, described, ii. 267.

Croiset, a French merchant, obtains an exclusive grant of the trade of Louisiana, vi. 261. Refrains his charter, ib.

Cruelities, those romantic undertakings favourable to the civil liberties of Europe, i. 93. And to commerce, vi. 348, 358.

Cruelty, a tax levied in Spain, and on the Spanish American colonies, iii. 211. Reflections on the privileges purchased by it, ib.


Cubagua, or Pearl Island, account of, iv. 167. The pearl fishery there exhausted, 169. Reasons why the Spaniards retain it, ib. Character of the present inhabitants, 170.

Cudalore, on the coast of Coromandel, purchased and improved by the English, i. 388. Employment of the natives, 389.

Cumana, the coast of, discovered, and the conduct of the first Spanish adventurers there, iii. 62. The district of, granted to Las Casas to colonize, 63. Causes of his ill success, ib. Present state of the settlement, 64.

Curacon, the island of, taken from the Spaniards by the Dutch, described, iv. 216. Nature of the trade carried on there, 222. Duties paid on commodities there, ib.
INDEX.

1. 231.

D. Dagebert, king of France, in the seventh century, excites a spirit of industry and traffic among his subjects, ii. 4.

D'Aguire, a Spanish adventurer, his plundering expedition into the interior parts of South America, and desperate conduct, iii. 304.

Dairo of Japan, the nature of his dignity and office, i. 150.

Dances, the movements of, more significant among rude nations than in polished society, v. 137.

Darien, the gulf of, discovered by Columbus, iii. 3. The province of, becomes a place of refuge for Spanish adventurers, who had been defeated and dispersed in their attempts on the continent of America, 5. Peculiar customs of the natives, ib. The country described, 43. Arrival of a company of Scots, ib. Their settlement prevented by political influence, 44. Unsuccessful attempt of the Spaniards to colonize this district, ib. The isthmus ought to be cut through to open a communication with the South Sea, 259.

Dauphin Island, at the mouth of the Mobile, described, v. 200.

Debt, reflections on imprisonment for, i. 342. Regulations proposed to check the contracting of, iv. 262, 263.

Deities, pagan, the probable origin of, iii. 175.

Dinawar, Lord, relieves the distressèd colonies in Virginia, vi. 36. His character, 37.

Democracy, account of the Dutch settlement there, iv. 239.

Denmark, piratical expeditions of the ancient inhabitants of, i. 173. Their disposition to plunder accounted for, 174. Their national ceremonies improved by the fangunary religion of Wodin, ib. Their morals corrected by conversion to Christianity, 175. Turn their attention to industry and trade, ib. Engage in a trading voyage to Caylon, 176. Form a settlement in Tanjouir, 177. An East India Company established after the failure of two preceding attempts, 178. Present constitution of the Company, 183, 184. Regulation of the trade to China, 186. The circumstances of this nation not favourable to an extensive East India trade, 189. A Danish settlement formed in Guinea for a slave trade, under an exclusive company, iv. 86. Character of their agent Schilderop, ib. Captain Monk's attempt to find a north-west passage into the Pacific Ocean, 254. The Danes throw themselves under the power of their king, to escape that of their nobles, 255. Settle the island of St. Thomas, 256. Purchase the island of Santa Cruz, 257. Review of the productions and trade of their American islands, 263. Review of the European dominions of, 264. Climate of, 267. Number of inhabitants, ib. Species of taxes levied on them, ib. Naval strength of the kingdom, 268. Regulations proposed for its improvement, 269.

Devereux, governor of Canada, his treacherous treatment of the Iroquois, v. 150.

Descartes, his character, vi. 466.

Descartes, account of that island, iv. 352.

Despotism is not justified, even by making a good use of it, vi. 236, 237. The form of government under, never fixed, 273, 293.

Desrochers, Lewis, a Negro slave, his good fortune and generosity to his master, iv. 94.

Desrochers, revolutions of that settlement, i. 386.

Dey, the nature of that office and dignity in the Barbary states, described, iv. 15.

Dialogue between the author and a minister of state, on the arcana of government, vi. 424.

Diamonds, the most splendid representation of opulence, iii. 348. The several varieties of, 349. Natural history of this gem, ib. Experiments with, in a burning-glass, 357. And in fire, ib. The several known diamond mines enumerated, 353. In what state found, ib. Extraordinary one bought for the empress of Russia, 354. Diamonds discovered in Brazil, ib. Regulations imposed on the trade of, 355. In what state the Brazil diamonds are found, 356.

Diodorus Siculus, his account of the supposed ancient island of Atlantis, i. 26.

Discontents, political, evaporate by the liberty of complaint, i. 338.

Discoveries, useful, why chance has always more share in them than ingenuity, iii. 266. v. 116.

Dissolute, religious, the good tendency of, iii. 224.

Duggeron, Bertrand, his character, iv. 364. Sent from France to settle and govern the Buccaneers at St. Domingo and Tortuga, 365. Difficulty of his task, ib. His happiness in reconciling them to settlement and cultivation, 366. Supplies them with
women, ib. Improves the colony by the acendant he gained over their minds, 367. Meditated the conquest of the whole island for France, 407.

INDEX.

Attept the discovery of a passage to China and Japan, through the northern seas, 179. Form a Company to trade with India, and send out ships, 182. Attempt a trade with Java, ib. Their East India Company established, 187. Their contests with the Portuguese in the Indian seas, 183. Attempt to open a commerce with China, 185. Establish a settlement on the island of Formosa, 186. Ignominious conditions on which they are allowed to trade with Japan, 192. Articles of their trade with Japan, 192. Exclude the Portuguese from the Molucca islands, 195. Measures taken by them to secure a monopoly of the spice trade, ib. 201. Their motives for retaining possession of Timor, 202. and Celebes, 209. Establish a trade with Borneo for pepper, ib. and with Sumatra for pepper and tin, 214. View of their trade with Siam, 216. How they gained an establishment in Malacca, 217. Affirm the King of Candy in driving the Portuguese out of Ceylon, 218. From whence they procure their cinnamon, 224. The terms to which they have reduced the King of Candy, 225. Account of their factories on the coast of Coromandel, 226. Review of their trade there, ib. Supplant the Portuguese in Malabar, 227. The nature of the trade carried on by them there, ib. The motives of their forming a settlement at the Cape of Good Hope, 228. Remarks on their system of policy at the Cape, 229. And in Java, 245. How they acquired an exclusive trade with Bantam, 247. With Cheribon, 248. and with Mataram, ib. Defraud the natives in their dealings, 250. Causes of the prosperity of their East India Company, 264. Causes of the decline of the Company, 266. Their East India wars, 270. Abuses of administration there, 274. Remedies proposed adapted to the evils, 275. Importance of this company to the republic, 288. Degeneracy of the Dutch nation, 293. Endeavour to irritate the natives of India against the first English adventurers, 309. Commencement of hostilities, which are accommodated by a treaty between the two companies, 340. Expel the English cruelly from Ambon, 342. Ill treatment of the Dutch at Baffora, how retaliated by Baron Kuyphausen, 353. Expected state of their intercourse with China, iii. 357. and India, 322. Their rapid excursions against the eastern settlements of their enemies the Spaniards, upon the formation of their republic, iii. 285. Establish a West India Company, and attack Brazil, ib. Their great successes against the Portuguese by 227. Reduce all the coast of Brazil, 288. Affairs of that colony under their administration, 296. Are expelled from Brazil, 299. Were the first people that promoted a commercial intercourse among the nations of Europe, iv. 214. Description of their American islands, 216. The advantages derived from them, 221. Poffle themselves of Surinam, 227. Reflections on the state of the Dutch American colonies, 246. Amount of their public debts, 245. Their manufactures depretted by taxes, ib. Decline of their herring fisheries, ib. Their navigation reduced, 249. Their comunication trade diminished, ib. The trade of insurance lott, 250. Vess their meny in the funds of other nations, ib. Precarianonists of their situation, 251. The advantages the indurt of the Dutch gave them over the wealth of the Spaniards and Portuguese, vi. 349.

E.

Earth, the great changes it has undergone from natural causes, one source of the imperfection of mankind, ii. 380, 381. Comparison between the Old and the New World, v. 259. Attempt to account for the disposition of land, and seas, 250. The equipose of, how supported, ib. Phenomena which indicate the continent of America to have been more recently left by the ocean than that of the Old World, 297. 292. Has undergone various changes, vi. 397.

Earthquaker, the prognostics of, in Peru, iii. 92, 93.

East India trade, the first cultivators of, in Europe, i. 12.

East India Company.

———, Dutch, the establishment of, i. 131. Causes of the prosperity of, 264. Causes of its decline, 266, 267. Importance of this Company to the republic, 238.

———, English, first formed, i. 355. Objections made to the monopoly of, 343. A second English Company formed, 352. The two Companies united, 328. Private trade between one port and another, encouraged in the East by the English Company, 418. The Company has flourished under all its restraints, 419. The English Company co...
INDEX.

longer a mercantile association, but a territorial power, 437. Great military establishment supported by the English in India, ib. Comparison between the conduct of the English and other India Companies, 430. Their Bengal administration corrupt ed, 431. Their commercial oppressions, 432. Parliamentary regulations of the Company's affairs, 442. Internal arrangement made by the Company, 444. The Company's circumstances improve, 449.

__________ French, formed by M. Colbert, ii. 10. Terms of, 17. Wise administration of Martin the director, 58. Causes of the decline of the French Company, 59. Situation of the Company at the fall of Law's system, 90. European trades reduced to acquire territorial posessions in India for their own security there, 112. Change of the ill fortune of the French in India inquired into, 125. The French Company oppressed by the government, 127. New regulations of, 129. The exclusive privileges of the Company suspended, 131. Review of their circumstances at this time, 132. The Company cede all their effects to government, 130.


__________ Austrian, at Odend, views which led to the formation of, ii. 192. Its successful beginning, 193. Is opposed by the Dutch and English, 194. It is bargained away by the court of Vienna, 195.


__________ Prussian, established at Emden, ii. 219. Failure of, ib.

Difficulties of the question, whether the East India trade ought to be conducted by exclusive companies, or left open, ii. 326. The nature of the India trade stated, 337. Why it must be carried on by associations, 338. Whole interest it would be to unite in one company, 341. The origin of their exclusive privileges, 344. The political concerns of a company should be vested in the state, 346.

Ecclesiastical policy, historical review of, in the Christian church, vi. 287.

Education in savage and civilized society, contrasted, ii. 465, 466.


El Durada, current traditions of a rich country of that name in the interior parts of Guiana, iv. 286.

Elizabeth, Queen of England, her character, i. 304. Her speech to the House of Commons, relating to the East India charter, 305. Her policy in completing the reformation, v. 286. Her attention to the raising a maritime strength, vi. 340.

Emerald, a gem peculiar to America, iii. 72. Produced in the province of New Grenada, 74. How found, ib.

Emigration, hint to the governors of countries how to prevent it, i. 375. Reflections on the propensity to, in Sweden, ii. 205.

Encyclopædia, character of that great work, vi. 469.

England, general view of the manners of the people in the fifteenth century, i. 20.

Formerly ravaged by northern invaders, is again thrown into confusion by William the Conqueror introducing the feudal government, i. 305. Low state of commerce during the feudal ages, 301. Wholesome regulations of Henry VII. for emancipating the common people, ib. The true principles of trade misunderstood at that time, 302. Flemish workmen who arrive there ill treated by the natives, 303. Manufactures introduced by the Spanish oppressions in the Netherlands, and the persecution of the Protestants in France, 304. Improvement of trade and navigation under Queen Elizabeth, ib. Formation of the East India Company, 305. The principles on which this company formed their Eastern settlements, 307. Meet with disappointments, 308. Acquire a share of the spice trade with the Dutch, 309. Hiftilities between the two companies accommodated by a treaty, 320. Are ill used by the
INDEX.

Settle the island of St. Christopher's in conjunction with the French, ib. 428. Motives of Cromwell for attacking the Spaniards in the West Indies, 435. The island of Jamaica taken, 438. How the English gained a superiority over the Dutch in the political fikem of Europe, 448. Remarks on the political publications there, 452. War with Spain in 1739, on account of their violent proceedings in the West Indies 453, 454. Their political views, 458. Motives that, in 1755, led to the war with France, 459. Remarks on the mode of commencing this war, 460. National de-
jection at the first events of the war, 485. Mr. Pitt appointed minister; and his charac-
ry VII. 4. Character of James I. 5. The people oppose his arbitrary principles, 7. Review of the civil war between Charles I. and his parliament, 9. The population of the British American islands in great measure owing to this war, 10. The good policy of transporting felons to the American plantation, 11. General view of the government of the American islands, ib. The cultivation of sugar, how introduced into the American islands, 14. Motives for framing the Navigation Act, 15. History of the sugar trade, ib. Conditions upon which land in the American islands was sold by the government, 95. Limitation of plantations, 96. Restraint imposed on the property of the French planters in the ceded islands, 98. Ill success of salt settlers on these islands, 99. General character of the English West India islands, ib. The white inhabitants in, decrease in proportion to the increase of Negroes, 100. Ve-
net spirit of the English, 107. Causes of the flourishing state of their West India settlements, 103. Amount of the receipts from these colonies, 104. General charac-
INDEX.

F

Fairly, the principal places of trade during the infancy of commerce, ii. 1. Method of carrying on trade there formerly, 13. ii. 4.

Fairland Island, account of the British attempt to establish a settlement on them, ii. 256.

Fagins, the extensive influence of, iv. 59.

Farnambeuca, in Brazil, historical description of that government, iii. 330.

Fernando de Noronha, an island on the coast of Farnambeuca in Brazil, described, iii. 332.

Fendal system of government, the leading principles of, i. 12, 13. The tyrannical frame of it, how undermined, 16. Origin of, vi. 219, 230. Subject in Poland in all the vigour of its primitive institution, 246. Fees, account of this state, and its inhabitants, iv. 16.

Fever, trade and manufactures early cultivated there, i. 15.

Florida, discovered by Ponce de Leon, v. 116. As neglected by the Spaniards, and imprudently managed by the French, ib. The French excommunicated by the Spaniards, 117. The Spaniards, in turn, exter-

minated by the French, 118. Was first reported to by the Spaniards for slaves, vi. 79. French settlers driven out by the Spaniards, 71. Is ceded to Britain, 74. The Spanish inhabitants retire to Cuba, 75. Regulation of this province by the English, ib. A colony of Greeks brought over, 76. Advantageous situation of this country, 78. East Florida, a barren, sandy soil, ib. Method of civilizing the Indian natives of West Florida proposed, ib. 79.

Fornosia, a description of that island, and its inhabitants, i. 282. Rites to commercial importance, by the settlement of the Dutch on it, and the arrival of a colony of Chino-Neere refugees, ib. Heroic conduct of Hambrueck, when the island was besieged by Coxinga, 137. The Dutch expelled, 185. Why no European settlement has since been formed on that island, ib.

Forrest, Captain, account of his voyage to New Guinea, in search of spices, i. 282.

Fortification, the art of, invented by the Dutch, vi. 324.

Fox, of Canada, described, v. 166.

Fox, George, the founder of the East India Com-ib. His character, vi. 5.

France, state of that kingdom under Lewis XI., ii. 19.

Character of Dogebert, King of, in the seventh century, ii. 4. Agriculture recommended by Charlemagne, 5. Trade patronized by St. Lewis, 6. Improvements attended to by subsequent princes, 7. First attempts of the French at naval adventures to the East, 9. Ill-conducted settlement on Madagascar, ib. An East India Company formed by Mr. Colbert, 10. Mahé Surat the centre of their Eastern trade, 24. Undertake naval enterprises by the advice of Caron, their leader, 41. Send a fleet to Siam, 43. Causes of their losing the market of Cochinchina, 56. Remarks on the political administration of Lewis XIV., 57. Wife conduct of Martin, the director of the East India Company, 58. Causes of the decline of the Company, 59. Brief historical view of the finances of France, 63, 64. Extortions of the Lombards, 69. State of the French revenues at the death of Francis I., 70. Character of the duke de Sully, as a financier, ib. Character of M. Colbert, 71. Administration of the duke of Orleans, 73. Ideas of reformers, at this faction, ib. The duke of Orleans institutes an office for the revision of public accounts, 75. Law's famous scheme for reforming the finances, 76. State of the revenues at the death of Lewis XIV., 82. Apostrophe to the present king on the state of the nation, 85. The ill of Bourbon and Mau-

K k
ritius settled, 93, 94. Review of the French possessions on the coast of Coromandel, at the commencement of the war, in 1755, with the English, 721. Inquiry into the causes of their misfortunes in Asia, 125. History of the tobacco trade in France, 134. Present state of the French on the coast of Malabar, 143, and in Bengal, 145. Hints offered for the restoration of their influence in the East, 166. Character of the French nation, and remarks on the antipathy between them and the Spaniards, ii. 237, 238. Their present intercourse with China, 308, 309. General review of their Eastern conduct and policy, 332.

Settlements attempted by the French in Brazil, iii. 283, 284.

Remarks on the peace of Aix la Chapelle, iii. 455. Unjustifiable commencement of hostilities by the English in 1755, without a previous declaration of war, 460, 461. The French successful in the early stages of this war, 463. But precipitate themselves into a train of dilators, 464. Their rapid defeats and disfrees, 467. Guadalupe taken, 469. Martinico taken, 470. Overtures for peace made to Mr. Pitt, and the use he made of them, 476. General reflections on the permanency of the circumstances of France, iv. 252.


Frankincense, its high estimation among the ancients, and their caution against the frauds of the workmen who prepared it, i. 84.

Franklin, Dr. his observations on the rapid population of North America, vi. 106.

Frauds, professional, the confidence easily reconciled to the practice of, vi. 357.


Frederic Niger, the factory of, founded by the Danes, ii. 188.
INDEX.

Friendship, the nature and offices of, explained, v. 135. In savage life, 136.

Friesian, Fort, in Canada, its situation, and occasion of its erection, v. 246.

Frozen Ocean, the Russian accounts of, to be doubted, i. 34.

Fuentes, Admiral, story of his voyage from Callao into Hudin’s Bay, v. 315.

Funchal, town of, on the island of Madeira, some account of, i. 28.

Furs, an account of those animals in Canada which furnish them, i. 163. The trade with the Indians for, described, 177.

G.

Gabon, river, on the coast of Africa, described, with the trade carried on there, iv. 73.

Galilee, his conjectures concerning the figure of the earth, and the clergy, v. 465. Invented the telecope, 465.

Galician, Governor of Canada, his character, and conduct toward the English, v. 262.

Galantry, the connections of, with the degravations of manners, vi. 484.

Gama, Vasco de, his first voyage to the East Indies, i. 32. Discovers Calicut, and returns to Portugal, 77. His successes favourable to the civil liberties of Europe, 93, 94.

Gambia, river, and the trade carried on there, described, iv. 69.

Ganges, account of the European factories up that river, i. 458. The navigation of this river, and that of Hughley, described, 411. Commercial intercourse, how conducted on these two rivers, 412.

Gofoa, Pedro de la, a priest, arrives in Peru with powers to regulate the province, iii. 40. His character, ib. Defeats Gonzales Pizarro, and sentences him to death, ib.

Gaul, ancient, retrospect of the state of commerce among them, ii. 9, 10. Heavy duties imposed on land and water carriage under the Franks, 3. See France.

Genius, how far influenced by climate and government, i. 329. How distinguished, v. 116.

Georgia, in North America, its situation and extent, vi. 63. Is peopled by insolvent debtors from England, 63. Under the care of General Oglethorpe, ib. Is strengthened by the arrival of other settlers, 64. Decline of the colony, 65. Causes of its ill success, 66. Recovered by the government being taken out of private hands, 69. Present state of the province, 70. General view of the manners of the inhabitants, in the fifteenth century, 1. 20. The political constitution of that empire examined, vi. 249. The tranquillity of the empire secured by Maximilian, 252. Why deficient in collective power and energy, 252. Obstacles to the commerce of this empire, 323.

Ginger, the plant described, its different sorts, and customary uses in Asia, i. 368.

Ginzeng, description and reputed virtues of this root, ii. 276. Is highly valued by the Chinese, 277. Is found in Canada, v. 256. The trade with, to China, ruined, 257.

Glory, true, is the lot of virtue, not of genius, iv. 164.

Goo, the island and city of, described, 1. 90. Nature of its government at the arrival of the Portuguese, ib. Is taken by Albuquerque, ib. and fortified, 81. Its present decayed state, 371.

Gold, the corrupter of all governments, ii. 65. And its relative value of, how assessed, 101. The necessity of keeping up the circulation of these metals, 312. Reflections on the enormities by which these metals are procured, 450. Produce of the mountains of Zacatecas, 444. Lehmann’s remarks on the means of procuring them, iii. 88. Where found, in the valleys of Peru, 179. Mines of Huantajahua, 179. Of Potosi, ib. Of Oruro, 121. These metals lose their value in proportion as their quantity is multiplied, 244. The spirit of, productive of the worst of all traffic, that of slaves, 273. Their proportional values to each other, in various places and at various times, stated, 548.

Gold Coast, account of the native Africans of, iv. 57. Method of the natives in procuring gold, 51. Its extent, and the European factories settled there, 70, 71.

Goldbrook, described, and a trade established there by the English, i. 315.

Gorce, the island of, described, iv. 68.


Gottenburg made the seat of the Swedish East India Company, iv. 292.

Government, general reflections on the complicated nature of, 1. 161. Civil and religious, the distinction between, traced, iii. 184. Parallel between one founded on injustice, and one founded on virtue, ii. 1. Neither of these species of government to be found, 1. Political, compared with that of a private family, 210. War always furnishes a pretence for usurpations, 129. American ideas of, 138, 162. The various revolutions of, traced, 226, 227. Military and despotic, reciprocally tend to each other, 234. Analysis of the government of Great Britain, 250. Pernicious consequences of authority in, 301. The come
plexion of, determines the character of those who live under it, 303. Policy and legislation distinguished, 304. Varies according to the character of the prince, 315. A secret conspiracy carried on by all monarchies against free states, 317. Dialogue between the author and a minister of state, on theocracy of government, 426.

Gourgue, Dominic de, revenges the treatment of his countrymen on the Spaniards at Florida, v. 118.

Grunum, a Buccaneer, his history, iii. 436.

Surprises Campachy, 437.

Granda, account of the Moorish kingdom of, in Spain, ii. 355. Is reduced, ib. Terms of capitulation granted to them, iii. 270. Cruel pernicie of the Moors by Philip II. ib. Expulsion of, and the consequences of this infatuated measure, 221.

—— New, in South America, its extent and climate, iii. 72. Account of the natives, ib. They are reduced by Spanish adventurers, 73. Exaggerated accounts of the first riches of this country, ib. Furnishes emeralds, ib. and gold, 74. Is governed under the viceroyalty of Peru, 75. The fertility of the natives softened by the missionaries, 76. Mines more attended to there than agriculture, ib. Indications of the abundance of its mineral riches, ib. Description of its capital city, 77.

Great Britain. See England.

Greece, the natural circumstances of, peculiarly favourable to commerce, is 5. The ancient institutions of, superior to those of modern times, 7. View of the Greek empire when attacked by the Arabs, 11, 12. Subdivision of, 67. General review of the history of, with a character of the natives of, vi. 208. A review of the ancient commerce of the Grecian states, 347. Why famous for the fine arts, 448. Its former and present state contrasted, 453.

Greeks, ancient, their genius for the marvellous exemplified, iii. 302. Inquiry into their fabulous accounts of the Amazons, ib.


Grenadines, general account of these islands, v. 74.

Guadalupe, island of, taken from the French by the English, iii. 468. Description of, iv. 345. Distinction between Guadalupe and Grande Terre, ib. Its first settlement by the French, and the depredations they suffered from the native Caribs, 346. Other disadvantages the colonists laboured under, 348. Its present prosperity owing to its conquest by the English, ib. Various体系s since adopted by France in the government of this island, 349. Islands dependent on it, 352. Present state of all these islands, 353. Exports of Guadalupe, 355. Description of the harbour of Pitre Point, 356. Improvements to be expected in this island, 357. Examination of its defence against invasion, 358.

Guam, the principal of the Marianne islands, described, ii. 461. Agriculture introduced into this island by M. Tobias, a late governor, 462.

Guano, a wild species of animal in Peru, described, iii. 18. Their fleece, 129.

Guayaquil, account of the quicksilver mines there, iii. 123. Unwholesomeness of the air, 144.

Guatemala, account of the provinces over which the audience of, extends its jurisdiction, ii. 474. Account of the province and city of, 476. This city the channel of communication with Peru, ib. Instructions for the invaders of this city, 477. Is, however, now destroyed by an earthquake, ib. A new city planned, 479.

Guatemala, a successor of Montezuma, defends the city of Mexico against Cortez, ii. 395. His cruel treatment and death, 396.

Guayaquil, the town of, in Peru, described, iii. 99. Peculiar kind of a purple dye found on the coast, 100. Trade of this town, 101. Inconveniences the inhabitants are subject to, ib.

INDEX.

480. The gulf of, settled by pirates for the purpose of dealing in logwood, 484. The liberty of cutting logwood there secured to the English, 485.

Horfe, peculiar excellence of those bred in Arabia, i. 334.

Hospital, and the management of them, the political tendency of, considered, iv. 192, 193.

Hospitality, the antiquity of, iii. 275. Is generally abused, 276. Has decreased in proportion as the intercourse of nations increased, 277.

Hottentots, at the Cape of Good Hope, their manners and customs described, i. 229. Their women, 230. Reflections on their national habits, ib. Striking instance of their attachment to their national habits, 241.

Houtman, Cornelius, engages the Dutch in an attempt to establish a trade with the East Indies, i. 179. Commands the first ship sent out, 182.

Huayna, the brother of Atahalpa, inca of Peru, disputes the empire with him, iii. 32. Makes large offers to Pizarro to place him on the throne, 14.

Hudson's Bay, and its climate, described, v. 303. The fur of animals there changed to white by the winter, 304. Peculiarities of the scattered natives, 305. How this bay was discovered, and obtained its name, 308. Settlement of, by the English, 309. Fur trade between the English and the Indians, 310. Capital and profits of the English Hudson's Bay Company, ib. Attempts to find a north-west passage to the East Indies through this bay, with an examination of the arguments in favour of such a passage, ib. 312. This passage should be fought for toward Welcome Bay, 373. The Company unwilling to have such a passage discovered, 314.

Hudson's River, in the province of New York, the navigation of, described, v. 383.

Hugbkey, a Dutch settlement in Bengal, described, i. 411.

Humming Bird of North America described, vi. 86.

Hurricanes in the West Indies described, with an inquiry into the causes of them, iii. 300, 401.

Hyder-Ali-khan engages in a war with the English East India Company, i. 394.

Hyppolite, the time spent in forming of, suspends our researches after truth, iv. 42.

I.


James I. King of England, his character, i. 308. Disregards the insults offered to the English nation in the East, 312. How induced to prefer Episcopal church government to the Presbyterian discipline, v. 286, 287.

James II. King of England, his character, and the consequences of his being deposed, i. 323.

Javanaries, those troops the masters of the Turkish empire, i. 21. vi. 233.

Japan, the antiquity and form of government of that empire, i. 149, 150. The religion of the country formed from its natural circumstances, 137. Comparison between the education of children there and in China, 137. The Portugeese favourably received there, ib. Produce of the country, ib. A revolution in the government of, 138. Progress of the Christian religion there, 139. The Christians torpidly persecuted by the new emperor, 150. The Portugeese expelled, and the Dutch tolerated, 151. Articles of their trade with this country, 152. Remarks on the national character of the Japaneese, and the policy of their government, 153. Why they refused to receive the English, 319.

Java, first attempts of the Dutch to trade
INDEX.

with that island, i. 180. A factory estab-
lished there by Admiral Warwick, 182. 
The manners of the inhabitants described, 
243. How the English came to be sup-
planted there by the Dutch, 244. A view 
of the policy observed by the Dutch in 
strengthening their establishment in the 
island, 245. State of their trade with 
Bantam, 247. With China, 247. And 
with Matarrai, 248. The people de-
ducted by the Dutch in their mercantile 
dealings, 250. Description of Batavia, 
251. Odd bridal custom in that island, 309. 
feoffees, national, the common effects of, 
v. 252, 253.

Jersy, New. See New Jersey.

Jesuits, the principles on which they con-
ducted their mission to Paraguay, iii. 172. 
Confined themselves to the arts of persua-
sion, 173. Their division of lands, 174. 
Establish a system of regularity that pre-
vented crimes, ib. Their government 
theocratical, 175. Their religious rites 
rendered attractive, 176. Are cumulat-
ed, 177. Cause of their false accusations, 182. 
Conduct the trade of the natives, ib. 
Reflections on their scheme of govern-
ment, 184. The mission of Paraguay tak-
en out of their hands, 187. Civilize the 
natives of Brazil, 250. The great respect 
they gained there, ib. The result of their 
human labours compared with that of the 
Spanish and Portuguese forces, 281. In-
stance of the confidence reposed in them, 
282. Extraordinary sermon of Anthony 
Vieira, on the success of the Dutch against 
Brazil, 289. Their mission up the river 
Amazon, 306. Inquiry into the motives 
of their missionary labours, ib. 307. De-
claration of an old missionary, 308.

Jesus Christ, a review of his life and mission, 
v. 284, 285.

Jesus, how they came to be idolatized for 
exhibitant usury, i. 14. Cruelly oppressed 
in France, ii. 66. In Portugal, historical 
account of, iii. 269. Why peculiarly ex-
posed to the persecution of the inquisition, 
ib. Were banished to Brazil, 270. Driven 
out of Portugal to the great injury of their 
trade, 369. How tied to honest dealing in 
Jamaica, v. 42. Benevolent wishes of the 
author for this race of men, 50. Their 
character constantly supported under all 
vicissitudes, vi. 228.

Immortality of the soul, the doctrine of, how 
fuggeted, vi. 216.

Improving of means, the English custom of, 
condemned, vi. 345.

Incas of Peru, conjecture as to their origin, 
iii. 17, 18. Their method of extending 
their empire, 173.

Incontinence defined, vi. 432.

Indigo tree described, ii. 438. Its proper 
soil and culture, 429. The species of, 430. 
The place where it is chiefly cultivated, 
ib. Successful cultivation of, in South Ca-
rolina, vi. 59.

Industry, commercial, the general maxims 
of European policy altered by, vi. 354. 
Its happy operations, 355.

Infantry, the most formidable in war, vi. 
310, 313.

Inheritance, how secured at Constantinople, 
iii. 130. Remarks on the right of prime-
geniture, iv. 434. A division of inheri-

tance, how far injurious to the American 

islands, 435. The right of primogeniture 
defended, in the instance of Canada, v. 
244. The entails of estates unfavourable 
to population, vi. 464.

India, or Hindostan, geographical description 
of that country, i. 13. Peculiarity of the 
feasts there, ib. Why probably the first 
habituated part of the earth, 37. Religion, 
government, and manners of the natives, 
38, 59. The different castes or classes of 
the people, 59. Conjectures as to the 
foundation of these distinctions, 62. Au-

torities practised by the Juggers, or In-
dian monks, 64. Legal restrictions as to 
food, 68. The principle on which living 
wives burn themselves with their dead 
husbands inquired into, 69. The courage 
of the natives founded rather on prejudice 
than on character, 76. Low state of arts 
and sciences, 71. The source of the er-
ors in their political system inquired into, 
73. State of the country at the first ar-
ival of the Portuguese, 76. Historical ac-
count of the European commerce with, 81.

Was an inexhaustible fund of activities and 
and wonder to the ancient Greeks, ii. 100. 
Causes of its early population and civiliza-
tion, ib. Became an easy conquest to A-
lexander, ib. Is united under the domini-
cion of Sandrocratos, 101. General view 
of the revolutions it underwent until sub-
jected to the Parthian, ib. Is conquered by 
Tamerlane, 102. Is reduced under the 
dominion of Babar, ib. The empire of 
the Mogul Tartars established, 105. The 
power of the conquerors restrained by their 
inferiority in numbers to the natives, 105. 
Landed property in, how held and parcel-
led out, 106. Taxes, 107. Security of 
personal property, ib. Omission of the 
Mogul emperor in his public appearances, 
109. Is easily conquered by Kouli-Khan, 
111. Calamities produced by this disaffair, 
ib. European merchants reduced to at-
tempt territorial power for their own fe-

K. k iii
scurity, 112. This scheme begun by Duplex, the French governor of Pondicherry, ib. Account of the neighbouring enemies to the Mogul government, 117.

Whether the commercial intercourse with, be advantageous to Europe, inquired into, ii. 312. The limits between necessities and luxuries not easy to be defined, 313, 314. The waste of lives in voyages considered, 315. Has introduced new articles of industry, 316. Objection that India absores the treasures of the univers, answered, 317. The necessity of keeping up a circulation of gold and silver pointed out, 320. General review of the conduct and policy of those European nations who have opened an intercourse with these regions, 321. Remarks on the weak opposition the natives have made to their European invaders, 322. Political circumstances of the natives, 324. Climate, ib. Religion, 325. Love, ib. Their manner of carrying on war, 326. Obstacles to the total reduction of the country by Europeans, 329. Divided state of the several princes of, when the Europeans first arrived, 330. The system of the Europeans regulated by their ideas of the Maestas, 331. The more extensive their possessions, the greater the expense of retaining them, 332. Their military establishments fill the natives with apprehensions, ib. European garrisons great drains to the mother countries, 333. Their agents there will promote speedy revolutions to acquire rapid fortunes, ib. Result of all these events, ib. The natural tendency of more pacific views, 334. Discussion of the question whether the India trade ought to be conducted by exclusive companies, or left open, 336. The nature of this trade stated, 337. Why it must be carried on by associations, 338. whose interest would be to unite in one company, 341. The origin of their exclusive privileges, 344. The political concerns of a Company should be vested in the rate, 346.

*Indian Ocean*, M. Bouche’s account of, i. 34. *Indians* of South America, review of the ancient and present state of, iii. 195. Great destruction of, in the mines, 330.

INDEX, how distinguished into East and West, iii. 207.

Inkle and Yarn, foundation of the story of, v. 18.


Inquisition, its effect upon the character of the Spaniards, iii. 224. Ought to be abolished, 237. Account of that in Portugal, 268. Why peculiarly applied to the per-

Feaction of the Jews, ib. A character of, vi. 203.

Interest of money borrowed, moral distinctions of the East Indians of Coromandel as to the rates of, i. 326. Exorbitant, often ruinous both to the borrower and the lender, v. 493.

Invasion, civilized nations seldom at a loss for pleas to justify it when convenient, i. 215.

Joauna, one of the Comora islands, beautiful verdure of, i. 417. Is frequented by the English as a port for refreshment, 418.

Jodda, in the gulf of Arabia, account of the trade carried on at that port, i. 343.

Jugarey, Indian monks, an account of, i. 64.

John, King of England, forced by a general confederacy of his subjects to grant the great charter of English liberties, vi. 254.

John’s, St. a West India island subject to Denmark, its present state of cultivation, iv. 262. Number of inhabitants, ib.

John, St. in the gulf of St. Lawrence, described, v. 194. Is settled by the French, 195. The inhabitants excluded from the cod fishery, ib. Its state under British government, 323.

Iron, a comparison of the qualities of that produced in different parts of the world, v. 257.

Iroquois, origin of the war between them and the Algonquins, v. 151. Extent of their country, 152. Are afflicted by the Dutch, 153. Are destroyed, 154.

Islands, the government and manners of the inhabitants of, formed later than those of continental nations, i. 258. ii. 262. An inquiry into their formation, ii. 14. iii. 357. Subterraneous evidences of the revolutions of land and sea, 358.

Ile of France, to the east of Madagascar, settled by the French, ii. 94. Description of the island, and remarks on its importance to the French, 155. Their affairs there ill conducted, 156. Is now under the regulation of government, and its flourishing state in consequence, 157. Spices introduced there from the Molucca islands by M. Poivre, 158. May be made the bulwark of all the Indian possessions of the French, 159. Its defence neglected, 160. Hints as to the proper mode of fortifying it, 161. This island and Pondicherry capable of affording each other mutual security, 163.

Italy, trade early cultivated in the republics of, i. 15. Surpassed all other states of Europe in the fifteenth century, 15, 17.

Juan Fernandez, description of that island, ii. 245. Motives that induced the Spaniards to settle a colony there, ib.
INDEX.

Freretan, the peninsula of, and its inhabitants, described, ii. 483.

Jaffé, M. Joseph de, the botanist, his labours for the improvement of natural knowledge and manufactures, iii. 92.

K.

Kurical, in the kingdom of Tanjore, revolutions of, ii. 148. Description of the country and inhabitants, with the trade carried on there by the French, 149.

Kingston, in Jamaica, site of that town, v. 55. Ineffectual measures taken to render that town the metropolis of the island, ib.

Koulâ Khan drives the Afghans out of Persia, i. 349. Scheme formed by him for the extension of this empire, 356. Makes an easy conquest of the Indo-Asiatic empire, ii. 111. Amazing wealth seized by him in his Indian expedition, 355.

L.

Labour, severe, not favourable to long life, v. 125.

Ladrone Islands. See Marianne Islands.

Lady, General, his character, ii. 123. His abdward conduct at the siege of Pondicherry, 124. Is condemned to death, ib. Reflections on his profection, ib.

Lama, a Peruvian animal, described, iii. 106. Its qualities as a breed of burden, 127. Different species of, 106. Their flesh, hair, and fleece, 109.

Lama, Great, of Tartary, fabulous notions of his pretended immortality, ii. 247. Religion of, ib. 248.

Lancaster, Captain, commands the first fleet sent out by the English East India Company, i. 307.

Land, an inquiry whether its vegetative powers can be exhausted by cultivation, v. 86.

Languages, universality of the Latin, throughout the ancient Roman empire, vi. 457. Character of the modern Italian, French, and English, 458. The Spanish and German, ib. 459. The refinement of languages keeps pace with that of all other arts, 463.

La Salle engages the court of France to patronize his attempts at discovery down the Mississippi, v. 197. Discovers the mouth of the river, 198. Undertakes to sail to the mouth of the Mississippi by sea, and milles it, ib. His death, 199.

Lauregatte, Count, his successful attempt to manufacture porcelain, ii. 292.

Lawrence, St. river in Canada, might sup-
port a cod fishery, v. 260. The navigation of that river described, 261, 322.

Laws, account of his scheme for reforming the finances of France, ii. 76. Condition upon his disappointing, 81. Account of his famous Mississippi scheme, v. 207. Declares the French by false reports of rich mines in Louisiana, 223.

Laws made in opposition to nature will not be obeyed, i. 428. vi. 131. The origin of, 225. Of nature and of politics, the contrast between, 226. Advantages resulting from the division of legislative power in the British government, 238.

Lefèvre for years or lives, of land, origin of, iv. 115.

Legislation, the true principles it ought to be founded on, vi. 113. The principles of, 299. Distinguished from policy, 305.

Legislator, contrast between the success of his labours on a new state, and on an ancient corrupt state, iv. 13, 14.

Lehmann, his theory of the formation of mountains, iii. 87.

Leibnitze, his character, iv. 467.

Lemaitre, Isaac, discovers the trait to which his name is given, i. 246.


Leopanto, the battle of, the most celebrated naval engagement in modern times, vi. 333, 334.

Leprosy, a disorder peculiarly prevalent at Carthagena in America, iii. 47.

Le Rat, a Huron chief, his attitude to continue the war between the French and the Iroquois, v. 160, 161.

Lewis XI. was properly the first monarch of France, vi. 275.

Lewis XIV. of France, remarks on his political administration, ii. 57, 71. Insanity of his pecuniary difficulties, 72. His ineffectual attempts to establish a maritime force, iii. 446, 447. His character compared with that of the Emperor Charles V. of Germany, vi. 308.

Lianas, the plant that furnishes the poison in which the South Americans dip their arrows, iv. 172. How the poison is prepared, and its effects, ib.

Liberty, a comparative view of the tendency of the Roman and Mohammedan religion to depress it, i. 94. 95. Three kinds of, distinguished, iv. 116. Compared with slavery, 117. The right assumed by man over man inquired into, 118.

Lima, when built, and its situation and fall described, iii. 126. It destroyed by an earthquake, 127. Its speedy and judicious
INDEX.

restoration, 238. Construction of the new houses, ib. The streets regular, and well supplied with water, 229. Superstition of the inhabitants, ib. Their manners, 231. Character and manners of the women, ib.

Literature, character of the principal Italian writers at the revival of, vi. 455. Persecution destructive to knowledge, 451. Importance of, to mankind, 470.

Livado, St. Paul de, capital of the Portuguese settlements in Africa, account of, iv. 79.

Loango, on the coast of Africa, account of the trade carried on there, iv. 75.

Loans, public, the ruinous tendency of, vi. 445.

Loco, Mr. remarks on his constitutions for the government of Carolina, vi. 49. His character, vi. 457.

Logwood, description of the tree which produces it, ii. 453. History of the trade in, 454. The liberty of cutting it in the gulf of Honduras secured to the English, 455.

Lobovox, a Buccaneer, his history, iii. 436.

Lombards, the first who formed trading communities in Europe, i. 15. Their character and conduct, as the financiers of Europe, during the infancy of commerce, ii. 69.

London, a character of that metropolis and of its inhabitants, v. 105.

Long Island, on the coast of New York, described, v. 352.

Lond, Henry, the Dutch admiral, reduces the province of Fernambucca in Brazil, iii. 283.

Love, the different impulstes of that passion in the different stages of human society, iii. 66.

Louis, St. the port of, at Maragnan in Brazil, described, iii. 359.

Louisbourg, on the island of Cape Breton, the harbour, town, and fortifications described, v. 189. Captures of, by the English, 263, 265.


Louvain, the French minister, his character, v. 225.

Low Countries, comparison between the present and former circumstances of, ii. 191. History of the Ostend East India Company, 192.

Lubeck enjoys all the trade of Sweden till excluded by Gustavus Vasa, ii. 198.

Lucaya Islands, See Bahama Islands.

Lucia, St. the English settlement there destroyed by the Caribs, iv. 310. A settlement attempted there by the French, 312. Is finally secured to them, ib. Review of the measures taken by the French to cultivate this island, 313. Account of the soil and climate, 315. Present produce and trade, 316. Causes that have retarded its improvement, 318. Description of Carenage harbour, 319. Its advantages and disadvantages stated, ib.

Luconia, See Manilla.

Luzembourg, a colony of Germans, formed in Nova Scotia, v. 353.

Luzanas, Fernando de, a priest, associates with Pizarro and Almagro in their scheme upon Peru, iii. 9.

Luxury, the advantages and disadvantages of, philosophically considered, ii. 312. The limits of mere necessities difficult to ascertain, 314.

M.

Maaco, an island in the harbour of Canton, granted to the Portuguese, i. 149. The present state of trade there, 170. ii. 326.

Macc, the production of that spice, described, i. 198.

INDEX. 523

of French ships to form settlements, 18.
Proper system of civilization for the island, 20.
Convenient situation for colonies, 21.
No harbour round the island, lb.
Bay of Ternatee, capable of improvement, 22.
Mistaken the name of the Dutch adventurers, lb.
Are exhorted to future trials, more maturely digested, 23.
Unsuccessful attempt of Martin to establish a French colony there, 59.
Madeira, the island of, discovered by the Portuguese, under the auspices of their prince Henry, i. 25.
Is peopled and cultivated, 28.
Exhibits evidences of an ancient volcano, 29.
Account of the vintages there, 30.
Political state of the colony, lb.

Madras, reasons offered to account for the disadvantageous situation of that town, i. 392.
Its inhabitants and territory, lb.
Magellan, Strait of, discovered, and an account of the neighbouring inhabitants, ii. 138.
Extent and situation of the strait, 139.
A colony attempted there by the Spaniards, lb.
This strait divided by navigators learning to double Cape Horn, 140.
But is preferable at proper seasons, 157.

Maguay, a Mexican plant, described, and the uses to which it is applicable, ii. 419.

Malgré, how the French acquired an exclusive right to the pepper trade in that district, ii. 143.
Description of the settlement there, 144.
Estimate of the trade that might be carried on there, lb. 145.

Mohammed, his religion the most unfavourable of any to the liberties of mankind, i. 94, 95.

Majesty of the people, a phrase first used by the English and sufficient to confound their language, vi. 448.

Marier, description of that plant and its grain, vi. 87.
Indian method of cultivating and preparing it for food, 88.
Is encouraged in the British colonies, lb.

Malabar, coast of, general account of its productions, i. 107.
The Portuguese settlers there implanted by the Dutch, 227.
Review of the trade carried on by the Dutch there, ib.
Extent of the country known under that name, 358.
Account of the kingdom of Travancor, 362.
The English factory at Anjengo, 364.
The kingdom of Cochin, 363.
The kingdom of Calicut, 365.
The principal exports of Malabar, 397.
Account of the Murratta nation, 372.
Present state of the French on that coast, ii. 143.

Malacca, description of the country, government, and inhabitants of, i. 191.
Was the most considerable market in India at the first arrival of the Portuguese there, 103.
The capital city of, reduced by Albuquerque, 104.
Character of the Malaya, 10.
How the Dutch established themselves in that country, 277.
The chief trade there now in the hands of the English, lb.
Maldives islands and their inhabitants described, i. 358.
The exports of, 359.
Mallouet, M. his successful attempts for the improvement of French Guiana, iv. 300, 309.

Mamelukis, establish themselves in Egypt during the crusades, i. 88.
Constitute the real force of Egypt, iv. 8.

Man, whether more happy in a savage state than in civilized society, v. 297.
Evidences of his being formed and defined for association, vi. 224.
Traced through the several revolutions of society, 227.
His character determined by the mode of government he lives under, 303.
Better for him to be encased by sedentary employments, than to endure the hardships of warfare, 354.
His innate animosity to his fellow-creatures, 359.
His character injuriously treated by detractors, 471.
His obligations generated from lockety inconceivable, 475.
His duty defined, 476.
Lives under three codes, 478.

Mantehnoni, the tree with the juice of which the Caribs poison their arrows, described, iv. 173.
Sait, a specific against this poison, 174.

Manco Capac, the founder of the Peruvian empire, his institutions, iii. 19.

Mandarin, the nature of, and qualifications for, this rank in China, i. 124.
All officers of state elected out of this order of men, 125.

Mangrove, how produced in Guiana, iv. 326.

Mancheq, the origin of, vi. 215.

Mamula, the capital of the Philippine islands, described, ii. 230.
Government of, 231.
Account of the annual galleon that fails from that port to Acapulco, 454.

Manioc, a plant introduced into the Caribbee Islands from Africa, iv. 137.
Description and cultivation of it, lb.
Its preparation for food, 138.

Manners, the depravity of, completed by gallantry, vi. 484.

Manquila, dangerous to the pearl divers at Panama, and how they defend themselves against it, iii. 134.

Manufactures, the nature of those carried on in every country determined by the climate, vi. 393.
Other advantages necessary to their success, 394.
How affected by forms of government, 395.
Inquiry into the proper situations for, 396.
INDEX.

Maraguan, in Brazil; historical description of that government, ii. 348.

Maratlas, history and character of that people, i. 372. ii. 218. How exposed to disagreements with the English, i. 381. In what light considered by Europeans, ii. 337.

Margareta, account of that island, iv. 169. Reasons why the Spaniards retain it, ib. Character of the present inhabitants, 170. Method of curing beef there, ib.

Marianne Islands described, i. 456. Account of the inhabitants, and produce, ib. The natives formerly unacquainted with fire, 457. The women there reported to have enjoyed a superiority over the men, 458. The truth of this fact questioned, as contrary to all other experience, 459. Peculiar conformation of their canoes, 460. Were discovered by Magellan, and till lately neglected, 461. Description of Guam, ib.

Marigot-lante, an island near Guadaloupe, account of, iv. 352.

Massa, the Indian concubine of Cortez, her history, ii. 378. Serves as his interpreter and adviser, ib.


Marseilles, account of the company there for managing the trade with Algiers, iv. 23.

Martin, St. in America, history of that province, ii. 90. The inhabitants distinguished only by ignorance and superstition, 91.

Martin of Canada, described, v. 160.

Martin, St. island of, described, iv. 219. Is jointly settled by the Dutch and French, ib. Present state of the island and its produce, 220.


Maryland, settled by Lord Baltimore with English Catholics, vi. 27. The country and climate described, 29. Present number of inhabitants, 32. Tobacco the principal article of cultivation there, ib. St. Mary, Annapolis, and Baltimore, the only towns in the province, 34. Abounds with iron mines, 35. Manufactures lately introduced there, ib. Export of tobacco, 45.

Moj SEARCH, an island to the east of Madagascar, settled by some French adventurers, ii. 93. The name changed to Bourbon, ib.

Mojette, in the Persian Gulf, the trade of, transferred to Ormus by Alcauques, i. 354. The commerce of, revived by the English, 355.

Mofatshu's Bay, the charter of that colony, how taken away and altered, v. 367. Present number of inhabitants, 368. Description of the city of Boston, 372. The harbour, 373.

Mofuliputan, account of the trade carried on there by the English, i. 359. By the French, ii. 148.

Mottarum, on the island of Java, how the Dutch acquired a superiority over that kingdom, i. 248. A view of their trade there, 249.

Maurice, Prince, is commissioned by Holland to conquer Brazil, ii. 288. Reduces the whole coast, ib. Is recalled, 296.

Mauritius, island of, settled by the French, ii. 94.

Meece, measures taken by Mahomet to improve the ancient regard paid by the Arabs to that city, i. 346. Advantages derived from the pilgrimages to it, ib.

Mouflage, account of the exportation of, from the French American settlements, iv. 447. The trade of, injudiciously sacrificed to that of brandy, 448.

Merchant, the character of, in no estimation among the Romans, i. 13. Character of, with his objects of attention, vi. 335. Moral instructions to merchants, 359.

Mercury. See Quicksilver.

Mgees, the race of, in South America, how produced, iii. 150. Their rank, 150.


Metempsychosis, influence of that doctrine upon the civil and religious laws of Indolistan, i. 51. Mythological account of this doctrine, 95. Probable origin of the notion, 60.

Mexican expedition of Cortez to, i. 376. Subsequent of the emperor Montezuma, on the arrival of the Spaniards, 378. General aspect of the country, 382. Religion and superstition of the Mexicans, 357. Death of the emperor, 390. Laws of the empire, 391. The country reduced by the Spaniards, 394. The capital city of Mex-
INDEX.

Mobile, Fort, in West Florida, its situation and use, v. 217.

Mocoa, in Arabic, account of the trade carried on at that port, i. 340.

Mogul, manners and customs of, ii. 32. The empire of, founded in Indostan by Babar, 153.

Molucca Islands, described, i. 105. Their inhabitants and productions, 106. Are discovered by the Chinese, 109. Are visited by the Dutch, 181. The Portuguese excluded by the Dutch, 194. Easy for any European state to deprive the Dutch of them, 285.


Mount, reflections on their character and their authority in Spanish America, ii. 428.

Monopolizer, unjust and pernicious, vi. 362.

Moorish, dry and rainy, in India, account of, i. 36.

Monbar, a Buccaneer, his history, iii. 424.

Monte Crisifo, in the island of St. Domingo, accounts of its trade, iv. 185.

Montezauma, Emperor of Mexico, his negligent behaviour on the first arrival of the Spaniards on his coasts, ii. 378. His character, 381. Temporizes with Cortez, 385. Is seized and confined by Cortez, 386. His death, 390.

Montreal, the island and town of, in Canada, described, v. 243.

Montserrat, the island of, first discovered by Columbus, and settled by the English, v. 25. Present state of population, and its productions, 26.

Moors were the first who failed over the Atlantic ocean, i. 25.

Morbity, the difference of, in savage and civilized society, iii. 373. The bulwark of laws, vi. 471. Its principles universal, 472. Is the basis on which all systems of religion are founded, 478. Was separated from religion by Socrates, 474. The two tribunals by which human actions are judged, i. 73. The obligations of man separated from society, inconceivable, 475. Its principles uniform, but their application various, according to local circumstances, 477.

Morgan, an English freebooter of Jamaica, takes Porto-Bello, iii. 418. Takes St. Catherine's, 429. Takes Panama, ib. Carries away spoil clandestinely from his associates to Jamaica, 434.


Mose, in Arabic, account of the trade carried on at that port, i. 340.

Moses, thirty-eight victims burnt at an Auto da Fe, on account of the loss of a fleet, 416. Reflections on this horrid act of expiation, ib. Discovery of, and commotions in New Mexico, 417. Other disturbances in these provinces, 419. Present state and produce of, 423. Various other exports of, 439. Produce of the mines, 444. Manufactures, 443. Causes why this province is not more flourishing, pointed out, ib. Amazing diminution of the natives, 447. Description of the capital city, as rebuilt by Cortez, 448. Opulence and luxury of the citizens, ib. The city relieved from the inconveniences and dangers of floods, 452. Other improvements in contemplation, ib. The connections formed between this country and the Philippine islands, 453. Account of the military force maintained there by Spain, 459.

Mines, of Mexico, produce of, ii. 444. Of Peru, an account of, iii. 114. Regulations made for working them, 208. Great destruction of lives in, 229. Annual amount of the gold and silver sent to Spain from, 243. Attention ought to be paid to simplifying the operation of working the mines, 244. Gold mines in Brazil, 345. How worked, 346. Produce of, 347. Diamond mines, 353.


Miquelon, number of French inhabitants on the two islands of, v. 342.

Miracles, ancient, the complexity of, illustrated by a recent occurrence, iii. 259.

Misfortunes, the source of religion, vi. 225.

INDEX.

Monzambique made the staple of the Portuguese trade with Africa, i. 155.

Mountains, philosophical inquiry into the origin of, iii. 85. Lehmann's theory of, 87.

Mulattoes in Spanish America, who, iii. 104.

Mujos, on what occasion introduced into Christian churches, i. 33.

Muse, the natural history of, and the arts by which it is adulterated, i. 402.

Myth of the Canadas, described, v. 163.

Mythology of the Brahmin of India, i. 43, 65.

N.

Nabobs in Indostan, the nature of their dignity and authority, ii. 106. Their independence to be dated from the conquest of Kouti Khan, 111.

Narragas, sent by Velasquez to supercede Cortez in his Mexican expedition, is defeated and taken prisoner by him, ii. 386.

Natchez, an Indian tribe in Louisiana, their manners and customs, v. 212. Description of the country on which they are settled, 213. Are, by ill treatment from the French, induced to form a conspiracy to exterminate them, 214. The plot discovered, ib.

National distances, the use of, in the rude stages of human society, i. 231.

National spirit, how formed, iii. 263. Jealously, its destructive operations, iv. 211.

Natives, the philosophical study of, interesting, ii. 196.

Nature, why none of the productions of, are perfect, vi. 348.

Navigation, the first attempts of, in Europe, i. 11. Confin'd nature of, before the invention of the compass, 93. Historical review of the military application of, vi. 333.

Navigation Act, English, motives to the establishing this law, v. 15.

Navy, military, must have a trading one for its basis, ii. 267. Remarks on that of France, with the means of improving it, iv. 466.

Nécar, Madame, account of the hospital established by her, iv. 195.

Negapatam, on the coast of Coromandel, account of the Dutch factory there, i. 226.

Negroes, great importance of, into Spanish America, iii. 190. Reflections on their slave trade, 195. Inquiry into the cause of their black colour, iv. 36. See Slave trade.


Newfoundland, a cod fishery first carried on there by the French, v. 120. Its situation and description, 325. Its discovery, and history, of English and French transactions there, ib. Harbour of St. John's, 326. French town formed on the bay of Placentia, 327. A parallel between this and other American settlements, ib. The whole island secured to the English by the peace of Utrecht, 328. Description of the cod fish, 329. Account of the great bank on which the cod are found, 330. The cod fishery there, ib. Disputes between the English and the French about the limits of the fishery of the latter, 338. Rife of the English, and decay of the French fisheries, 343.

New Jersey, is first settled by Swedes, then conquered by the Dutch, and lastly surrendered to the English, v. 354. The two provinces of, united under one government, 385. Present number of inhabitants, ib. Remarks on the historical obscurity of this colony, 386. Its dependent circumstances, 387. Means proposed for advancing its prosperity, ib.

New Orleans, its situation, settlement, and description, v. 217.

New World, great changes produced by the discovery of, i. 1.


Newton, Sir Isaac, his character, vi. 467.

Nigeria, Fort, its situation, described, v. 246.

Nicaragua, the province of, alternately subject to two extremes of floods and drought, ii. 474.

Niger, account of the Africans leftist on the banks of that river, ii. 55. See Senegal.

Nile, description of that river, iv. 41.

Nobility, an analysis of, iv. 427. An odious distinction, when not obtained by services of utility to the state, vi. 384.

Nepal, the shrub on which the cochineal animal breeds, described, ii. 455. How cultivated for the fake of cochineal, ib.

Normant, ancient, their character, i. 11. Were the first who carried on any intercourse with Africa, 31.

Northern nations, how their conquests over the Roman empire were facilitated, i. 9.

North-west passage to the East Indies, examination of the arguments in favour of, v. 372. This passage should be sought for toward Welcome Bay, 373. The existence of such a passage to be determined by Captain Cook, 316.

Norway, colonies sent from, to the Orkneys, Fero, and Iceland, iv. 253. The navigators of, probably reached the northern extremities of America long before the time of Columbus, 254. See Denmark.


Nowas Feta, Blasco, is sent over as viceroy of Peru, to reform the government there, iii. 35. His character, and rash measures, 37. Is degraded and banished by the Spaniards in power there, 38. Is recalled, but killed in the civil commotions, ib.

Nutmegs, first discovered in the Molucca Islands by the Chinese, i. 109. Description of the tree which produces them, with the properties of the fruit, 198.

- Oath, reflections on the frequent imposition of, in civil society, i. 262.
- Oaxaca, a province of Mexico, peculiar for the production and culture of cochineal, ii. 437. The town of that name described, 348.
- Ocean, its use in preserving an equipoise over the face of the earth, v. 290.
- Oglethorpe, General, conducts the first colonists sent over to Georgia, v. 63.
- Ohio river, discovery of, by the French, and its description, v. 267. Forts built along the river to confine the English, who destroy them, 268.
- Oil, its property of calming the agitations of the liver, v. 231. Vegetable oil more effectual than animal oil for this purpose, 332.
- Olives, the cultivation of, recommended to the Portuguese, iii. 369.
- Oman, of the Indo-Persian empire, foundation of that dignity, ii. 104. Fluctuating nature of their authority, 105.
- Ongolga, an old Iroquois, his remarkable fortitude at death, v. 163.
- Opium, how prepared in the East, from white poppies, i. 425. Is chiefly produced in the province of Bahar, 406. Is highly prized for its intoxicating powers, 407.
- Opposition of Canada described, v. 163.
- Ordrana, Pizarro's lieutenant, fails up the river Amazons in South America, iii. 301. His voyage excited more curiosity than it produced information, 314.
- Orina, a province bordering on the coast of Coromandel, included under it in description, i. 380. Is supposed to be coveted by the English East India Company, 351.
- Orleans, Duke of, regent of France, review of his administration in the finances, ii. 73. His personal character, 30.
- Orleans, New. See New Orleans.
- Ormuz, description of that city, and the manners of the inhabitants, i. 96. Is reduced and fortified by Albuquerque, 97. The Portuguese expelled by Shah Abbas, with the assent of the English, 315.
- Oroonoko, the courage, magnanimity, and peculiarities of this river, ii. 64. Account of the original native Indians bordering on it, 66. Consequences of the tyrannical treatment of their women, 68. Renown of an Indian woman reproached with the murder of her female infant, 69. Spanish settlements and improvements on the banks of this river, 79.
- Orry, superintendent of the French finances, his character, ii. 91.
- Oskend, considerations which led to the formation of an Austrian East India Company

Osiego, Fort, built to interrupt the fur trade of the French in Canada, vi. 380.

Otter, a description of that animal, v. 164.

Ottoman, the founder of the Turkish empire, vi. 231.

Ouene, or wild cat of Canada, described, v. 166.

Oyenhiern, Chancellor, his opinion of statesmen, vi. 314.

P.

Pachos, of Egypt, his precarious authority, iv. 8.

Pacos, a Peruvian beast of burden, described, iii. 107. Their fleth, skin, and fleece, 108.

Paganism, causes of its giving way to the Christian religion, vi. 217.

Pagnalofe, Commandant of New Mexico, takes refuge in England from the persecution of the monks, ii. 418.

Pangadoras, Indian, general character of, i. 71.

Palm wines, from what and how prepared, in Mexico, ii. 419.

Palmyra, ancient opulence, and destruction of that city, i. 86.

Panama, the town of, founded by Pedrarias, iii. 8. Is destroyed by pirates, 133. Its jurisdiction and pearl fisheries, ib. Description of the present town, 134. The island ought to be cut through, to open a communication with the South Sea, 259.

Paper, Chinese, an account of, ii. 300. Their hanging paper, ib.

Paper currency, the inconveniences occasioned by, in the British American colonies, vi. 117. That of the congress not cordially received, 128.

Para, in Brazil, historical description of that government, ii. 324.

Paraguay, its boundaries and extent, ii. 158. Account of the river from which the country derives its name, ib. Manners and customs of the natives, ib. First discovery of, by the Spaniards, 159. Three large provinces formed in this district by the Jesuits, 163. Natural produce of the country, ib. Number of inhabitants, ib. Account of the herb Paraguay, 165. Great trade with mules and other cattle, 168. The trade and communication with Buenos Ayres, how carried on, 169. Wild bulls killed for the hides, 170. Revenue from, to Spain, 171. Principles on which the Jesuits founded their mission there, 172. Why population has not succeeded here, 176. Incursions of the Portugese, 180. The small-pox, 181. The climate, ib. The million of, taken from the Jesuits, 187.

Paraguay, the herb described, iii. 166. Its uses in South America, 168.

Paraitba, in Brazil, some account of that district, iii. 339.

Paramahiro, the chief town of Surinam, described, iv. 254.

Park, Capt., governor of Antigua, his maladministration, and death, vi. 24.


Pataos, from the mountains of Candahar overrun the Indoostan empire, ii. 101. Their present situation and character, 117.

Patras, mineral productions of this province, i. 412.

Parrochians chiefly to be found in small states, i. 111.

Paul, St. in Brazil, a town built by felons transported from Portugal, iii. 542. Their depredations over the country, 343. Submit to orderly government, ib.

Pears, Angelos, the plant described, iv. 136.

Peace, political, nowhere to be found, vi. 318.

Pears, how produced, iv. 167. Erroneous popular opinions relating to, ib. Different kinds of, and artificial ones, 168.

Pearl fisheries on the coast of the island of Ceylon, some account of, i. 211. Another on the island Baharen, 357. At Panama, described, iii. 154. That at Cubagua exhausted, iv. 169.

Pedrarias, is sent by the court of Spain to superintend Balboa at Darien, and puts him to death, iii. 8. Founds the settlement of Panama on the Southern Ocean, ib.

Pegu, a province on the Bay of Benga1, furnishes the American merchants with precious stones, i. 425.

Penn, Admiral, his unsuccessful attack upon St. Domingo, iii. 416. Reduces Jamaica, 418.

Penn, William, receives a territory in America from the English government, in discharge of debts owing to his father the admiral, vi. 8. Calls it Pennsylvania, and settles it with Quakers, 9. Purchases the land of the Indians, and conciliates their affections, ib. The legislative principles of his government, 10.

Pennsylvania, this country granted by the English government to William Penn, who gives name to it, vi. 8. Is settled by persecuted Quakers, who conciliate the friendship of the Indians, 9. Equitable principles of government established, 10. Distribution of lands, 11. Rapid progress of the
INDEX.

529


Persecution, always followed by degeneracy, vi. 452.

Persecution for religion, an obstacle to population, vi. 408.

Peris, review of the ancient history of, i. 313. Account of the victories and government of Schari Abbas the Great, 314. The Portuguese driven from Ormus by the admittance of the English, 315. A trade established at Gombroon by the English, ib. The trade of, declines, under a fascinon of weak princes, 348. Is conquered by the Afghans, ib. Who are driven out by Konli Khan, 249.

Perista, Gulf of, account of the districts round, and the inhabitants, i. 354. Account of the city of Maceate, and its trade, 355.

Peru, state of that empire when invaded by Pizarro, iii. 12. The Inca Ataballul feigned by Pizarro, 14. He is safely put to death, 16. The country plundered by the Spaniards, ib. Remarks on the facility of this revolution, 27. This empire probably first founded by shipwrecked navigators, ib. Marco Capar, and his institutions, 19. Civil policy, 21. Distribution of lands, 22. Reflections on the state of property there, 23. The Peruvians ignorant of the use of coins, while abounding in gold and silver, 24. No reason to doubt the relations of the Spaniards concerning their history and civil institutions, 25. The same credit not due to the accounts of their grandeur and magnificence, 26. Their palaces and fortifications, 27. Their aqueducts and reservoirs, ib. Their roads and bridges, 28. Their historical registers, ib. Their baths, artificial gardens, and sculpture, 29. The Spanish accounts of these matters reduced to probability and truth, 30. Their peculiar are in manufacturing copper, 31. Inquiry into the nature of their tools, ib. Were ignorant of the mechanical uses of wood, 32. Confusions that ensued by rapacious quarrels among the Spaniards, ib. Massacre of Pizarro and his adherents, by Almagro the younger, 33. Review of the regulations made by the court of Spain for the government of this province, 35. Despotic conduct of Gonzales Pizarro, 38. Arrival of the priest Pedro de la Caica, 41. End of Pizarro and his confidant Carvajal, ib. Reflections on the conduct of the Spaniards there, 41. Extent of the empire, 45. Maladies to which the inhabitants are liable, 55. The country peculiarly subject to earthquakes, 92. Singularities of climate in Upper Peru, 94. Rain, a phenomenon seldom seen, 95. No springs, and few rivers in Lower Peru, ib. Evidences of a great former population, 96. Peru worsed treated by its conquerors than Mexico, ib. Degeneracy of the natives under the hand of oppression, 97. Introduction of Negroes to supply the decrease of native inhabitants, 98. Why more Spaniards there than in Mexico, ib. Present state of the country described, ib. Description of Cuzco, the ancient metropolis, 102. Animals peculiar to the country, 106. Manufactures, 110. Mines, 113. Thole of gold and silver, 116. Ancient Peruvian method of building, 116. The dominion of mokuh8 superstition over the inhabitants, 129. Character of the women, 131. Estimate of the present trade of this province, 141. Defences of the state of, 258.

Peter I. Caesar of Ruffia, attempts to open a communication between Siberia and India, ii. 253. Amount of his revenue, 259. Projected several inland navigations, 261. His law for the enfranchisement of vaillants, ib. Reforms his troops, 264. His measures for making Ruffia a maritime power, 265. Remarks on his character and administration, 269. Peter, St. on the coast of Newfoundland, and its French inhabitants, described, v. 344.

Petrarch, his character, vi. 455.


Philip II. of Spain, persecutes his subjects in the Low Countries on account of religion, i. 177. The republic of Holland established, 178. His political character, vi. 367. Philip III. of Spain, his political character, vi. 397.
INDEX.

INDEX.

405. Celibacy of the clergy, 407. Persecution for religion, 408. Annuities for lives, 409. All the means which make a state proper tend to promote population, 411.


Port au Prince, on the island of St. Domingo, inquiry whether this district be proper for the situation of the capital of the French settlements there, iv. 256. The town destroyed by an earthquake, but rebuilt on the same spot, 258.

Port Royal, in Jamaica, account of its destruction by an earthquake, v. 53.

Porto Bello, uncomfortableomeness of the climate there, iii. 155. Extensive trade carried on there between Europe and South America, ib. Brief history of this traffic to its decline, 156.

Porto Rico, first discovery of that island, and landing of Ponce de Leon there, iv. 171. Is peculiarly favourable to the growth of the manchineel tree, 173. The natives make an experiment to try if the Spaniards were immortal, 174. But are reduced, ib. Description and present state of the island, 175. Number of inhabitants and produce, 176. Hints for further improvement of the island, 177.

Portuguese were the first European nations that attempted maritime discoveries, i. 85. The island of Madeira discovered by, ib. Their first expeditions to Africa, 31. Voyage of Váice de Gama to the East Indies, 32. 77. Obtain a papal grant of all their eastern discoveries, 78. Voyage of Alvarèz Cabral, ib. Establish an Eastern trade to Lisbon, ib. Their motives to seizing the island of Socotora, 90. Extensive schemes of Albuquerque, 92. The city of Ormus taken, 97. Malacca reduced, 105. Subdivision of the neighbouring kingdoms, 105. Reflections on their Indian exploits under Albuquerque, 115. Are assailed against the Moors by Henry of Burgundy and his French knights, ib. The principle of the nation corrupted by their eastern conquests, 112. Send an ambassador to China, 113. His transactions there, 148. Their commanders treat the Chinese ill, and are checked, ib. Obtain a grant of the island Macao, 149. The empire of Japan discovered, ib. Review of their successes in the East, 154. Their settlements in Africa, 155. Treat the natives unjustly every where, 156. Their corruption and profligacy, ib. Who administrated, the Duke of Braganza, 157. A general confederacy of the Indian powers formed against them, 163. Are protected by the vigilance of Atonda, ib. State of national affairs on the death of king Sebastian, 167. Detail of the confines that effected the ruin of their affairs in India, 168. The present state of their Oriental connections, 170. First discovery of Brazil, iii. 266. Which is defiled, and made a receptacle for felons, 268. Hereditary antipathy between the Portuguese and Spaniards, ib. Account of the inquisition, ib. Grants made in Brazil to Portuguese noblemen, 270. The natives there civilized by the Jesuits, 280. Brazil overrun by the Dutch, 286. The Duke of Braganza placed upon the throne of, 296. Brazil recovered, 299. Disputes with Spain about the boundaries of their colonies, 311. An exclusive company formed for the wine trade, 316. The Brazil trade subjected to a monopoly, 317. Impediments by which that province is depressed, 327. Decline of this kingdom, and its distant settlements, 361. Cause of the connection between Portugal and England, 363. Nature of the trade with England, ib. Degeneracy of the Portuguese, owing to the dependance they are sunk under to England, 356. The first step necessary towards their recovery, 367. Articles proper for them to cultivate, 359. Remarks on the discouragements of their wine trade, 370. Are mistaken in their measures for restoring the culture of corn, 372. Number of the people, and amount of the revenue, ib. All reformation inefficient until their clergy are reduced to subordination to the civil power, 379. The fear of incensing England ought not to protract their establishing good regulations, 380. Ought not to submit to be protected, 381. Must fail, if they will not cultivate a naval strength, 382. Might have made a good advantage of the destruction of Lisbon, ib. Account of the settlements on the coast of Africa, iv. 78. Their East India discoveries and conquests occasioned
them to neglect arts and agriculture. vi. 348.

Potato plant described, iv. 136.

Potofy, the silver mines there, when and how discovered, iii. 119. Their produce at different periods of time, 120.

Poverty of a people, a check to their population, vi. 465.

Prayer, the origin of, vi. 215.

Pray, reflections on the liberty of, iii. 453. Particularly in Great Britain, vi. 260.

Priesthood, the sole principle by which they are actuated, vi. 284. The hierarchy of, in the Christian church, traced, 286.

Printing, importance of this art to mankind, vi. 470.

Privileges, personal, resulting from professional character, reflections on, ii. 473.

Property, reflections on the origin and abuse of, iv. 310. v. 32. The right of a man to make a testamentary disposition of his estate inquired into, 245. The possessions of, precarious in civilized society, 259. A community of, a most dangerous doctrine, vi. 4. The unequal distribution of, the foundation of two irreconcilable parties in society, 215.

Pray, flying, of the Marianne islands, described, ii. 468.

Protestants, review of the persecution of, by Lewis XIV. in France, vi. 323.

Provide, island of, how first settled, v. 64. A colony established there by Captain Woods Rogers, ib.

Piracies, military character of, vi. 327. See Frederick III.

Ptolemy, why he fixed the first meridian at the western part of the Canary islands, ii. 357.

Pulacoondar, the English settlement there destroyed by their own Macassar soldiers, i. 328.

Punishments, capital, remarks on the injury done to society by them, i. 341.


Purple dye, peculiar kind of, celebrated by the ancients, found on the coasts of Guayaquil and Guatimala, iii. 120.

Q.


Quinquever, where found in Europe, iii. 122.

Quito, in Peru, the province described, iii. 77. Circumstances that moderate the heat of the torrid zone, 78. Purity of the air, and uniform beauty of the climate, ib. Is the most populous part of the American continent, 79. Produce and manufactures, ib. Bark the only article of produce exported, 83. Profligate manners of the inhabitants of the city of Quito, 84.

R.

Raguelilian, Governor of Cabullitan, stimulates Babar to the conquest of Tashkien, ii. 102. Remonstrances of a Baniyan to him on this event, 103.

Rajahputtes, mountaineers who continually harass the Indoostan government, account of, ii. 117.

Ralegh, Sir Walter, his expedition to Guiana, iv. 286. His character, v. 279. His expedition to Carolina, ib.

Rats, great ravages made by, in the Caribbee islands, iv. 131. Of Canada, described, v. 163.

Red Sea, a geographical description of, i. 92. Advantages resulting to Europe from the Portugueze obtaining the command of this sea, 93. Measurers taken by the English to improve their trade in that sea, 345.

Reformed religion in Europe, life of, i. 177.

Religion, the sources of, vi. 215. The natural progres of, 221. The true tendency of its precepts, 479.

Republics, a view of the administration of government in, vi. 316. A secret conspiracy carried on by all monarchies against free States, 317.

Revel, a much better station for the naval forces of Russia than Cronstadt and Petersburgh, ii. 267.

Revenue, royal, no measure of the power of an empire, vi. 427. The custom of farming out revenues ruinous to a state, ib.
INDEX.

Revolution in human affairs, whether of utility to mankind, i. 2.

Rusohov, the root and its qualities described, ii. 303. Where produced, and how prepared, 304. The several kinds of, ib.

Rice, the different kinds of, cultivated in China, i. 177. How cultivated on Madagascar, ii. 15. Botanical description of that plant, vi. 58. The cultivation of, injurious to the healthiness of a country, ib. Is successfully cultivated in South Carolina, 59.

Rio Janeiro, the government of, in Brazil, described, iii. 337. The sugar cane, indigo, and coffee, cultivated there, ib. The capital city described, 339.

Roads, the state of, everywhere indicative of the degree of civilization of the natives, vi. 240.

Roanokc Bay, in Carolina, first attempt of the English to form a settlement there, v. 279.

Romans, ancient, their motives for seizing the island of Sicily, i. 6. Why inferior to the Greeks in the cultivation of arts and sciences, 7. The final overthrow of the empire, how favoured, 8. The subversion of the ancient empire of, attributed primarily to Wodin, the Scythian chief, ii. 272. The liberty of, originally destroyed by Cato the elder, vi. 209. Review of the history of, with a character of the Romans, 279. The feudal system formed on the ruins of the empire, ib. 269. Why inferior to Greece in the fine arts, 449. Character of the Roman literature, 450. The fine arts expelled on the subversion of the empire, 452. And driven back again from Constantinople, 454.

Rome, modern, origin of the ecclesiastical empire of, i. 10. Character of, in the fifteenth century, 22. Rise of its ecclesiastical power, vi. 218. Leading causes of the reformation, 219. The discovery of America instrumental to its decline, 222. Historical account of the rise of papal dominion, 286. Circumstances that combined to divest the pope of his temporal power, 283.

Rojas, Commandant of New Mexico, assassinated, ii. 477.

Rum, how procured from the sugar-cane, iv. 150.


S.

Saba, the island, inhabitants, and produce, described, iv. 216.

Sable, of Canada, described, v. 163.

Sacrifices, the origin of, vi. 215.

Saff, account of the port of, in Barbary, iv. 30.

Sago, the natural history and uses of, i. 105.

Sahara, deferts of, in Africa, described, iv. 44.

Saints, three islands dependent on Guadalupes, account of, iv. 352.

Saldado, Josep, hanged for disinterested good nature, iii. 121.

Saltee, in Barbary, account of that port, iv. 29.

Salsette, island, is reduced by the English, i. 376. Described, ib.

Salt, qualities of that made in Portugal, iii. 370. Is a specific against the poison of the manchineel tree, iv. 174.

Saltpetre, how produced and refined at Patna in Indostan, i. 413. The amount and rate of the European export of this article, ib.

Salvador, St. the capital of Brazil, built, iii. 280. Is taken by the Dutch, 286. Is surrendered by them, 287. The city described, 333. Manners of the inhabitants, ib.

San-Salvador, one of the Bahama islands, discovered by Columbus, ii. 360. Friendly
INDEX.

intercourse between him and the natives, ib.
Sanctuarie, ecclesiastical, for criminals, reflections on, ii. 414.
Sander's tree, a botanical description of, with its uses, i. 367.
Sandrocetus, drives the Macedonians out of India, and captures all Indostan under his dominion, ii. 121.
Santa Cruz, the island of, described, iv. 259.
Santa Fe de Bogota, the capital city of New Grenada, described, iii. 77.
Saratoga, capture of the British army under General Burgoyne there, by the American General Gates, vi. 177.
Saffofras tree, botanical description of, vi. 71. Its properties and uses, 72.
Saxony, the best European imitation of porcelain carried on there, ii. 289.
Schub Abbas the Great, King of Persia, a review of his victories, and administration of government, i. 314. Unites his forces with the English, to drive the Portuguese from Hormuz, 315.
Schirks, a nation of Indian republicans, described, ii. 117.
Schilderop, an agent of the Danish African Company, his amiable character, iv. 86.
Scots Highlanders, their character, vi. 54.
Seychelles, driven out of their native country by Pompey, overrun the north and west parts of Europe, ii. 172. Their leader, Wodin, excites all nations against the Roman empire, 173. See Tartary.
Seats, of Canada, described, v. 255. Manner of taking them, 252. Uses of their skins, ib.
Sea, its use in preserving an equipage in the several parts of the globe, v. 290. The agitation of, calmed by oil, 331.
Seamen, their unjust treatment in England and other countries condemned, vi. 345. Their character displayed, 489.
Seafolly, in politics, may be of temporary advantage, but tends to certain ruin, ii. 203.
Senegal, river, described, iv. 67.
Serenese, a Spanish settlement in Chili, account of, iii. 149.
Seringham, account of that island, and its magnificent pagoda, ii. 114. Is given up by the French, 123.
Serrre Leone, on the coast of Africa, state of the trade carried on there, iv. 70.
Shan-frits, language of Indo-Tan, some account of, i. 45.
Siam, a detail of the trade carried on there by the Dutch, i. 216. Occasion of the French entering that kingdom, ii. 43. All the fertility and riches of the soil destroyed by the tyranny of the government, 45. The French interest there ruined by the errors of the Jesuits, 48.
Sicily, how the arts of agriculture and commerce were introduced into that island, i. 6.
Silk, how collected in Bengal, and its qualities, i. 404. 413. The Chinese account of the discovery of, ii. 293. Introduction of the manufacture into Europe, 294. Qualities of the several kinds of European silk, ib. The silk from China superior to that of Europe, 295. The two principal kinds of Chinese silk, ib. Character of the Chinese manufactured silks, 296.
Skin, inquiry into the cause of the black colour of, in Negroes, iv. 36.
Slave trade in Guinea, historical account of, iv. 62. Method of conducting them to the European factories, 65. The coasts frequented for this traffic, 66. Amount of the annual exportation of, with the rates at which they are purchased, 67. What sort of merchandise the slaves are bought, 81. Origin of the English African Company, 84. Annual amount of the English slave trade, 85. A Damilish African Company formed, 86. Spanish attempts to enter into the slave trade, 88. Remarks on the present state and method of carrying on this trade, 89. The proper reasons for the voyage, 90. How disposed of in America, 92. Stories illustrating the character of Negroes, ib. Their vindictive spirit under oppression, 95. Their wretched condition in America, 97. Their different situation in extensive and in confined colonies, ib. Their different treatment by different European nations compared, 98. Their disorders, 99. Methods of cure, 100. Hints for rendering their condition more supportable, 102. Are strongly affected by music, 103. Plantation-born Negroes the most useful, 106. Female Negroes, why loved by Europeans, 107. How this trade might be abolished, 126.
INDEX.

The right of man over man inquired into, ib. The arguments pleaded to justify slavery examined, 119. Hints for abolishing slavery in America, 126. Its influence over the mind in the Turkish empire, vi. 234.

Smuggling, the great support of the French American settlements, iv. 384. 447. A relaxation of prohibitory laws recommended, ib. The natural consequence of oppressive laws, vi. 131.

Soares, Lopes, succeeds Albuquerque in the vicecry of India, and executes his plans, i. 112.

Society, barbarous and civilized, compared, i. 231. v. 297. The progres of, traced, ii. 174. Monastic, the nature of, investigated, v. 172. Evidences of man being formed and defined for association, vi. 244. The various revolutions of, 226. All the obligations of man have a reference to, 475.

Sectas, motives of the Portugueze in seizing this island, i. 90.

Socrates, his character, vi. 465. Separated morality from religion, 474.

Soul, whether its vegetative powers can be exhausted by cultivation, v. 86.

Soldiers, the great increas of, in Europe, the source of oppression, by the increase of taxes, vi. 330. Their being kept in idleness, another evil, ib. The number of soldiers has diminished courage, 331. The increase of, tends to depopulation, 332.

South, the people of, appear to be born for depopulation, vi. 273.

South Sea, the several restraints laid upon the navigation of, by the Spaniards, ii. 474. First discovery of, by Balboa, iii. 7.

South Sea Company, English, established, iii. 256.

Souza, Thomas de, his generous release of a female slave to her lover, I. 166.

Spain, the state of, when the several provinces were united by the marriage of Ferdinand and Isabella, i. 18.

Contests between the crowns of Spain and Portugal, concerning the property of American and Asiatic discoveries, ii. 226. Sends missionaries to the Philippine islands, 228. Review of their government and policy there, 231. Remarks on the importance of these islands, by proper management, 235. Inquiry into the cause of the antipathy the Spaniards have to the French, 239. Their plan of dominion in the East, thwarted by the treachery they enjoy in America, 231. Manners of the ancient natives of, 254. Is subdued by the Carthaginians, 252. Is reduced under the power of the Romans, 253. Is subjected by the Goths, and afterwards by the Moors, ib. The kingdoms of Castile and Aragon united, 355. Columbus fitted out for the discovery of a new continent, 356. Their settlement and cruelties on the island of St. Domingo, 364. Their successes in America greatly facilitated by the Indian women, 378. Conquest of Mexico by Cortez, 380.

INDEX.

Quality of sugar depending on the soil it grows on, 149. Distillation of rum, 150. Hints for improving the cultivation of the cane, ib. Sugar the principal article of exportation from the islands, 151. Requires considerable capitals to cultivate it with success, 210. Culture of, at Barbados, v. 19.

Sugar-maple tree described, vi. 84. Method of procuring its sap, ib. How the sap is reduced to sugar, ib.

Sulty, Minister of Henry IV. of France, his character as a financier, ii. 70.

Sumatra, situation and description of that island, i. 210. Religion and government of the southern Malay inhabitants, ib. Account of the northern inhabitants, 211. Description of the camphor tree, 212. The face of the country, and its mineral productions, 213. Trade carried on there by the Dutch, 214.

Superfluous, monkish, characterized, i. 10. Natural events of an extraordinary kind, one great source of, ii. 380. iii. 237. Its univerality and object, v. 123.


Susa, in the regency of Tunis, its harbour described, iv. 20.

Sweden, the ancient inhabitants of, concerned with other northern nations in subverting the Roman empire, i. 197. Barbarous manners of the natives until the time of Gustavus Vasa, ib. Ill confessions of his shutting his ports against the Lubeck ships, 198. Martial spirit diffused by Gustavus Adolphus, ib. Change in the manners of the people on the death of Charles

T.

Tobago, description of that island, v. 74. Its revolution, 75. Is ceded to England, 78. Error committed by the first English settlers, 83. Its population and produce, ib. Tabasco, the Indians there reduced by Cortez, ii. 376.

Tatapoy, Siamese monks, described, ii. 48.

Tamerlane, his extensive conquests in the East, ii. 101.

Tanjour, description of that country and its produce, ii. 176. A settlement formed there by the Danes, 177.

Tart, how procured from the pine-tree in Carolina, vi. 57.


Taxes, how levied in China, i. 241. The great increase of, to be attributed to the increase of standing armies, vi. 330. A definition of, 421. An historical view of, 413. A poll-tax, the most arbitrary of all taxes, 414. Taxes on the necessities of life, cruel, 415. Injuries of duties on trade, 416. A land-tax the only one which conciliates the public interest with the rights of individuals, 417. The objections to it stated, 420. Ruinous consequences of farming out revenues, 421. Ought to be regulated by the representatives of the people, 423. Consequences from the right of imposing taxes being in the prince, 424. 434.

Tea, the first introduction of this herb into England, and the universal fondness of the people for it, i. 420. Vast consumption of, in England, 421. Description and culture of, ii. 280. The varieties of, how produced, 281. Why generally drank by the Chinese, 282. Attempts made to cultivate the plant in Europe, 283.

Tellecherry, on the coast of Malabar, an English factory for pepper there, ii. 143. A compensation paid for the country duties, 145.

Tenerife, description of that island, and the height of the mountain, ii. 553.

Tetuan, historical account of that port, iv. 28.

Teixeira, Michael de, archbishop of St. Salvador, harasses the Dutch invaders of Brazil, iii. 287.

Theocracy, why the worst of all modes of government, i. 365. The foundation of, vi. 216.

Theology, alters every thing, in order to bend them to its own mystical principles, iv. 37. Obstructs the discovery of truth by creatures, 43. The various principles on which it has been founded by different nations, vi. 472. Morality the basis of all, 473.

Thibet, the articles of trade taken by that kingdom from Bengal, i. 402. Maka, a peculiar production to the country, ib. See Tartary.

Thomaz, St. the Danish settlement on the coast of Coromandel, historical account of, ii. 43.

Thos, the island of, settled by the Danes, iv. 256. Is frequented by the Buccaneers, 257. Other circumstances that established a trade there, ib. Number of inhabitants, 262.

Tilego of Land, how far it will supply the place of dung, v. 57.

Tinmar, description of that island, and the motives that induced the Dutch to secure it, i. 283.


Tlascalas, republic of, opposes the march of Cortez to Mexico, ii. 392. Account of the government and manners of the natives, 393. Make an alliance with the Spaniards, and reinforce their army, 384. Return of Cortez to Tlascalas, 392. Manufactures of this province, 445.

Tobacco, historical account of its consumption and trade in France, ii. 154. First
INDEX.

discovery, and description of this caustic plant, vi. 30. Method of cultivating it, 31. Management of the plant after it is cut, 32. Comparison of the quality of tobacco from different parts of the world, ib. Is a great exhaurster of soil, 35.

Tolerance, the free exercise of, the means of extinguishing fanaticism and enthusiasm, vi. 232.

Touquin, the religion of Confucius adopted there, but not his morality; ii. 50. Character of the inhabitants, ib. No European merchants able to establish a correspondence with them, which is confined to the Chinefe, 52.

Torrid zone, formerly supposed to be inhabitable, i. 25. Circumstances that moderate the heat of, iii. 78.

Tortuga, the island of, becomes a nest of pirates, iii. 450. Their depredations chiefly directed to the Spanish, 427. Some of their most remarkable exploits, ib. Description of the island, iv. 362. The colony destroyed, by orders from Madrid, ib. Is retaken and fortified by the Bucanneers, under the command of Willis, an Englishman, 383. The English expelled by the French, ib. Produce of the island, 364.

Tourn, how extricated from feudal obligations, iv. 172. See Cities

Trade, how carried on during the feudal ages, i. 13.

Trajan, Emperor, his patriotic declaration to the Roman people, vi. 199.

Tunis, in the kingdom of Tunis, built and settled by the Danes, ii. 177. Declines, ib. Is attacked by the rajah of Tunis, at the instigation of the Dutch, but rescued by the English, 178. Present circumstances of the settlement, 188.

Transmigration of souls, the influence of this doctrine upon the civil laws of India, i. 51. Mythological account of, 66. Probable origin of the idea of, ib. Tends to soften the manners of its believers, ii. 323.

Transportation of English felons, the good policy of, v. 11.

Travelling, an immoral employment, iii. 276.

Travancor, on the coast of Malabar, account of that kingdom, and its late entering monarch, i. 369.

Treaties, between princes, have not the validity of those formed between nations, vi. 312.

Trelawney, Governor of Jamaica, his treaty with the fugitive negroes there, v. 59.

Trinidad, situation and climate of that island, iv. 165. Its extent and description, 166. Decline of the island from the perishing of the cacao trees, ib.

Tripoli, description of this country and its inhabitants, iv. 15. Their trade, ib. Description of its capital town, 17.

Troy, Rivieres, city of, in Canada, described, v. 245.


Turks, character of that people in the fifteenth century, i. 27. Their attempts on Europe checked by the naval enterprises of the Portuguese in the East, 94. Origin of their empire, and a review of their policy and history, vi. 231. Expedition of Solyman to suppress rebellious communions, 233. Causes of the little influence the Turkish princes have in the affairs of Europe, ib. Murder and affirmation the substitutes for laws in Turkey, 234.

Tynburn, Dr. carries over a colony of Greeks to Florida, vi. 76.

Tarentine, how extracted from the pine-tree, in Carolina, vi. 57.

Tyranny, the consequences of, in a state, iii. 32. The system of, analyzed, v. 7. Why it is submitted to, 298.

V.

Vacefs, intention of the law of, at Constantinople, i. 130.

Valdivia, his expedition into Chili, iii. 146. He and his men destroyed by the natives, 147.

Viatour, why esteemed a virtue, vi. 475.

Vilparaiso, city of, in Chile, described, iii. 149.

Von Horn, a Buccaneer, his intrepid character, iii. 431. Surprises Vera Cruz, 432.

Van RIeeckee, recommends a Dutch settlement to be made at the Cape of Good Hope, i. 248. Is intrusted with the management of it, ib.

Vane, Henry, his enthusiastic character, and disturbances excited by him in New England, v. 367.

Vanilla, description of that plant, and its culture, 427. Its preparation and uses, ib.

Varech, a sea plant, used for manure in the Caribbean Islands, iv. 131.

Varnish, Chinese, natural history of, ii. 297.

Vedam, the sacred book of the Bramins of India, the source of many diversities relative to faith and practice, i. 56.

Vega Real, plain of, in the island of St. Domingo, recommended to the cultivation of the French, iv. 186.

Vetigofnoa forms a settlement on the island of Cuba, and prosecutes discoveries on the
INDEX.

American continent, ii. 374. Commission
Fernando Cortez to undertake the conquest
of Mexico, 375. His perfidious method of
obtaining slaves from Florida, vi. 70.

Venezuela, province of, in South America,
his history, productions and trade, iii. 52.
Its flourishing state under the Guipucos Company, 55. Its imports and exports,
58.

Venice, its early prosperity from the opera-
tions of commerce, i. 15. Obtains the
Eastern trade through the channel of E-
ypt, 88. Measures taken by, to obstruct
the Portuguese in their Indian enterprises,
89. Open a trade with India from the
port of Suez in Egypt, 90. Account of
the origin of the city and republic of, vi.
274. Was the first regular government
formed in Europe, 276. Its decline to be
dated from the discovery of America, ib.
its mysterious policy and jealousy, 277.
The office of state inquisitors, 275. Regu-
lation of the naval and military com-
mands, 279.

Vera Cruz, Old and New, described, ii. 456.
Account of the intercourse carried on there
by the fleets from Old Spain, 458. Is fur-
nished and pillaged by the Buccaneers, in
433.

Vera Cruz, city, improvements which they
are capable of, iii. 374. Description of, and
their trade, iv. 69.

Vetom, Admiral, cause of his ill success in
attacking Cartagena, iii. 45.

Vieira, a wild animal in Peru, described,
with the method of hunting it, iii. 108.
Their fleeces, 109. Uses to which their
wool is applied, 110.

Viera, Juan Fernandez de, forms a conspi-
cracy in Brazil to cut off the Dutch go-
 vernors of that province, ii. 297. His
fleeces against them, 298. Expels the
Dutch, 299.

Vieira, Anthony, a Jesuit, his extraordinary
sermon on the fleeces of the Dutch in
Brazil, iii. 289.

Villain, feudal, how emancipated from
personal slavery, iv. 114.

Vincent, St. was one of the islands resided
by the native Caribs, by the English and
French, v. 80. Their number increased by
an accession of Negroes, 81. Distinc-
tion between the black and red Caribs, ib.
The Caribs harassed by the French, 82.
Origin of the flat-headed Caribs, 83. War
between the black and red Caribs, ib. The
island ceded by the French to the English,
85. Present state of cultivation there, ib.

Vines, remarks on the order for rooting them
up in Portugal, iii. 370.

Virgin Islands, their number and description,
v. 34. Their produce and government,
35.

Virginia, its advantages over Maryland, vi.
36. Delusion of the first adventurers
to this province, ib. They are relieved
and instructed by Lord Delaware, 37.
Is strengthened by the arrival of a number
of refugee royalists, 38. Is oppressed by a
rigorous enforcement of the Act of Navi-
gation, ib. Continue upon ill terms with
the Indians, 39. Disagreement among the
coloniists, 40. The English laws, with all
their formalities, introduced, 43. Admi-
rable speech of Logan, chief of the Shaw-
nees, to Lord Dunmore, ib. The po-
ulation of the country checked by per-
fec ting principles, 44. Present number
of inhabitants, 45. Chief produce, and
articles of cultivation, ib. Export of to-
acco, ib. Low state of Williamsburg,
the capital town, 47. The inhabitants of
this colony embarass their circumstances
by ostentatious luxury, ib. How they may
extricate themselves from such difficulties,
48.

Ukraine, great fertility of that province, and
means of improving it, ii. 263.

Ulloa, M. takes possession of Louisiana for
the king of Spain, after the cession of, by
France, v. 256.

Universe, argument in favour of a preceding
and ensuing eternity of, iii. 94.

Volcanos, the great antiquity of, indicated
by the different stages of their present ap-
pearance, iii. 93. Indications of, to be
found everywhere in America, iv. 224.

Voyages, estimate of the good and evil pro-
duced by, vi. 487.

Walpole, Sir Robert, the English minister,
remarks on his administration, iii. 459.

War, among European nations, the real mo-
tives of, iii. 189. A formal declaration ne-
cessary for the commencement of, and re-
marks on the conduct of the English in
neglecting this previous intimation of ho-
abilities, iii. 460. v. 376. Origin of the
laws of, iv. 170. Ancient and modern
compared, v. 141. Always furnishes a
pretence for the ululations of govern-
ment, vi. 129. The events of, often de-
cided by accidental circumstances, 253.
A prospect of its extinction, 318. This
prospect found to be a delusion, 319. Hi-
storical view of war as an art, 320. In-
fantry the most formidable in, ib. Cause
of the long wars between England and
France, 354. Origin of nightly armies
INDEX

in Europe, 322. War extended by this innovation, 334. The art of fortification invented by the Dutch, 335. A new system of tactics introduced by the king of Prussia, 326. War carried on now with more humanity than in ancient times, 329. The numbers of soldiers amazingly increased, while they are very poorly paid, 330. Soldiers ought to be usefully employed during peace, ib. Historical review of the art of war upon the sea, 333. Improvements produced by the invention of the mariner's compass, 334. Short account of the Spanish Armada, 335. Commercial wars considered, 368. Destroys chiefly those turbulent men, who are born with mischievous propensities, 393.

Warwick, Admiral, commands the first fleet sent out by the Dutch East India Company, i. 182. His contests with the Portuguese in the Indian seas, ib.

Washington, General, heads the North American troops in the war against Britain, vi. 238.

Welser, of Augsburg, purchases the American province of Venezuela of the emperor Charles V. iii. 52. Their imprudent management, and defection of the place, 53.


William the Conqueror establishes the feudal government in England upon a regular, permanent footing, vi. 254.

William III. elected king of England, and accepts the crown on Ripuolated conditions, vi. 256.

William, Fort, in Bengal, described, i. 410.

Williamsburg, the capital of Virginia, account of, vi. 47.

Winds, the general course, and natural causes of, in the West Indies, iii. 396.

Wodin, the Scythian chief, excites the other European nations to fall upon the Roman empire, ii. 172. Was the founder of a fanatical system of religion, 174.

Wolfe, General, killed at the siege of Quebec, v. 274.

Women, laws of Indostan relating to, i. 52. Causes why they often exercise sovereign power in savage nations, ii. 52. Their treatment in the different stages of human society described, iii. 66. Their virtue of the greatest importance to society, vi. 482. The connections of gallantry complete the deprivation of manners, 484.

X:

Xalapa, account of the fair there, for the traffic with European and American commodities, ii. 497.

Y:

Yago, St. in the island of Chiloé, described, iii. 150. Its government and jurisdiction, 151.

Yam, the plant described, iv. 136.

Yanam, in the province of Rajahmandry, account of the French factory there, ii. 143.

Tahua, a disorder incident to Negroes, described, with the method of cure, iv. 100.

Tavernville is burnt by the court of France on an expedition up the Mississippi, v. 199. His death, 202.

York, New. See New York.

Z:

Zealand, island of, in Denmark, some account of, iv. 265.
Directions to the Bookbinder for placing the Maps.

Map of the World, facing the Title page.
Map of Europe, facing Page 1. of the First Volume.
Map of the European Settlements in the East Indies, to face Book III.
Map of the European Settlements in Mexico and the West Indies, to face the Beginning of Book VI.
Map of the European Settlements in South America, to face the beginning of Book VII.
Map of Africa, with the European Settlements, to face the beginning of Book XI.
Map of the United States of North America, with the British, French, and Spanish dominions adjoining, according to the treaty of 1783, to face the Beginning of Book XVIII.

[The Binder will cut out this leaf, and place it at the end of the Index.]
Division to the Footnote

Map of the World, facing Title page.

Map of Europe, facing Page 1 of the First Volume.

Map of the European Settlements in North America, facing the beginning of Book III.

Map of the European Settlements in Mexico and the West Indies, facing the beginning of Book IV.

Map of the European Settlements in South America, facing the beginning of Book V.

Map of Africa, with the European Settlements, facing the beginning of Book VI.

Map of the United States of North America, with the British Tract, and Spanish Colonies adjoining, according to the treaty of 1783, facing the beginning of Book VII.

Map of Book VIII.

MAR 26 1948